This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

US 10349.8.3
B (2)

Harvard College Library.

THE PARKMAN COLLECTION.

BEQUEATHED BY

FRANCIS PARKMAN.
(H. C. 1844).

Received January 17, 1894.

COLONIAL NEW YORK

PHILIP SCHUYLER AND HIS FAMILY

BY

GEORGE W. SCHUYLER

IN TWO VOLUMES

VOLUME SECOND

NEW YORK
CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS
1885

Park. 18.19
S15349.83 Harvard College Library
Bequest of
B FRANCIS PARKMAN
17 Jan. 1894

COPYRIGHT, 1885, BY
GEORGE W. SCHUYLER

TROW'S
PRINTING AND BOOKBINDING COMPANY,
NEW YORK.

CONTENTS OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

PAGE

II. PETER SCHUYLER (Continued): 1

PETER SCHUYLER'S LANDS, ... 94

The Saratoga Patent, ... 95

Kinderhook, ... 129

Two Tracts on the East of the Hudson, ... 130

Westenhook Patent, ... 131

The Oriskany Patent, ... 133

The Mohawk Lands, ... 134

GENEALOGICAL TABLE; PETER SCHUYLER'S DESCENDANTS, . 150

NOTES ON THE GENEALOGICAL TABLE, ... 156

III. BRANDT SCHUYLER: 164

GENEALOGICAL TABLE; BRANDT SCHUYLER'S DESCENDANTS, . 171

IV. ARENT SCHUYLER: 180

GENEALOGICAL TABLE; ARENT SCHUYLER'S DESCENDANTS, . 196

NOTES ON ARENT SCHUYLER'S DESCENDANTS, ... 205

V. JOHANNES SCHUYLER: 223

GENEALOGICAL TABLE; JOHANNES SCHUYLER'S DESCENDANTS 242

NOTES ON JOHANNES SCHUYLER'S DESCENDANTS, . . . 246

GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER, ... 253

VI. PHILIP SCHUYLER, SECOND: 284

Nicholas De Meyer, ... 288

Hendrick Van Dyck, ... 293

GENEALOGICAL TABLE; DESCENDANTS OF PHILIP SCHUYLER, . 306

NOTES ON THE PRECEDING TABLE, ... 312

Harmanus Schuyler, ... 319

VI. PHILIP SCHUYLER, SECOND (Continued): PAGE

Dirk Wesselse Ten Broeck, ... 328
Anneke Jans, ... 337
The Fort Family, ... 367
Genealogical Table of the Fort Family, ... 371
Nicholas Bleecker, Jr., ... 377

GENEALOGICAL TABLE; DESCENDANTS OF PHILIP SCHUYLER (SECOND), IN THE FEMALE LINE, ... 396

APPENDICES:

A. THE BIBLE RECORDS OF NICHOLAS SCHUYLER, AND OF HARMANUS SCHUYLER, ... 413
B. A FAMILY REGISTER FROM A DUTCH BIBLE, . . . 426
C. THE SCRIBNER FAMILY, ... 439
D. DAVID (PIETERSE) SCHUYLER, ... 456
E. THE MOHAWK VALLEY SCHUYLERS, ... 479
F. REV. JOHANNES SCHUYLER, ... 488
G. THE PHILADELPHIA SCHUYLERS, ... 495
H. OTHER SCHUYLERS, ... 497

INDEX, ... 499

II.

PETER SCHUYLER (*Continued*).

THE relations between the Earl of Bellomont and Colonel Schuyler were formal, but not cordial from the first. Schuyler was a friend of Fletcher's, and an opponent of the party that Bellomont had espoused. This was enough to make the one suspected and the other distrusted. As time passed, Bellomont's suspicions became so strong that they appeared as truth, and yet there was no foundation for them. Colonel Schuyler was more than an ordinary man in many respects. He understood the Indians, and how to deal with them, better than any man of his time; he was kind and brave, virtues greatly respected by the Five Nations. Bellomont's jealousies were fed by persons in Albany, who aspired to the positions and dignities so long held by Schuyler; but his friends were numerous and influential, and, although he was indifferent to personal attacks, they rendered him a hearty support, and by their friendship sustained him against the secret intrigues of his enemies. When Bellomont's mind had become thoroughly poisoned, he slandered Schuyler without stint in his letters to his government, and attempted to dispense with his services in his management of Indian affairs. He chose as his friends and advisers men of his own faction, who bowed submissively to his imperious will. "Colonel Schuyler," it was affirmed by Colonel Smith, member of the Council, "was above all men the most dear to the

Five Nations, not only from his long acquaintance with them, but by his personal conduct and valor in the late war, engaging with them and for them against the French." Yet in his last conference Bellomont had neglected and insulted him; he had conducted his negotiations without his advice. The unfortunate results were soon apparent. Against his commands the sachems went to Canada and made peace. They were well-nigh lost to the English; and Bellomont expressed the opinion that they were irrecoverably lost. Had he lived, and spent a year in Albany, his prophecy might have become a reality. His sudden death, on March 5, 1701, may have been a blessing to the province. At all events, Colonel Schuyler retained his place in the Council, which he would not have done had Bellomont lived a few days longer.

After the earl's death, Lieutenant-Governor Nanfan being in the West Indies, the government devolved upon the Council, of which Colonel Smith was the senior member. Livingston, who was appointed councillor by Bellomont, and had supported his measures, now transferred himself to the opposite faction. The Leislerians, however, retained a majority of the members, who insisted that the Council should administer the government, and not the senior member. Schuyler and Livingston adhered to Smith, and, being in a minority, refused to sit in Council. The Assembly, then in session, declined to legislate, but adjourned from day to day. The differences and confusion were only settled by the return of Nanfan.

Lieutenant-Governor Nanfan arrived in New York from Barbadoes on May 19, 1701. He informed the Lords of Trade, that through the prudent management of the Council the public peace had been preserved, and that the affairs of the province remained as they were at the time of the late Governor's death, with little alteration.

He reported the Five Nations to be in good disposition at present, and, to confirm them in their "obedience," he had appointed a time to meet them in conference, when he proposed to distribute in presents a part of the £800 lately received from England. In consequence of the differences prevailing in the Assembly, he had dissolved it, and had ordered a new election. He made several fair promises, especially to use his best efforts to reconcile the prevailing differences by impartiality in the administration of justice, without regard to persons or parties. It will soon be seen how well he redeemed his pledges.

The Commissioners for Indian Affairs, by direction of Nanfan, sent Johannes Bleecker, Jr. and David Schuyler[1] to Onondaga, to notify the Five Nations of the coming conference, and to observe the transactions of the French emissaries there with the Indians. They left Albany on June 2, 1701, and arrived at Onondaga on the 10th. On the 14th, in the evening, some Seneca sachems having arrived, a meeting was held by the Onondagas and Senecas to take into consideration the subject of religion. Bellomont had sent them a belt, proposing to settle Protestant ministers among them when the fort should be built. Callières had also sent a belt, offering to furnish them with Jesuit priests, who would live among them without the protection of a fort. Both belts hung in the council-house, and the question now to be decided was, which should be accepted? Dekanissora, the mourning hermit, had laid aside his weeds, and resumed his old vocation of

[1] A son of David Pieterse Schuyler, and believed to be a first cousin of Colonel Peter Schuyler. He was a merchant of Albany, and had transactions with Canadian traders. His acquaintance with the Five Nations and their country was limited, but he was a friend of Bellomont and Nanfan. He was afterwards mayor of Albany.

ambassador and orator. He had recently returned from the Canadian court, and occupied the whole session recounting his experiences and adventures. Nothing was said about the belts of religion.

Dekanissora related, that when he arrived at Montreal the governor received him kindly, and kissed him on both cheeks. While conversing with the governor a stranger entered the room, to whom he was introduced as the great hero whose picture was to be seen in all the Paris print-shops. He had dined with the governor at his table, as also with a clergyman, who had requested him to sit for his portrait. The governor made him several presents, including a double-barrelled gun, a laced coat and hat, a handsome shirt, and a lot of tobacco. After spending six days in feasting, sight-seeing, and picture-making, he took his leave of the governor, who said that he would not detain him, knowing quite well he should be at home, or all would run to confusion. Callières was untiring in his attentions to the great orator, and when he left ordered a canoe with three Frenchmen to convey him up the river from Montreal to above Fort Frontenac, and not to allow him to paddle, "which they punctually obeyed." The contrast to Bellomont's treatment of Sadakanahtie is striking. The reception of M. Maricour shortly afterward, compared to that of Colonel Romer, is equally significant.

Bleecker and Schuyler, four days after Dekanissora's jubilant speech, desired a meeting of the sachems, but they excused themselves, because there was not a "full house." While they were talking, a messenger came to announce the arrival of M. Maricour at Caneenda, eight miles distant on the lake, and desired some squaws to be sent for the baggage. The sachems immediately left with a great company to greet him. They returned the next day "with great triumph, under the French flag." The

day after there was a public meeting of all the sachems, and Dekanissora narrated his negotiations with the governor of Canada on his late visit, asserting, however, that he did not act in a public capacity, but rather as a private individual. M. Maricour informed the sachems that he had come to tell them that the governor of Canada would expect them at Montreal in thirty days, and to procure all the French prisoners among them. He also told them some news: The king of Spain was dead, and the dauphin's youngest son would succeed him, about which there was likely to be a "great ado."

Finally, when the question as to which religious belt they would accept could be deferred no longer, Dekanissora came to Bleecker and Schuyler for advice. He said that there was a great difference of opinion among them—some will have a priest on one side of the castle and a minister on the other side. He was told that this would cause confusion, and advised to allow no priest in the country; that they should behave like men, remembering their former courage and famous deeds, and not cringe to the French. The chief replied: "We fear the French will make war on us, and we shall then fade away, like the Mohawks. You may promise assistance, but what does that avail, so long as you do not give it?" In the night the old chief came again, and said that they were yet divided, and that he was so troubled that he had not slept for two nights.

On the 22d, at a meeting, when the French gentlemen and the English envoys were present, Dekanissora said: "We are desired by both parties to become Christians, and we see the belts hanging before us. You make us mad, and we know not which side to choose. But I will now say no more about it, and take the belts down and keep them, because you are both dear with your goods.

We are sorry we cannot pray, but we have come to this conclusion: We will take a priest or minister of the party who sells his goods the cheapest. Our sachems meantime are going, some to Albany, others to Montreal, and we will think about it until winter. We have a suspicion that there will soon be another war between your nations, but we tell you both that we shall keep the peace."

M. Maricour caused considerable commotion in the village by his efforts to secure the prisoners. In the presence of David Schuyler, Dekanissora told him some plain truths, which brought to his rescue Father Bruyas, who poured oil on the troubled waters, by promising to return several prisoners at their next meeting at Montreal. When the matter was settled, the chief called the priest aside, and confidentially told him that he was going to Albany within ten days, and would not be at Montreal. Shrewd orator and diplomat! He had just received rich gifts from Callières; he would now get more from the English, and enjoy Nanfan's hospitality.

The conference of Nanfan with the Five Nations lasted nine days, in July, 1701, resulting chiefly in a deed to the king of the Indian hunting-grounds between Lakes Ontario, Erie, and Huron, which they had conquered from the Hurons sixty years before.[1] A worthless present, except as giving a claim in Canada, for the country had recently been settled by other tribes under French protection.

Meanwhile other sachems went to Canada, and at a solemn council received back the Iroquois prisoners from Callières.

In the latter part of August, Nanfan having been informed that there were French agents in the Indian

[1] See also, for further details, vol. i., pp. 261–2.

country, again sent Captain Bleecker and David Schuyler to Onondaga to watch their proceedings and oppose their designs. There was fear of another war in Europe, in which it was believed that the English and French would be involved. The Canadians, remembering the calamities they had suffered from the warlike Iroquois, now tried to establish a good understanding with them, in order to preserve the peace it had taken so many efforts to make. For this purpose they sent the men most influential with them, including priests and missionaries, to persuade them to remain neutral, and let the French and English fight, if they would, without involving themselves in the quarrel. Bleecker and Schuyler tried without success to alarm them, by reminding them of former injuries and the perfidy of the French, desiring them to hold no communication with their old enemies. The Five Nations were determined to adhere to the treaty, and keep on friendly terms with Canada, although they would try to hold fast the covenant-chain with Corlaer. After the arrival of Lord Cornbury, in May, 1702, there were no efforts to shake the resolution of the Five Nations, and for eight years or more the borders were quiet, the French holding their own Indians to a strict observance of the treaty-requirements, and forbidding all expeditions against the English of New York, lest the wrath of the dreaded Iroquois should be aroused.

Nevertheless, there was not peace between the factions of New York. Nanfan's administration was short and stormy. It commenced serenely, but ended in a tempest. His promise to restrain the strife of parties was not long remembered. He soon became a violent partisan. The Assembly had become anti-Leislerian, and was dissolved. At the next election, after a heated contest, Nanfan and the Leislerians secured eleven of the twenty-one members.

When they assembled, Abraham Gouverneur was elected speaker, by one majority, over William Nicoll. The minority submitted, and with the majority appeared before the governor, to announce their choice of speaker and have it approved. The Leislerians, either fearing that their small majority might not be sufficient on some questions coming before the Assembly, or from party spirit, unseated Dirk Wessels, of Albany, and William Nicoll, of Suffolk, for non-residence. The one lived a part of the time on his farm in Dutchess County, while the bulk of his property and his city residence were in Albany. The other had a large landed estate at Islip, Suffolk County, on which he often resided, while his law office and city residence were in New York. The other members of the minority, sympathizing with the expelled members, and believing the action of the majority to be unfair, seceded from the Assembly. New elections were ordered in place of Nicoll and the retiring members, but Ryer Schermerhorn was admitted in place of Wessels without another appeal to the people.

At the election of aldermen and assistants in the fall, there was another contest. Thomas Noell was appointed mayor by Nanfan, and after taking the oath of office, on October 14, 1701, went to Trinity Church and attended worship, according to usage, after which he proceeded to the City Hall to organize the Common Council, by administering the usual oaths to the newly elected aldermen and assistants. The Leislerians declined to take the oath, alleging that they had already taken it before the old mayor. The City Hall was filled with spectators, friends of the different candidates, and as it had always been the practice for the new mayor to administer the oaths, and never for the old one, a great commotion was raised. The mayor, to quiet the people present, which had become a

mob, retired from the chair, and thus dissolved the warring factions. It was charged that some of the aldermen and assistants sworn in by the old mayor were not duly elected, and a mandamus was served on Mayor Noell, forbidding him to recognize them as duly elected until there should be a scrutiny, and the question should be decided by the courts.

The mayor ordered a scrutiny to be made by two of each party. The Leislerians refused to serve, but the others went on. They visited every man who cast a vote at the election, and learned from his own lips for whom he voted, and whether he was entitled to a vote according to law; and then reported the result to the mayor. The south ward was the first to be scrutinized. Rip Van Dam and Mathew Ling were the committee. Their report is interesting, as showing the number of voters in a ward of the city of New York at that time, in contrast with the present, and in other respects. Brandt Schuyler was the anti-Leislerian candidate, and Nicholas Roosevelt the Leislerian, for alderman.

The report first gives the names of those who voted for Brandt Schuyler, as follows:

Inhabitants who are freeholders or freemen—[Then follow the names, indicating their nationality—Dutch, English, French, etc.] Forty-one in all.
Inhabitants who pay taxes—Five.
Inhabitants taxable—Seven.
Inhabitants neither free nor paying taxes—Five.
Inhabitants under age by confession—One.

Those who voted for Nicholas Roosevelt:

Inhabitants who are freeholders or freemen—Thirty-seven. [The names are given, showing them to have been mostly Dutch, with a sprinkling of English and French.]
Inhabitants who pay taxes—Two.

Inhabitants neither free nor paying taxes—Two.
Inhabitants under age by their own confession—Four.
Inhabitant of another ward by confession—One.
Inhabitant freeholder voted for himself, Nicholas Roosevelt—One.

Brandt Schuyler did not vote. He was more modest than candidates in later days.

The committee reported that Brandt Schuyler was duly elected, although the retiring mayor had awarded the election to Roosevelt, and sworn him into office.

There was a like result in the east and west wards, which were also disputed. The committees found in favor of John Hutchings, anti-Leislerian, in the west ward, against David Provoost, Leislerian; for William Morris in the east ward, against Captain Johannes de Peyster, Leislerian.

When the case reached the courts, Justice Atwood, Leislerian, confirmed the findings in the south and west wards, but seated De Peyster in the east, leaving the board equally divided between the two parties. According to Valentine's Manual, Roosevelt and Provoost were aldermen for the south and west wards for the year 1701–02. This may be accounted for by the death of Brandt Schuyler, and the conviction of Hutchings for treason, early in 1702.

The contests in the Assembly and in the Board of Aldermen caused, as may be imagined, great excitement, not in the city of New York only, but through the whole province. It was nothing, however, compared to that occasioned by the arrest, trial, and conviction of Nicholas Bayard [1] and Alderman Hutchings for high treason. Bay-

[1] Nicholas Bayard was one of three brothers, who with their widowed mother came to New York about 1647. His mother was a sister of Peter Stuyvesant, director-general. He was employed in the colonial secretary's

ard had not forgotten his cruel treatment by Leisler and the injustice of Bellomont. When it was known that Lord Cornbury would succeed the dead Lord Bellomont, Bayard put three addresses into circulation for signatures. One was to the king, a second to Parliament, and a third to Lord Cornbury. Hutchings kept a tavern, where Bayard and his friends made their headquarters. The addresses exposed the wrongs and weaknesses of the late governor, but expressed unfeigned loyalty to the king. They were numerously signed by the leading men of the city and province, but they gave umbrage to Nanfan and his Council, now strengthened by Justice Atwood and

---

office; and on January 7, 1658, petitioned the director-general and Council for a salary. He said that he had served for a considerable time as a clerk, writing in Dutch and English, without compensation, and then asked to be paid for his services. His petition was granted, and his salary was fixed at "six guilders a month from the first of July last, provided he conducts himself vigilent and diligent." On March 1, 1663, he sent in another petition on the subject of wages. He said that he had served three years in the secretary's office as a Dutch and English clerk, on ten guilders a month, and asked to have his salary advanced. His request was thought to be reasonable, and his pay was put at fourteen guilders a month. His father was a clergyman, who had not neglected his education. He had been taught the English language, and this obtained for him a position in the secretary's office, where a knowledge of English had become essential. When the English took possession, it was equally important that their secretary should have a clerk acquainted with the Dutch language; and thus Bayard was retained in the office. Two years afterward he was appointed clerk of the courts, and in 1685 he was appointed mayor of the city and a member of the king's Council for the province. He found time, in the intervals of official duties, to conduct a mercantile establishment, in connection with a brewery, and rapidly rose to wealth and influence. He possessed some traits of character in common with his uncle, "Peter the Headstrong," which brought him into collision with his neighbors, and were the source of more than ordinary trouble. He was an honest man in his views of public affairs, but too unyielding to be popular. Balthazar Bayard, brother of Nicholas, settled in New Jersey, and Peter, the third brother, in Delaware. The latter's descendants have long held a leading position in that little State, whose people can claim descent from almost as many nations as New York.

Thomas Weaver, who termed them libellous, seditious, disloyal. Although the new Attorney-General Broughton could not find anything in the papers of the character alleged, Nanfan and his Council determined to prosecute the promoters of the petitions, several of whom were arrested. Bayard and Alderman Hutchings were tried and convicted of treason, and Bayard was sentenced to be hanged. He appealed to the king, but his appeal was refused until he had made concessions acknowledging his guilt. The trial was unfair and oppressive to the defendants; it was hurried on to its end in the last days of Nanfan's administration, the prosecutors apparently fearing the arrival of the new governor before their purpose was attained.

Viscount Cornbury was appointed governor of New York on June 13, 1701. He did not arrive until May 3, 1702. His delay in coming gave rise to the reports that his appointment had been reconsidered, and that Nanfan was to be left in the administration of the government. His arrival was a surprise to some, and a relief to all; most believed that any change of rulers would be a blessing. Cornbury investigated the case of Bayard and Hutchings, and reported the facts to his government. It was found that the addresses, for the signing and circulation of which they had been convicted and condemned, had not been before either the grand or petit juries, and that many irregularities had been committed on the trial. Their sentence was reversed, and they were restored to citizenship.

Lord Cornbury reported the province to be in a deplorable condition, the people rent in factions, a large public debt, the soldiers in rags, and the forts and fortifications in ruins. His reflections on the misgovernment of Bellomont were quite as severe as the latter's on that of Fletcher. It had been a time of peace, and yet nothing

had been done to put the country into a state of defence, except to build a new magazine *over the gates* of the fort, under the direction of Colonel Romer. The great guns were dismounted. The militia had not been mustered since Fletcher's time. Only one militia regiment in the province was in serviceable condition—that of Colonel Schuyler in Albany. "In the whole province beside there is nothing like militia. It is a thing forgot."

Like his predecessors, Cornbury became a partisan, and joined the anti-Leislerians. Within a month after his arrival, he suspended five Leislerians from the Council, and appointed men of his own party to the vacancies. This was not a wise beginning. Since the death of Leisler, every governor had been instructed to promote the prosperity of the colony by all the means in his power, and to this end they had been charged to heal the exciting differences among the people and quiet party strife. And yet each one, in a short time after commencing his administration, became a factionist.

Before Cornbury could meet his allies, the Five Nations, and renew the covenant-chain, he received the news of the king's death, on March 8th, and directions to proclaim Queen Anne. This was done with the usual formalities on June 17th, after which he paid a flying visit to East and West Jersey, and then hurried up to Albany to keep his appointment with the Indians. He arrived on July 5th, some days before the time fixed for the conference. Meantime some of the proselytes of Canada, who were in Albany on a trading visit, called on him, and expressed the hope that he would not interfere with the privilege they had enjoyed since the war, of coming to Albany to sell their beavers and procure goods in exchange. They also wished to know what his lordship would do in reference to the Indians in case of a war

between England and France, which was daily expected. The governor of Canada had told them that he wished them to remain neutral. Cornbury, in his reply, said that he would not be first to begin hostilities, and that so long as they were quiet, and made no attacks on the English, they could enjoy their present privileges.

In his address to the sachems of the Five Nations, Cornbury informed them that there were rumors of war, and as the governor of Canada wished his Indians to take no part in the strife, so he advised them to retain a peaceable attitude, and not to be the first aggressors, but to be on their guard. Thus the peace, as between the Indians attached to the rival nations, was recognized and approved. For the relief of the frontiers, and of the whole province, a great point was gained. Without the employment of Indians, raids from Canada were not expected. The safety of the Canadian borders from the scalping parties of Iroquois was assured. The Indian peace was a blessing to both colonies.

Cornbury distributed a large amount of presents, consisting chiefly of guns, ammunition, clothing, and a belt of five hundred guilders in strung wampum. The reply of the sachems was more cordial and less critical than to Bellomont and Nanfan, although their beavers presented in return were less than half the quantity. They were greatly pleased to know that they were not expected to "lift the hatchet" in the coming war, but if the "French and their Indians begin, we will then consult the brethren." In conclusion, they said: "We are glad to see Quidor at your side, and that all dark clouds are now happily dissipated; we see that things are running in the right channel, when those who have always had the management of our affairs have your lordship's favor." In a private meeting with Lord Cornbury, the sachems

again requested that Robert Livingston should be sent to England as their agent, to which Cornbury made a vague reply.

Altogether the conference was satisfactory; but while a large number of sachems were in Albany, others were in Canada making arrangements to receive Jesuit missionaries. Those in Albany made solemn promises not to permit French priests to live among them, and asked for Protestant ministers. These the English governors, one after the other, had promised, but had failed to send. The Indians seemed desirous of Christian instruction, and would gladly have received Protestant teachers, who were not sent until long years after, and then only one or two to the Mohawks and Oneidas. The Jesuits were more willing to live among the Indians, and conform to their habits and manner of living, than were the Protestants. The one could not forget the refinements of home, and required some of the conveniences of civilized life—a house to himself, and the society of a wife, or congenial companionship; the other could forget the family circle, or the barren comforts of the cloister, and accept without regret the fare and lodgings of an Indian cabin. The one by precept and example strove to raise the savage to his own plane of civilization and Christianity; the other lowered himself to the position of the savage, and by personal self-denial sought to win converts to his creed with the least possible change in their habits and manner of life. The one wanted protection and safety; the other took his life in his hands, and threw himself on the care and generosity of those among whom he lived. It was not singular that, at a time when there were no missionary societies or missionary funds, there were so few Protestant missionaries, or that there were so many priests, among the Indians.

After the convention adjourned, Cornbury laid the first stone of the new fort to be erected on the hill at Albany, and hoped that "it would be breast-high before cold weather." He visited Schenectady, Half Moon, and Niskayuna, saw the neglected condition of their fortifications, and made arrangements for their repair.

War was declared by England against France on May 4, 1702, on account of the disputes relating to the succession to the Spanish crown. Long before there were rumors that war was inevitable. In view of this contingency, the French in Canada had industriously labored to repair their fortifications from Quebec to Fort Frontenac, and had spared no effort to secure peace with the Iroquois. In New York, on the other hand, nothing had been done. The stockaded forts had been allowed to rot away, guns to be dismounted and the soldiers to desert for want of subsistence, the militia to be neglected, and the Five Nations to be insulted. Cornbury, in view of the situation, and of the great expense of putting the frontiers in a proper state of defence, exclaimed, "better drive the French from Canada, and thus secure the whole continent. It can be done by fifteen hundred men from England and eight fourth-rate frigates, joined with what forces can be raised in this province."

The Canadians advised the conquest of New York and New England. Before entering upon such an enterprise, the Iroquois must be "annihilated, and that forever." Then three thousand men and five ships of war could ravage the coasts of New England, destroy every town, including Boston, burn New York, and lay Albany in ashes. M. d'Iberville, a French officer of some ability, laughed at this project as visionary, and proposed another. He pledged his reputation, that he could overrun New England and New York with eighteen hundred men, who

should leave Quebec about December 1st, and march across the country into Maine, whence, "always under cover," he would leisurely proceed to put his plan into execution. Seventy-five years later, General Arnold did not find the march across the country, by the route D'Iberville proposed, a holiday excursion. The French never attempted to carry out their plans, and it was sixty years before Cornbury's project for the reduction of Canada was realized, although several attempts were made at a large expenditure of blood and treasure.

A year later, Cornbury reported Fort Anne in Albany to be in progress, the fort at Schenectady repaired, and new stockaded forts built at Half Moon, Niskayuna, and Schaghticoke, at a cost of £80 currency. One was also ordered to be built at Saratoga, "the northernmost settlement of the province." There were apprehensions of a French invasion, in force or by detachments, in the winter of 1702–03, and the Assembly made an appropriation of £1800 for the maintenance of one hundred and fifty militia and thirty scouts. The service was performed at the expense of New York alone. The danger was believed to be imminent, and the other colonies were asked to contribute, but they all declined, declaring the while their great loyalty.

The records relating to Indian affairs from the spring of 1703 to the close of Cornbury's administration are meagre and unsatisfactory. Robert Livingston was forced to sail for England, June, 1703. He was absent several years, and on his return was not permitted to resume his duties. Hence, owing also to the loss of the books kept by the commissioners for Indian affairs, our sources of information are limited. The colonial documents, the minutes of the Council, and the legislative proceedings indicate considerable activity on the part of Colonel Schuyler

among the Five Nations. In August, 1703, he was requested by the Council to visit Onondaga, to arrange for a conference with Cornbury at Albany; and at the same time to learn why the French priests were allowed to reside among the Indians in violation of their engagements. Although we find no report of his journey, we learn that he was not successful in persuading the Indians to send away the "black gowns." The French party was too powerful. Cornbury held a convention with the sachems in September, but there is no report of the proceedings preserved. Again, in the following summer, Colonel Schuyler was at Onondaga, and Cornbury met the Indian sachems at Albany. Schuyler on this visit made another effort to have the priests expelled, but without success. On his return to Albany, he met in the Mohawk country some French proselytes, whom he induced to carry belts of peace to several of their villages, for the purpose of inducing them to stop their incursions into New England. When the French governor learned of these negotiations, he was at unusual pains to have the proselytes surrender the belts, and they were subsequently returned to Schuyler by the missionaries of Onondaga.

No attacks had been made by the French on the frontiers of New York since the beginning of the war. They were restrained by their fears of the Iroquois, and for no other reason. Before peace had been made with them the sachems insisted that the English, not only of New York, but of New England, should be included, to which Callières had assented. New York was saved from a border war by the Indian allies. French promises, however, were violated in a part of the country beyond the reach of the dreaded Iroquois. The border settlements of Maine, New Hampshire, and western Massachusetts were laid waste by the eastern Indians led by French officers. It

was for the relief of those distant settlements that Schuyler sent his peace-belts to the proselytes of Canada, some of whom were eastern Indians. It was for the purpose of keeping up this kind of warfare that the French governor recovered the belts, and caused them to be returned to Schuyler.

An Onondaga chief of the French faction reported to the Marquis de Vaudreuil, who was appointed governor of Canada after the death of Callières, that Peter Schuyler would not be sorry to have a sort of truce, "but it must include the English of Boston." He replied, that "he would not send any party toward Orange (Albany) out of regard to Peter Schuyler." This he did, as he informed the king, "for fear of drawing on a war with the Iroquois." In a conference with some Iroquois sachems, in August, 1705, he was reminded of what he had promised as to the English. "Nevertheless," said the sachems, "we see our brothers of the Sault and the Mountain, who ought to be neutral like us, go to the war against the English." Vaudreuil said that he had never promised not to strike the English of Boston, only Corlaer and Peter. As to the latter, he had kept his engagement; as to Boston, he would fight them long as the war lasted.

Later in the same year, through the efforts of Schuyler, Governor Dudley, of Massachusetts, made an attempt to secure peace or neutrality with the Indians under French control. For this purpose he drew up the articles of a treaty, and delegated Samuel Vetch, a merchant of Boston and son-in-law of Robert Livingston, to submit them to Vaudreuil. The latter amended them by adding others, and returned them to Dudley. The treaty was not signed, probably because the amendment covered a larger field than was intended, and committed the governor of Massachusetts to many things beyond his control. Although

Vaudreuil admitted that the war as waged was not glorious or profitable, and only resulted in the desolation of some poor families, he continued to prosecute it as before, while Peter Schuyler did not cease his efforts to relieve New England from the horrors and cruelties committed by French barbarians on the unprotected settlers on her borders. In answer to Vaudreuil's letter accompanying the belts returned by the French proselytes, he wrote, October 7, 1708:

"In regard to the belt I sent for the purpose of preventing the Indians taking part in the war which is waging against the government of Boston, I must admit that I did send it from an impulse of christian charity. I could not help believing that it was my duty toward God and my neighbor to put a stop, if possible, to those heathenish and barbarous cruelties which have been but too frequently wreaked on the unfortunate people of the province. You will pardon me, if I tell you that I am disgusted when I think, that a war which is carried on by christian princes, who, by the example and the practice left by their noble ancestors, are bound to observe the most rigid rules of honor and generosity, should degenerate into savage and reckless barbarity. I cannot conceive how it is possible to put an end to the war by such means. I wish everyone were of my opinion on this subject; some there are, and I doubt not but there must be many others. I should be very glad to induce you to participate in my sentiments, which are prompted by a principle of generosity and honor."[1]

Lord Cornbury visited Albany in July, 1708, for the purpose of meeting the sachems of the Five Nations, who, he had been informed, wished to see him. He had been misinformed; they were not there. Writing home, he urged, as he had urged before, that presents be sent them,

[1] N. Y. Col. Doc., ix., 818.

in order to retain them in the English interests. None had been given them since the first year of his administration, six years previously. It seemed now that there was more urgency than ever. In his speech to the Assembly he called their attention to the same subject. As none had been given them in six years, and as no provision had been made in England for them, he believed it to be imperative, to save their going over wholly to the French, that an appropriation should be made for the purpose of making them a liberal donation. Subsequently, at the request of the Assembly, he laid before them a list of articles to be presented to each nation, and to the River Indians, amounting in all to £600. In his message on this topic, he said that there had been advanced by the commissioners of Indian affairs, over and above all former appropriations, £200. 6. 0, which should be provided for. He also recommended an appropriation for the support of one hundred and fifty men, and for spies and scouts on the frontiers, during the ensuing year. Lastly, he recommended to their "favorable consideration, the case of Colonel Schuyler, who, by being well known to all the Indians, is put to great expense by their coming to his house, which they use as freely as if it were their own."

The committe to whom the governor's message was referred reported an appropriation of £450 for presents to the Five Nations, £200 for "spies and incidentals," and a fund for the support of sixty men on the frontiers for five months. The report was embodied in a bill which was enacted on September 18th.

The colonial documents are silent as to any further proceedings on the subject. If Lord Cornbury had met the Indians in council, and distributed the presents, it is probable that he would have mentioned it in some of his subsequent letters. A French officer at Montreal was informed

late in the fall, by an Indian, that Peter Schuyler, in behalf of Cornbury, had made a present to the Iroquois of fifty pieces of cloth, fifty guns, ten barrels of powder, lead, stockings, knives, hatchets, and other articles. Ten days after the story was confirmed by another Indian, who added that the English were making preparations to strike the French the next year. "This is settled," said the Indian.

As Lord Cornbury referred to the hardships of Colonel Schuyler, it will not be inappropriate to give some further information as to his financial transactions with the government. His intimate relations with the Indians subjected him to a large expense not chargeable to the public accounts; but his advances for their services as spies and messengers were frequent during the long war in Fletcher's time, when the funds in the hands of the Board for Indian Affairs were exhausted. Long before the close of that war its credit also was ruined. When Livingston made his first trip to England, no one in the province dare undertake the subsistence of the troops and wait for his pay. Schuyler was induced to do it, and at a price below that formerly paid, on assurances of assistance from New York merchants. His means and credit, as Bellomont remarked, were on the verge of ruin, when Livingston returned and again became the contractor for subsistence. During Bellomont's and Nanfan's administrations, Schuyler had been enabled to procure only £300 on account. When Cornbury came, he submitted his accounts to the Council for adjustment and liquidation. The committee, after a thorough examination, audited them in full, and recommended their payment. As the treasury was too poor to meet the draft, warrants were drawn in small amounts in anticipation of taxes and revenue, with which he settled the accounts of merchants who had aided him to support the troops. Some were drawn on the collector

and receiver-general, who for some unknown reason refused to pay them ; others were refused payment by the treasurer. It finally resulted in the recall of all. Schuyler's accounts were again submitted to the Council, and a new committee was appointed to examine them, who, like the former one, reported them correct in every particular. New warrants and drafts were made, but he did not receive pay in full until the close of 1704. Lord Bellomont, among his other slanders of Schuyler, accused him of improper charges in his accounts against the government. Truly, Colonel Schuyler found the public a poor and ungrateful debtor.

War had existed between England and France during the whole of Cornbury's administration, but he had managed to maintain the peace with Canada, and there had been no attacks on the frontiers of the province. In the preceding war, the experience of the people, and of their allies, the Five Nations, had taught them prudence, and not to involve themselves in the quarrels of kings three thousand miles away. They had endured untold sufferings—scores of English had been murdered, dwellings burned, fields laid waste, the country depopulated, and the people reduced to poverty. The Five Nations had suffered still more. Their numbers had been reduced, and their villages destroyed ; they were now cowards, and no longer the brave and warlike nations of ten years before ; they, in fact, had ceased to be a "barrier," except in name, between the English and the French. To sustain the cost of the war, and retain the allegiance of the Five Nations, the province had spent a large amount of money and had burdened itself with debt. The mother country had given little relief, and the sister colonies still less ; the daughter and sister had been left to struggle on alone the best she could. It is not strange that, in the

next war so soon succeeding the first, the colony should have desired neutrality, and spared no effort to maintain it. The Canadians were equally desirous of peace, and directed their chief efforts to secure the friendship of the Iroquois, while they incited the eastern Indians to raids on the frontiers of New England, who had no Indians to take up their quarrels, no Indian nations to be a "barrier." Their Indians had been exterminated to give room for white men, who were not a "bulwark or defence."

New England turned for relief to the Five Nations, and complained that New York would not suffer them to fight their battles. Massachusetts, the greatest sufferer, having never found it convenient to render New York any support in men or money, now affected to be greatly injured by the peace on the borders of her sister colony, while her own were open to the enemy and suffering from his scalping parties. In a paper drawn by Governor Dudley, and sent to his agent in England, he says, "This province (Massachusetts) and New Hampshire have been singled out and made the butt of the present war, while New York has not rendered any assistance, nor have the Five Nations been encouraged to begin hostilities. That government has enjoyed profound peace, and would not listen to our application to direct the Indians to take up arms against the French." Another elaborate paper was prepared, to show the sovereignty of England over the Five Nations, and its duty in requiring them to take part in the war for the relief of those who were its "butt." These representations were finally successful, as we shall see, but not while Cornbury was governor.

His administration was nearing its end. It cannot be praised as a wise and successful one; save in his measures to maintain the peace with the northern neighbors, there is nothing which deserves commendation; on the contrary,

there is much to be condemned. Personally, he was noble by birth and title, but ignoble in character and habits; in religion he was a bigot. He assisted to divest the people of Jamaica, L. I., of their church and parsonage in a most iniquitous manner, and turn them over to the Episcopalians. He prosecuted two Presbyterian ministers for preaching without his license, and, although acquitted by a jury, they were compelled to pay, not only their own costs, but the costs of the prosecution. He insisted that none should be allowed to preach or teach without his license, although the Dutch, at the time of the surrender, were guaranteed religious liberty. He was said to be sordid and avaricious. Lewis Morris, in a letter to the secretary of State, arraigns him for bribery and corruption as governor of New Jersey, and closes his scathing letter with these words:

"I must say something of him, which perhaps nobody else will think it worth while to tell. He dresses publicly in woman's clothes every day, and puts a stop to all public business while he is pleasing himself with that peculiar but detestable magot."

He was a cousin of Queen Anne, and, bearing some resemblance to her, showed his loyalty in this ridiculous manner.[1] He was chased away from England by his creditors, and by his creditors in New York detained "on the limits" until, succeeding to the earldom of Clarendon, he managed to escape, leaving several poor tradesmen the worse for his patronage.

Another noble lord was appointed to succeed him on March 28, 1708—John, Lord Lovelace, who arrived in New York on December 18, 1708. His administration

[1] There is a portrait of Lord Cornbury dressed as a lady in the possession of Lord Hampton, at Westwood Park, near Droitwich. Others are also in existence.

was brief and uneventful. He died on May 6, 1709, while the Assembly was in session. Lieutenant-Governor Ingoldesby was in New Jersey, and for three days Colonel Schuyler, as senior member of the Council, was at the head of the government.

The seven years of peace on the frontiers had proved a blessing to the impoverished people. Trade had revived, agriculture had prospered, and many of the self-banished families had returned to their old homes and friends. This state of peace and prosperity was not to last. Massachusetts, unable to induce the Five Nations to enter a campaign against the eastern Indians, or to gain the consent of Cornbury to have them embroiled in a strife which would bring ruin and desolation on the frontiers of his province, had appealed to the crown. Samuel Vetch, a Boston merchant, went to England, and, being a son-in-law of Robert Livingston, gained easy access to men near the throne. He, in common with Livingston and almost all New England and New York, believed that the conquest of Canada could be easily effected, and at little expense. A few ships of war and a few hundred men could do the work in a short campaign. He was successful in impressing the government with his convictions, and it was resolved to undertake the enterprise.

On the first of March, 1709, circular letters in the name of the queen were addressed to the governors of New York, New England, and Pennslyvania, announcing that she was fitting out an expedition against the French in Canada, who had been very troublesome of late years to her subjects in those colonies, according to certain proposals of her "trusty and well-beloved Colonel Vetch," and they were required to give assistance in the manner he should propose.

The minister instructed Lord Lovelace, that it was re-

solved to attack Montreal and Quebec at the same time, the first by an army of fifteen hundred men by way of Albany and Lake Champlain, the second by a squadron of ships carrying five regiments of regular troops and twelve hundred Massachusetts militia. It was designed to have the aid of the Five Nations against Montreal, and for the purpose of enlisting them in the enterprise Colonel Schuyler was to be employed, as "well qualified for the service, and a very proper person to be employed in the expedition."

Colonel Vetch appeared before the Council in New York on May 17th, and presented his instructions. He informed the Council that the New England provinces had entered into the design with much zeal, and had now exceeded what was required of them, so anxious were they to have the expedition succeed. The New York Assembly was then in session, and there was no delay in making the necessary arrangements for a full compliance with the queen's demands. In New Jersey and Pennsylvania Colonel Vetch was less successful. Both colonies declined to render any assistance.[1]

Colonel Nicholson, formerly lieutenant-governor of New York, was placed in command of the forces against Montreal, and Colonel Schuyler was made his lieutenant, commanding one of the two New York regiments. At the request of Nicholson, the Indian allies were attached to the regiment of Colonel Schuyler, " as he is a person known to have the greatest influence over them in war or other affairs."

As soon as Colonel Vetch made known to the Council the orders of the queen, they directed Major John Schuyler and Captain Abraham Schuyler to go to Onon-

[1] New Jersey reconsidered her refusal, and contributed £3,000.

daga and invite the Five Nations to a conference in Albany, when the presents brought over by Lord Lovelace would be distributed. It was hoped by these means that they could be induced to break their neutrality and join the expedition. Colonel Schuyler was requested to send some of their chiefs to Boston to have a sight of the men-of-war when in harbor. But the Five Nations were reluctant to begin another war. The French during the peace had kept their priests and agents among them, and had attached many of them firmly to their interests.

The Schuylers "sang the war-song in the Onondaga village," and induced one of the French priests to go to Montreal. After his departure, they convinced the other priest that his life was in danger, and that his only way of escape was to go with them to Albany. The priest placed himself under their protection, and then the English faction among the Indians burned the now empty missionary house and chapel. The Schuylers returned to Albany, having been only partially successful in their mission. They reported that the Senecas and Cayugas had been prevailed on by the French to remain neutral. Major Dirk Wessels was then directed to visit those nations, and use his great influence over them.

New York had not fully recovered from the last war, and was still heavily in debt. That she might perform her allotted part in the present expedition, the Assembly passed an act authorizing an issue of "bills of credit," or paper money, to be redeemed within a given time by taxes. She raised four hundred and eighty-seven men and officers, besides volunteers; she built a fortified storehouse at Saratoga for the storage of supplies for the army, and almost entirely at her own expense, Fort Nicholson (now Fort Edward), Fort Schuyler (now Fort Ann), a block-house at Fort Miller, and another at Still-

water. Although she preferred to remain neutral, as in the first years of the war, when this expedition was ordered, she made her preparations without delay, and contributed more than any other colony to the expense. New York also built one hundred boats and one hundred canoes, at the same time obtaining the assistance of five hundred warriors of the Five Nations, and supporting their wives and children.

Colonel Schuyler was early at his post. The land forces were to meet at Albany, and then march to the head-waters of Lake Champlain, where they were to wait until after the fleet had sailed from Boston toward Quebec. Schuyler wrote from the great carrying-place, on June 29th, to the commissioners in charge of the expedition, that he had not yet received the promised stores, but believed they would arrive in due time. He was then sending off his brother, Major Johannes Schuyler, in charge of two hundred and twenty-eight men, whites and Indians, to Otter Creek, to intercept a party of the enemy on their way to the Connecticut River. He had been informed by Indian spies that an expedition had been organized at Montreal to harass the settlements of Western Massachusetts, which was then on the march.

The governor of Canada received early intelligence of the warlike preparations in New York. His agents were quickly put to work among the Iroquois, to hold them to their pledges of neutrality, as the most important matter, and first to be attended to. The defences of Montreal were repaired, farmers were warned to remove their families and effects to places of safety, measures were taken to abandon Fort Frontenac as untenable, for it was believed that a long and sanguinary war was imminent. The surprise occasioned by the "war-song" at Onondaga had hardly subsided, when Vaudreuil learned from his In-

dian spies that the English were building boats and carting supplies to their camp on Wood Creek, so that they would be quite ready to march on Montreal as soon as the fleet arrived at Boston. Being himself prepared to march with 1,500 men, French and Indians, he resolved not to await an attack from the enemy, but to begin work at once by marching to the head-waters of Lake Champlain and attacking the English before they had concentrated their forces. The project was no sooner conceived than he began to put it into execution. M. de Ramesay was intrusted with the command of nearly 1,500 troops, and directed to surprise the English on Wood Creek and destroy their forts and stores. This force arrived within a short distance of Crown Point, when they were discovered by Major Johannes Schuyler. After some skirmishing, they retreated, thinking it not wise or safe to proceed.

Lieutenant Barent Staats, of an Albany company, was taken prisoner by the French near Fort Nicholson, early in the following October. On his examination by Vaudreuil, he gave him some information, showing that it would not have been an easy task to drive the English from their position and to destroy their stores. He said that as soon as they received notice of Ramesay's approach to Crown Point, they mustered within an hour 1,000 English and 200 Indians at the fort, which was strengthened with an abattis of fallen trees, and that three days after they were joined by 350 Iroquois from all the nations except the Senecas. At the present time, he said, there was a large force of men at the most advanced fort, called Fort Peter Schuyler; and seven companies of regulars of fifty men each, with militia, at Fort Nicholson. They were becoming impatient of waiting for the ships. General Nicholson had left the army in command of Colonel Schuyler, and had returned to Albany. Schuyler and the

New York militia were disposed to abandon the expedition, as it was now late in the season, but the Boston people wished to retain the forts for future use, if possible. They all united, however, in anathemas on the head of Colonel Vetch, and wished him hanged, being the cause of this great expense.

The ships did not arrive at Boston, as had been proposed, some disasters to the allies in Europe having made it necessary to retain them at home. Colonel Schuyler at last retired, destroying Forts Peter Schuyler and Nicholson on his way. These places were of no account unless they were garrisoned. This could not be done for the want of funds.[1] To have left them standing would not have been good policy, for they would have afforded an advantage to the French as places of safety to their scalping parties. Thus the second attempt for the conquest of Canada proved a disastrous failure.

Colonel Vetch was so sanguine of the success of his plans, that he wrote to Secretary Boyle from New York, in June, asking that he might be appointed commandant of Quebec after its reduction. He was not a man of much ability, but an enthusiast, who had succeeded in pressing his projects on the British ministry. He was afterward governor of Annapolis (Port Royal) for a brief period.

Colonel Schuyler's disappointment at the result of the late expedition was very great. As a witness of the horrors of the former war, he could not but dread their repetition; and since the commencement of the present war, he had exerted all his influence with the Five Nations and the Canada proselytes to preserve a strict neutrality. In these efforts he had been seconded by Lord Cornbury and the French governors. He believed neutrality to be

[1] The cost to New York of this projected invasion was £18,000.

a measure at once humane, and the most conducive to the prosperity of the province, enabling the people to progress in wealth and civilization. It was his conviction, however, that there could be no permanent peace so long as the French were unchecked in their ambition to found a great empire in the western hemisphere. The two nations in Europe, although separated by the sea, were at peace only for brief intervals. In America, with only an imaginary line to divide them, there would be danger of constant war until one was conquered. He believed that Canada could be subdued in one short, sharp campaign by the English colonies alone, if they were united and determined. But as they could not be induced to make the effort, he looked to England to furnish the men and means. When, therefore, Colonel Vetch brought the news that England had determined on the invasion of Canada by sea and land, and for this purpose would furnish ships of war and several regiments of troops, Schuyler entered vigorously into the plans of the campaign. Its failure made the disappointment all the more severe, because, in addition to the large debt incurred, the frontiers were again exposed to the torch and scalping-knife, while the Five Nations were wavering in their allegiance, looking upon the French as formidable enemies, and the English as incompetent protectors.

That the expenses of the late expedition might not be entirely lost, Schuyler and Nicholson concluded to go to England and urge the queen's ministers to another effort. In imitation of the French, who on several occasions had sent prominent Indian chiefs to France to become acquainted with her glory and power, they conceived it to be prudent and wise to take over a delegation of Indian sachems, in order to show them something of the strength and wealth of England. As the Mohawks were the most

attached to English interests, and the most reliance could be placed upon them, five of their sachems were selected, three of whom were nominally Christians, and had some knowledge of the English language.[1] They were provided with an interpreter, Captain Abraham Schuyler, and arrangements were made for their comfort on their voyage. One, however, sickened and died before reaching England. The Assembly was in session when Schuyler's proposed voyage to England was made known, and they passed the following resolution, in which the lieutenant-governor and Council concurred :

"*Resolved*, that the humble address of the lieutenant-governor, Council, and General Assembly of this colony, to the queen, be committed to the charge and care of Colonel Peter Schuyler, to be presented by himself to her sacred majesty, he being a person who, not only in the last war (when he commanded the forces in chief at Canada), but in the present has performed faithful service to this and the neighboring colonies, and behaved himself in the offices with which he has been intrusted with good reputation and the general satisfaction of the people."

Schuyler and his party sailed for England in December, 1710, and were absent seven months.

The arrival of the Indian chiefs in London caused an unusual sensation. The newspapers of the day contain full descriptions of their persons, their Indian names, their titles, their dress, their entertainments, their progress through London, and their reception by the queen. They were entertained at the public expense, and lodged in handsomely furnished apartments in the house of an upholsterer, named Arne, in King Street, Covent Garden.

[1] An Onondaga sachem, addressing Governor Hunter, August, 1710, said : "Some of our brethren have been in England lately, and although they were natives of the Mohawk nation, yet we are as well satisfied as if they had been one from each of the Five Nations, being all united."

One was termed the "Emperor of the Mohawks," and the others "Kings." They were dressed in rich apparel; they were driven about the city and adjacent country in coaches with livery; they visited the dockyards and arsenals, were taken aboard the men-of-war and heard the roar of their artillery. Nobles and statesmen entertained them at their tables. Their first audience with the queen was with all the formality and courtesy conceded to princes of the highest rank. They were conducted to St. James' in coaches by Sir Charles Cotterel, and introduced to her Majesty by the Duke of Shrewsbury. Their speech on this occasion was as follows:

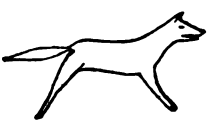
"GREAT QUEEN—We have undertaken a long voyage, which none of our predecessors could be prevailed upon to undertake, to see our Great Queen, and relate to her those things which we thought absolutely necessary for the good of her, and us her allies, on the other side of the water.

"We doubt not but that our great queen has been acquainted with our long and tedious war, in conjunction with her children, against her enemies the French; and that we have been as a strong wall for their security, even to the loss of our best men. We were mightily rejoiced when we heard our great queen had resolved to send an army to reduce Canada, and immediately, in token of friendship, we hung up the kettle and took up the hatchet, and with one consent assisted Colonel Nicholson in making preparations on this side the lake; but at length we were told that our great queen, by some important affairs, was prevented in her design at present, which made us sorrowful, lest the French, who had hitherto dreaded us, should now think us unable to make war against them. The reduction of Canada is of great weight to our free hunting, so that if our great queen should not be mindful of us, we must, with our families, forsake our country and seek other habitations, or stand neuter, either of which will be much against our inclinations.

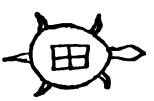
"In token of the sincerity of these nations, we do in their names present our great queen with these belts of wampum, and, in hopes of our great queen's favor, leave it to her most gracious consideration.'

After two or three weeks more in England, the party prepared to leave for home. Before their departure they addressed a formal letter to the queen, and another to the Privy Council, signed with the totems of their tribes, or clans. I am indebted, for copies of these letters, to the papers of General Philip Schuyler, now in possession of his grandson, George L. Schuyler, Esq., of New York. That to the queen is as follows:

"GREAT QUEEN—The Indian sachems, who have received high honor from our great queen in a full answer to their proposition concerning war and religion, do beg leave before their departure to express their satisfaction in prayers for her long and prosperous reign, and in assurance that we, her allies, will endeavor our people may continue faithful to the worship of Jesus Christ, and to our great queen in opposition to the French, which will be in great measure effected by the endeavors of Anadagariax (Colonel Nicholson), so well known and beloved among us. And our desire is that our brother Quidor may humbly present this as our minds accordingly."

The mark of  Hendrick and John.

The mark of Brandt.

The mark of  Etawa Caume.

Their farewell address to the Lords of the Privy Council was as follows:

"To the Rt. Honble the Lords of her Majesty's most Honble Privy Council.

"The Indian Sachems cannot repass the great waters from these large and flourishing kingdoms without expressing a just resentment and admiration for the signel favours done 'em by the nobles, especially of the Great Queen's court and council, the continance of which they will endeavour to deserve by a strict observance of what is expected by their offering their belts of Wampum, and which shall be further explained by Anadagariax (Colonel Nicholson) as the pleasure of the Great Queen.

"Our desire is that our brother Quidor may deliver this as our minds."

[Signed in the same way as that addressed to queen.]

Each of the Five Nations was divided into three tribes, or clans, called the Wolf, the Bear, and the Tortoise. When attaching their signatures to deeds or other papers, they made a figure of the animal, called a totem, representing the tribe to which they belonged. Although they could not write, some of them became very expert in drawing the animals. Hendrick and John belonged to the Wolf tribe. They were nominal converts to the Christian religion, and having been given Christian names when they were baptized, they dropped their old Indian appellations. Brandt also had been baptized, and as Brandt was a Christian name adopted by one Mohawk family, it remained unchanged. They were all known in England by their Indian names of many syllables, but when signing these addresses used their Christian names. Etawa Caume was yet a heathen. They were all Mohawk sachems, and not "common Indians," as Cadwallader Colden calls them. Hendrick was afterward known as "King Hendrick," and was with Sir William Johnson at

the battle of Lake George. He was then an old man of large and portly figure. He was dressed in the uniform of a British officer; unable to march on foot, he went into battle on horseback, and was a prominent mark for French sharpshooters. He fell early in the battle. At a little roadside tavern near the spot where he was killed some of his bones are still exhibited.

The sachems remained in London several weeks after their audience of the queen, enjoying the pleasures of the city and the hospitality of the nobles. They embarked on a man-of-war, the Dragon, and sailed for home on May 8th, landing at Boston on July 15, 1710.

Schuyler and Nicholson had accomplished all they had wished. They had shown the English Government the importance of preserving the friendship of the Five Nations. To do this, missionaries must be sent to them to give them religious instruction; forts for their security must be erected among them; more than all, Canada must be conquered, the sooner the better. The government resolved to send missionaries, erect forts, and make another effort in the near future for the subjugation of the French in North America.

The queen offered to confer on Colonel Schuyler the order of knighthood, but he respectfully declined the honor. He accepted, however, his portrait, painted by her order; a gold snuff-box, and some pieces of silver plate; and for his wife, a diamond brooch and earrings.[1]

Cadwallader Colden, in a letter to his son, written in 1759, long after Schuyler's death, accuses him of imposing

[1] The picture, in good preservation, is in the family of his eldest lineal descendant; a silver punch-bowl is in possession of another Schuyler family, and some of the diamonds are owned by a lady of another name living in New Jersey, Mrs. Livingston Miller. Other diamonds and plate are not traceable. Only a few years since the Schuyler diamonds were sent to an Albany jeweller to be reset.

grossly "on the queen and the British nation, by carrying to England five or six common Indians, and making them personate, one the emperor of the Five Nations, and the others the kings of each nation." Colden had allowed his rancor to an old opponent to get the better of his memory and of his good sense. The actual rank of these Indians was perfectly well known to the English Government, and they were dubbed kings simply in conformity to an old custom, just as now every petty negro chief on the Gold Coast is called a king. In the same way, a century earlier, Powhatan had been styled emperor, Pocahontas, princess, and the subordinate chiefs of the Virginia Indians, kings.[1]

The visit of the Indian sachems, as I have said, excited interest in London. Steele took them as a text for an essay in the *Tatler* (No. 171), and Addison for one in the *Spectator* (No. 50). Steele tells how

[1] We find some interesting notices of these Indians in Narcissus Luttrell's Brief Historical Relation of State Affairs, under the year 1710.

"*Thursday* 20 *Aprill.* Four Indian sachems, or kings of the 5 Indian Nations, lately arrived here, offering their services to assist her majestie against all her enemies in those parts, and secure her from the French in and about Canada in America, had yesterday audience of the queen, and accepted very gratiously: her majestie ordered them presents, the lord chamberlain to entertain them at her charge; and that they be shown what is remarkable here: 'tis said they'l goe over and have a view of our army in Flanders."

"*Saturday* 22 *Aprill.* Yesterday the 4 Indian kings went in one of the queen's barges, and took a view of Greenwich hospital, as also the dock and yard at Woolwich: afterwards were splendidly treated on board one of her Majesties yatchts: this day saw the banquetting house and chappel at Whitehal, and mightily pleased with their kind reception. 'Tis said the queen has ordered some land forces to be sent to the West Indies with those kings and seize upon the French settlement about Canada."

"*Thursday* 27 *Aprill.* The same day (the 26th) the 4 troops of guards of horse, with the grenadeers, were reviewed in Hyde Park by the duke of Ormond &c. when were present the four Indian kings."

"*Saturday* 29 *Aprill.* Yesterday the New England and New York merchants treated very splendidly the 4 Indian kings, to each of whom the Archbishop of Canterbury has presented an English Bible, and they will speedily return home."

"these just and generous princes, who act according to the dictates of natural justice, thought it proper to confer some dignity upon their landlord (an upholsterer) before they left his house. One of them had been sick during his residence there, and having never before been in a bed, had a very great veneration for him who made that engine of repose, so useful and so necessary in his distress. It was consulted among the four princes by what name to dignify his great merit and services. . . . It was therefore resolved to call their landlord Cadaroque, which is the name of the strongest fort in their part of the world."

Addison, writing the next year, uses them to introduce a satire on England. With regard to this paper, Swift writes to Stella, in his journal on April 28, 1711:

"The *Spectator* is written by Steele, with Addison's help: 'tis often very pretty. Yesterday it was made of a noble hint I gave him long ago for his *Tatlers*, about an Indian, supposed to write his travels into England. I repent he ever had it. I intended to have written a book on that subject. I believe he has spent it all in one paper, and all the under-hints there are mine, too; but I never see him or Addison."

These Indian sachems also gave the name to that club of bullies, the Mohocks, who disturbed the streets of London in 1712, and twice served as themes for papers in the *Spectator* (Nos. 324 and 347).

During Schuyler's absence, Ingoldesby's commission as lieutenant-governor had been revoked and a new governor had been appointed, who had arrived before him. There had been three needy lords successively in the gubernatorial chair, two of whom had died before they had time fully to develop their fitness for office, and the third had been recalled because of his incapacity. The queen and her ministry now invoked the aid of one of the middle class to

assist them in the government of a colony torn by factions, and far from prosperous, owing chiefly to the unwisdom of its lordly governors.

Colonel Robert Hunter was appointed governor of New York and New Jersey on September 9, 1709. He was Scotch by birth, and when a boy had been apprenticed to an apothecary; he had not fancied the business, and, leaving his master, had entered the army. By his fine personal appearance and accomplishments, he had soon found patrons, who secured his rapid advancement. He was a gallant soldier, and had distinguished himself in the operations of the army in Holland. Becoming disgusted with the treatment he received from his general, he returned to England, and soon after was appointed the successor of Lord Lovelace. He arrived in New York on June 14, 1710, and assumed the duties of a troublesome office. His term was extended to July 21, 1719, and on the whole he proved to be the best English governor who presided over the affairs of the colony. He doubtless met Colonel Schuyler in England, and began a friendship which lasted through his term of office.

Governor Hunter made it one of his first duties to confer with his Indian allies, who were duly requested to meet him at Albany within forty-five days. He was prompt to the appointment, and arrived at the council-house on August 7th. He was met as soon as he landed by the sachems who had just returned from England, and by some others, who requested him to *prohibit the sale of rum* during the conference. Certainly their morals had not been corrupted by their entertainment at the tables of the nobility. He gave them assurances that rum should not be sold during the stay of their countrymen.

The conference with the Five Nations, the River Indians, the Schaghticokes, and the Christian Mohawks con-

tinued through two weeks, and passed off satisfactorily to all parties. Hunter distributed in public a large amount of presents which he had brought with him from England, and in private he gave to the principal sachems, instead of laced coats and hats, an unusual quantity of ammunition and other warlike appliances.[1] The Indians made few presents in return, because they were poor, having hunted little for two years on account of the war. They expressed themselves well pleased with the reception given to their sachems in England, and requested especially that they might be supplied with missionaries and forts.

Toward the close of the session, a letter was received from Governor Dudley, of Massachusetts, earnestly requesting Governor Hunter to take some measures with the Five Nations, for the purpose of having them chastise the Eastern Indians for their inhuman barbarities on the frontiers of New England. Hunter referred the letter to the Indian board, with directions to consult the sachems. The commissioners could not prevail upon the Indians to do anything more than to send belts to the proselytes of Canada and remind them of their former promise of neutrality. In making their report, the commissioners reminded the governor that there was no money in the treasury, nor were there sufficient arms and ammunition for the defence of the frontiers. It was therefore better to avoid any measure causing extra expense until the Assembly had made an appropriation.

In November Governor Hunter presented a letter from the home government to the Council, then in secret ses-

[1] The governor also distributed the medals of the queen, "with her royal effigy on one side, and the last gained battle on the other," one to each nation; also, "her picture on silver, twenty to each nation, to be given to the chief warriors."

sion, which stated that another expedition would be undertaken against Canada in the following spring, and directed preparations to be made in the province to assist in the undertaking. Secrecy was enjoined, lest the enemy should become aware of the intention, and be prepared to meet the invaders. The Assembly was then in session, and Colonel Schuyler was appointed to confer with them. Such an important State secret, necessarily divulged to the Council and Assembly, could not be kept. During the winter it leaked out in whispers, and soon reached the ears of the French officials in Canada through their proselytes, who still visited their old Mohawk friends, and did some shopping by the way at Albany.

Toward the last of April, 1711, a letter was received by Governor Hunter from the commissioners for Indian affairs, to the effect that there were two French officers and thirty men in the Indian country, and that the sachems of Onondaga desired the immediate presence of Colonel Schuyler. Hunter, by advice of Council, commissioned him to go to Onondaga, and gave him instructions. He received his commission on April 30th, and the next day began his journey. He was accompanied by Captains Roseboom and Bleecker; his nephew, Nicholas Schuyler, then nineteen years old; four men, and nine Indians, with the interpreter, Van Eps. On his arrival at the Christian Mohawk village, he learned that the French at Onondaga were preparing to build a house. At the second village the sachems gratefully accepted the queen's arms, to be affixed to the gates of their castle, but declined to send any one with him to Onondaga. Meantime, Laurence Clasen, an interpreter, who had been stationed at Onondaga, arrived in Albany, and informed the Indian board that the French had made several propositions to the Five Nations, warning them not to take up

the hatchet at their peril. Should they listen to the governor of New York, and engage in the war, they would certainly be destroyed. They were counselled to remain quiet, and take no part in active hostilities. The French officer closed his speech with a present, chiefly in ammunition, to the value of £600. The interpreter also told the board that the French were engaged in building a block-house thirty feet long, with loop-holes. In other words, they were erecting a fort, and, having brought on their household furniture, they had come prepared to stay.

Schuyler arrived at the Oneida castle on the 6th, and at his request three sachems and several warriors joined his party. The next day he met some Indians, who told him, that as soon as the French officer heard he was on the way, he had stopped work on the block-house, and had retired to the lake, where his canoes were stored. Schuyler arrived at Onondaga in the evening, and was cordially received by the sachems of the English faction. The next day the sachems of the Five Nations were convened in council. They expressed great concern about an apparently authenticated report, that the English had resolved to drive them out of their country in order to take possession of their lands. They then told him a long story of what had been said to them by the French officer, and their reply. According to their own report, they reminded the Frenchman that while the French had often treacherously injured them, Corlaer and Quidor had been true to them.

Schuyler said that he had come at their request, to consult with them as to what the French had proposed to them. He was well satisfied with their answer to the French propositions, and said that the false report as to taking their lands needed no reply, for they themselves did not

believe it. "But how happens it, brethren, that you have permitted the French to build a fort in your midst? Why are you so blind, that you do not see its consequences on your liberty and welfare? For your own sakes it should not be permitted. As your friend, I am determined it shall be broken down before I go."

The next morning the sachems told him that he was at liberty to tear down the block-house. If he resolved to destroy it, they would send word to the Frenchmen, who were still lingering at the lake. "Do as you choose," said he, "but tell them that I am now engaged in its demolition;" and he immediately gave directions to his men and Indians to pull down the fort and destroy the materials, together with those provided for the chapel. After the work was done, the sachems told him that, now that they had consented to all his measures, they hoped to be able to get some powder at reasonable prices, for without it they could neither hunt nor lift the hatchet.

Joncaire, a French officer, was in the Seneca country with several men, engaged in building a chapel and a fort for a permanent residence. As soon as he heard of what had been done at Onondaga, he sent his men away, but remained himself, as he had been adopted by that tribe, to watch events. For this time the French were defeated in their plans to secure control of the Iroquois.

Schuyler returned to Albany on May 15th, having been absent a fortnight. He showed his usual courage, both in undertaking the journey and in the work that he performed. The French had acquired much influence over the Onondagas, Senecas, and Cayugas, and had a strong party among them. They were in the Indian country with a number of men; they were confident of success, and not easily intimidated. The Mohawks were cowed, and refused to send any men to aid in Schuyler's undertaking.

He took with him only a small party to meet his antagonists, and he could not well judge of the result. It might be discomfiture and death. His success was due to his courage and prudence ; and he raised himself still higher in the estimation of the Indians.

In his report to Governor Hunter, he said that he had incurred some private expenses, and had made some pledges to certain sachems, which he was not in a position to bear or redeem. He had never been a rich man. His recent voyage to England with the Indian chiefs, made at his own expense, had exhausted his ready money. He now asked the governor to protect his promises, and cover his expenses from the treasury. Besides the presents he carried with him, he had promised to the sachems two hundred pounds of powder, thirty shirts, and two pieces of strouds. While at Onondaga, Schuyler notified the sachems that Governor Hunter would meet them in conference at Albany in June. The records of the conference are not preserved; but we learn that it was satisfactory to the governor. The covenant-chain was renewed; fair promises were made to obey the queen's commands, and not to leave home without consent. On his way back to New York, Hunter met an express sent by Nicholson from Boston, with letters from England, containing the queen's instructions relative to the expedition into Canada. The sachems were in Albany when he left, and, supposing them to be there still, he sent a message to have two of each nation remain until further orders. At New York he gave directions to have the army supplies got in readiness, and then hastened to New London to attend a congress of the colonial governors to concert measures for the expedition. The congress was in session only two days. Of the army directed toward Montreal, New York was required to furnish nearly one-half. It was arranged

that Colonel Vetch, who was governor of Annapolis, should have an opportunity of participating in the glory of the campaign by the appointment of a deputy. Colonel Schuyler, a member of the congress, hurried home to call another conference with the Five Nations, and to direct them to bring down their warriors with all their canoes. Everything was astir, but quietly, to be in readiness when the fleet should arrive. There was more confidence than ever before in the success of their plans.

Hunter met the Assembly of New York on his return, and soon afterward that of New Jersey. Much had to be done in a short time, owing to the long passage of the ship which brought the queen's instructions. Provisions for the land and sea forces were required, and they could not be purchased without appropriations; Indians had to be managed, boats and canoes to be built. Hunter was a busy man. The New York Assembly appropriated £10,000 for the expenses of their quota, which they thought was out of all proportion to the others; and indeed it was. The New Jersey Assembly appropriated £5,000. The quota of New York was made up of 350 whites, 150 Indians, and 100 Palatines. Before the end of July the New York troops were raised and equipped; three hundred and fifty batteaux were built, each carrying six men with their rations, and all the supplies provided. On August 9th, in order to hold a conference with the Five Nations, Governor Hunter left for Albany, in company with General Nicholson, who had been again selected to command the army. The Indians were a little late in their appearance, but on August 24th they came, "a jolly crew," eight hundred strong. All the cantons were represented, and came in the best of spirits. Large presents were made to them, and they entered on the campaign with their old-time ardor.

The land forces for this expedition were made up of Colonel Ingoldesby's regiment of regulars and Palatines, 600; Colonel Schuyler's regiment of provincials, Palatines, and Indians, 550; Colonel Whiting's regiment of Connecticut levies, 360; Five Nation Indians and their allies, 800; in all 2,310 men—a large army compared to Winthrop's of twenty years before.[1] The army was marched to the old camping-ground, Wood Creek, the head-waters of Lake Champlain.

The forces to operate by sea against Quebec consisted of five thousand troops from England and Flanders, under command of General Hill, twelve men-of-war, forty transports, and six store-ships, with a train of artillery, military stores, and other equipments. The fleet sailed from Boston on July 28th, and on August 14th was in the mouth of the St. Lawrence, all in good condition. On receipt of this intelligence, Hunter wrote a hopeful letter to Secretary St. John, giving a brief account of all that had been done to make the expedition a success. His next advices dashed his sanguine hopes. General Hill, under date of August 25th, informed him that the fleet had met with a serious disaster. It had been driven on the north shore of the bay, and although the war-ships escaped, eight transports and a store-ship, with eight hundred men, were lost. At a council of war after the disaster, it was decided to abandon the enterprise and to return home.

The disaster to the fleet was not the only misfortune of this ill-starred expedition. General Hill and Admiral Walker had directed Governor Hunter to send them an additional stock of provisions, that in case they were obliged to winter in Canada they might not starve.

---

[1] Smith, in his History of New York, says that the army numbered 4,000 men—evidently a mistake. Hunter is the best authority.

Hunter loaded three transports with supplies, and put them under convoy of a ship of war. They were wrecked on Cape Breton, and wholly lost, with all the officers, except two, and one hundred seamen.

General Nicholson, learning that the fleet had returned home, retired with his army from the camp on Wood Creek to Albany, and disbanded the troops, retaining one hundred and fifty men to guard the frontiers. Hunter met the Indians at Albany on their homeward march, and gave them assurances of continued friendship and protection. Having broken the peace by taking up arms, and joining the army for the invasion of Canada, they feared the vengeance of the French, and asked that the long neglected forts at Albany and Schenectady might be repaired, and new ones erected in their countries. This was promised; and Hunter at once gave his directions for the repairs of the old forts, and entered into contracts for building one in the Mohawk country and another at Onondaga.

The frontiers were now open to the scalping parties of the French and Indians. The truce of neutrality was broken, and soon the old work of cruelty and death began. Hunter had hardly reached the capital when he received a letter from the Indian commissioners, giving him a circumstantial account of the inhuman murder of men, women, and children at Schaghticoke by a party of French proselytes. During the years of neutrality farmers had ventured to live on their farms in houses partially fortified. The conviction that the late expedition would be successful had been so general, that after the truce had been broken these isolated families had taken no precautions for their safety, and since the army was disbanded there had been little time for them to decide what to do. Hunter's intelligent mind was active in devising measures

of relief from such barbarous visits, and quick in putting them into execution. There were no other tragedies of a like character enacted on the frontiers thereafter during the war.

Notwithstanding failures and misfortunes, and a heavy debt, the Council and Assembly united in an address to the queen, praying that the effort for the subjugation of Canada might be renewed. It was also understood in Canada, that the English intended to make another trial, and to this end Colonel Nicholson had again gone to England. The governor of Canada was informed by the French minister, that Nicholson's mission would be in vain. The minister knew whereof he spoke, and that peace was only a question of time. The European belligerents were becoming exhausted by the ten years' war, in which no party had gained any great advantage, and evidences were multiplying that the war must soon close for want of men and money.

It was no surprise to Governor Hunter, when, on October 18, 1712, he received orders for a cessation of hostilities. It was time, both for his own relief and for that of the people. His own private fortune and credit were exhausted. He had hitherto carried on the government without any public money. The Assemblies had refused to make appropriations for his salary and contingent expenses, except on conditions which he could not accept. Hunter had also expended large sums in the support of the Palatines, the drafts for which the government at home had allowed to be protested. The people of the province rejoiced that they were again permitted to pursue their usual occupations untrammelled by the requisitions of war. There was now no fear of military drafts to cripple commerce ; no fear of cruisers and privateers to interfere with the voyages of merchant ships ; the husbandmen

no longer hesitated to cultivate their fields and reap their harvests by reason of lurking scalping parties lying in wait around their dwellings and ripening crops. The treaty of peace, signed at Utrecht, on April 13, 1713, gave great joy to an impoverished province. The colony enjoyed rest for thirty years, until the beginning of the Old French War (so-called) of 1744, or the third of the French and Indian wars against the English in America.

As soon, however, as hostilities had ceased, new troubles arose with the Indians. On the borders of North Carolina lived a large tribe of savages, called the Tuscaroras. They were related to the Five Nations, and in their war with the English of Carolina they called their relatives from the north to their assistance. The Five Nations were still under apprehensions of entire destruction by their allies, the English, and their fears in this regard were kept alive and stimulated by the French residents in their countries, who encouraged them to accept the invitation and go to the relief of their kinsmen. A general council of Indian tribes, including the Five Nations, was held on the Susquehanna River, which the people of Albany considered to be of evil omen, and they were alarmed at the outlook. The Common Council petitioned the governor to take some means to pacify the Indians. To this end, they asked that Colonel Peter Schuyler be restored to his place as chairman of the Board of Commissioners for Indian Affairs.[1] They alleged that Schuyler "is much esteemed by the Indians, and has great influence on them." At the same time the commissioners wrote to Hunter, that they were informed that the Five Nations were going

[1] While Colonel Schuyler was in England, in April, 1710, Lieutenant-Governor Ingoldesby had reorganized the board, and left Schuyler off—doubtless on account of his absence.

south on the war-path, having procured powder from the French, and that it was feared they would join the Tuscaroras against the English; that, moreover, they had forbidden any of their nations to visit Albany, believing what the French had told them as to the designs of the English on their country. These letters, after being read in Council, were sent to the Assembly, with their opinion, that "it was absolutely necessary to send some men of credit among them with a present, to renew the covenant-chain." The Assembly promptly appropriated £100—one-half for the expense of the mission, and the rest for a present. The governor wrote to Schuyler, enclosing instructions, and directed him to go to Onondaga; for, said he, "we are of opinion you are the properest person to be employed in this affair." Hunter also said that he and the Council considered the business of great importance, and hoped that he would be successful in quieting the excitement.

No records of Colonel Schuyler's negotiations during this visit to Onondaga are preserved. We learn incidentally that he left Albany on June 24th, and that before he reached Schenectady he met Dekanissora, who told him that the Mohawks were greatly excited over the death of some friends, who had been killed by the English; that they were proposing to destroy the Christians, and had sent to the other nations for assistance. This intelligence was so alarming, that as soon as Schuyler's letter reached him, the governor hurried up to Albany to investigate the affair. On his return to New York, July 17th, he reported to the Council, that the Albanians were not greatly excited, and had no fears of an Indian war; there had been a drunken row between a few soldiers and Mohawks, involving the death of an Indian and the wounding of others, but the other four nations knew nothing of the affray, and were

quiet. He also informed the Council, that he had reorganized the Indian board, and restored Colonel Schuyler to his old position. The restoration of Schuyler to the board, all things considered, was a compliment to his ability and efficiency as a member. It had been done at the request of the Albany city government, the commissioners, the Council, and the Assembly—a majority of all these bodies being opposed to him politically.

In August following, the governor communicated to the Council Colonel Schuyler's journal of proceedings with the sachems of the Five Nations. Unfortunately it has not been preserved. The records of 1712 have little of interest relating to the Indians. We learn only, that throughout the year there was more or less excitement among them, occasioned chiefly by the lying stories of the French. The presents made them by New York were few and of little account. They were threatened as usual with an invasion by the French. They were not permitted to render any assistance to their friends, the Tuscaroras, but were given some ammunition when they proposed a raid against some Indians in alliance with the French.

Early in the following year, news was received from North Carolina, that there had been a great battle between the English and Tuscaroras, in which about eight hundred of the latter were killed, and that the remnant of the tribe had fled. Believing that this intelligence would cause some excitement among the Five Nations, the Council agreed upon a policy—not fair, because it lacked the element of truth. It was decided to tell their allies that the Tuscaroras had been the aggressors, while the English had acted on the defensive. It would have been more truthful to tell them that the Carolinians wanted to possess their lands by the "crowding process," to which the Indians were averse, and hence the collision. Another sop was

offered them, far more effectual than a lie. The Carolinians had rescued one of their nation from a southern tribe, where he had long been held a prisoner, and he was to be returned to his home.

The Tuscaroras, after their defeat and the slaughter of their warriors, sought asylum in the country of the Five Nations, to which Governor Hunter was at first opposed; but his consent was finally secured, and after long negotiations they settled near Oneida Lake, and became the sixth nation of the confederacy. There was excitement among the Five Nations when they heard of the slaughter of their cousins, and, believing that their old enemies, the Flatheads, had rendered assistance to the English, they were resolved to chastise them, and prepared for their march. It was difficult to divert them from their purpose. Messengers and a few presents were sent to them, and the governor himself desired to visit them in order to reason the case with them. He was unable to do so for want of means to procure presents. This trouble continued until October, when Hendrick Hansen was able to report that "all things were well with the Onondagas on my recent visit."

At last, on October 29th, the welcome news was received that the treaty of peace between England and France had been signed. Although more than a year had elapsed since Hunter had been directed to cease hostilities, and a full year since the governor of Canada had been informed that there was an armistice, to continue four months from August 11th, the French had continued to send out scalping parties against New England. Their pertinacity in this regard caused Governor Dudley, of Massachusetts, to make another appeal to Hunter to induce the Five Nations to engage in a war with the eastern Indians. Hunter laid the application before the Assembly,

who declined to make an appropriation for the expenses of such an expedition, and the affair was dropped. But now that the peace was a known fact, the Canadians had no pretence for continuing hostilities, and the whole country enjoyed repose.

Hunter had completed the fort and church-building among the Mohawks; the missionary had arrived and was at his post; and the governor was enabled to report, two days after he had received the news of peace, that "the Indians are quiet."

The management of the Indians was a difficult task. They were as fickle as children, and, like children, made to believe any falsehood, however preposterous. The French were always busy circulating reports to the prejudice of the English, and it required skill to disabuse their minds. Their excitement in reference to the Tuscaroras was hardly allayed, when another question required settlement. The Indian men, when not engaged in war or hunting, were idle, and, like the Athenians of old, fond of news. Designing persons, taking advantage of this peculiarity, could easily stir up a commotion by relating some absurd stories by way of news.

In the spring of 1714, the Indian board wrote to Hunter, that there was to be a meeting at Onondaga, in the near future, of the Five Nations and of all the Indian tribes as far south as Carolina. It was to be secret, and it had been decided, that any one revealing its proceedings should suffer the penalty of death. The writer added, that they had procured a trusty Indian, in consideration of two barrels of powder and lead in proportion, to attend the meeting, and acquaint them with all its transactions. They were so fearful of compromising the "trusty Indian," that they dare not name him. It afterward transpired that he was no other than Hendrick, the Mohawk

chief, who in London four years before had been called the Emperor of the Five Nations.

Hendrick attended the meeting and made a report, which was of sufficient importance to induce the Assembly to make an appropriation for presents to the Indians. Before, however, the bill was passed, they were startled with a message from the Indian board, that "the Mohawk warriors were about to start on the war-path," but in what direction was a secret "carefully guarded." The Indians had received no presents in three years, and, as those were the means relied on by the English to retain their friendship, they had begun to feel that they were neglected. The French were not slow to seize on this neglect to arouse their fears and awaken their suspicions that their old allies had some evil designs. Hunter admits, that "all had run to confusion on the frontiers." It was time that the old remedy for such evils should be applied.

Runners, with wampum, were despatched to the Five Nations, calling a convention at Albany in September. Punctual to the time, the principal sachems were at the place appointed. Dekanissora opened the proceedings with a speech of welcome, and then questioned the governor as to the reports which occasioned alarm and uneasiness among them. He said that it had been reported, all the English colonies from New England to Carolina had combined for their extermination. He added, that it was no vague rumor, for the report came to them authenticated by two belts, a "long one and a short one." It caused much excitement and confusion, but gained credit and belief, "because the powder grows dearer every day." Powder was the Indian's staff of life. Without it, he must go hungry and naked; with it, he killed the game he ate, and the animals whose skins furnished him with clothing.

The governor assured them that the report was utterly false, and, to prove his assertion, he presented them with one hundred bags of powder, twenty-five cases of lead, twenty guns, and numerous other articles. He then inquired who it was that had brought those two belts which Dekanissora had mentioned as confirmatory of the false reports? into whose hands were those belts given? who had them now? To these questions no answers were given. And hence the suspicion arises, whether the secret meeting, the young men adorned with war-paint, the unknown destination of the warriors, the excitement, and the confusion, were not Indian stratagems to call the English to the duty of furnishing another instalment of presents?

The conference resulted to the satisfaction of both parties. The sachems were cordial in their thanks to the governor for his happy solution of all their mental difficulties, and the governor again congratulated himself that he had quieted the commotions. Before leaving for their homes, the sachems informed the governor that the Tuscaroras had come to shelter themselves among the Five Nations. "They were of us, and went out from us a long while ago. They are now returned, and promise to live peaceably."

Important letters had been received for the governor while he was at Albany, which he communicated to the Council on his return. The good Queen Anne had departed to her rest, and George, elector of Brunswick, had ascended the throne. A week later he was proclaimed king with the usual formalities. When Hendrick heard of the queen's death, and of George's accession to the crown, he went on a visit to the governor, as bearer of despatches from the Five Nations. They kindly suggested, that a chief of each nation should be sent in a

ship of war to England, that they might offer their congratulations to his Majesty, and return their fealty. Since his visit to England, poor Hendrick had a longing to renew his royal experiences and again enjoy the hospitalities of the nobles. The governor was kind and courteous, but there were no public vessels then in the harbor, and he knew not when one would arrive. He would represent the wishes of his allies to the king, and if he requested them to come he would send for them, and make proper provision for their comfort on the passage. Hendrick was satisfied, of course, but returned to his wigwam with no certain hope that he would ever again behold the splendors of the court or take an airing in the royal coach.

By the peace of Utrecht, it was understood that the French surrendered all claim to the Iroquois country, and it was supposed that thereafter they would cease to meddle in the affairs of that people. The French gave a different interpretation to the articles of the treaty bearing on that point, and continued their old practices. Jesuit priests and other agents still resided among the Five Nations. Their sachems were bribed with presents, and seduced by solicitations to go to Canada and confer with the governor. Hunter was alarmed. He sent a commissioner to Canada to complain and protest. In one of his letters, referring to this subject, he exclaims: "Happy he who has nothing to do with these colonies! Upon the foot they stand; they run the risk of an entire and speedy ruin."

Hunter was unhappy in many things. He was financially embarrassed, owing to his efforts to sustain the Palatines according to his instructions. He was politically embarrassed in his unwearied efforts to conform to the requirements of his position relating to legislation. Although a good churchman, he was embarrassed by the clergy in demands that he could not grant. He had dis-

solved three Assemblies, and was on the eve of dissolving another, because he could not induce them to frame their legislation in the interests of what he conceived to be good government. He had enemies both here and in England, who were planting thorns in his side; their unjust aspersions on his administration called for frequent explanations, which it galled his sense of honor to be compelled to give. Politically he was more inclined to favor the old Leislerians than their opponents, particularly in his appointments to office, although in the main he was impartial and judicial.

In July, 1715, he secured from the Assembly an act which afforded him some relief financially. It was the result of a compromise, such as has been the basis of a great deal of legislation from that time to the present. This Assembly, like former ones, was disposed to be sparing in its appropriations for the support of government, and had a bill under consideration for that purpose, which Hunter could not in honor approve. There was another, known as the Naturalization bill, which a majority of the House was exceedingly desirous should become a law. The governor caused them to understand that their pet measure would not be approved, unless they were more liberal in the treatment of the government. They were quick to discover their own interest, and agreed to settle a sufficient revenue for five years. This was the first time that he had been gratified with any part of his salary since he had entered on his office. The Lords of Trade, referring to the act, said, that "after many years' struggle for bread, Brigadier Hunter got the Assembly to settle a revenue for five years, owing chiefly to the labors of Mr. Lewis Morris, for which he had rewarded him by appointing him chief justice, in place of Mompesson, deceased."

This appointment called out a memorial to the Lords of

Trade from Mr. Charles Lodwik, then a resident of London. Mr. Lodwik had been a merchant of New York, and in Leisler's time had been one of the militia captains, the same who had demanded the keys of the fort from Lieutenant-Governor Nicholson. After removing to London, he kept up a correspondence with his friends in New York, who gave him information as to passing events relating to public men and personal friends. It nowhere appears that Colonel Schuyler was one of the latter, although some of Schuyler's friends were among his correspondents. The jealousy of parties was so intense, that slight omissions in courtesy, or the employment of individuals of one faction instead of those of the other, caused suspicion and remark. Lewis Morris affiliated with the Leislerian party, and his appointment to the judgeship was offensive to members of the other party, who, as lawyers, felt themselves doubly slighted by the advancement of a layman to that high position. Schuyler's health was broken to such a degree that he could not endure the fatigues and privations incident to long journeys in the Indian country. The employment of other men for such duties of late gave occasion for some super-serviceable friend to imagine that he was neglected.

Lodwik, in his memorial, informs the Lords of Trade, that, having resided seventeen years in New York, he naturally takes an interest in matters relating to its prosperity. He has been informed, that trade has fallen off by reason of French intrigues among the Five Nations, whose affection for the English has grown cold, and in danger of being wholly diverted from their allegiance. He modestly suggests that the French should be forbidden to meddle in their affairs, and passes on to observe, that all treaties with the Five Nations for many years have been made with the assistance of Colonel Schuyler, for

whom the Indians always had a great affection, and would be displeased were he not to appear at their conferences; and adds: "There are reports here that the governor there has been pleased to slight that gentleman in particular." Lodwik sought to cover his real design, and after this long preamble comes to the point of his memorial: "Governor Hunter has appointed as chief justice, in place of Mr. Mompesson, deceased, one Lewis Morris, a gentleman never bred to the law, only because he is the governor's favorite. Through his ignorance of law, he may commit some fatal errors. It is better to appoint a thorough lawyer, and the people of the province will be more pleased."

Lodwik and his correspondents did not succeed in their effort to displace Morris, or lessen Hunter in the esteem of his superiors. The memorial was sent to Hunter by the Lords of Trade, with assurances of their continued regard, and a copy of their report to the minister, in which they fully endorsed his appointment of Morris. Hunter, in his reply to this flattering letter, said that he had shown the memorial to the Council, all the members of which expressed surprise, and denied having given any information to Lodwik on which he could base his assertions. Hunter added, "there are few instances in which we have differed in opinion, and none of any personal difference with Colonel Schuyler." "He was never slighted, but favored and encouraged." In reference to this memorial and the use of his name, Colonel Schuyler assured the governor that Lodwik had no authority for his assertions, and he was ready, if required, to declare in his own name that it was a false accusation.

This was in 1715. Three years afterward Lodwik renewed the charge, and then Hunter wrote to Schuyler on the subject, for the purpose of procuring his denial over

his name. Schuyler, in his reply, declared explicitly that the accusation that Hunter had slighted him, or in any way had treated him with neglect, was false. On the other hand, he was under great obligations to him for his "extraordinary respect and friendship."

Four days after the date of Lodwik's memorial in London (August 27, 1715), Hunter held a convention with the Five Nations at Albany, assisted by Colonel Schuyler as usual. The chief topic of discussion was the Carolina war. The year before the governor had induced them to lay aside their intention of making war on the Flatheads of the south, but now he desired them to take an active part and punish those treacherous Indians. He told them that the reason why the Flatheads were butchering the English of Carolina was that the English refused to assist them in their war against the Five Nations.

Dekanissora, in his reply, said that they had been informed that the war had been begun for other reasons than those assigned by the governor; that when the English were fighting the Tuscaroras, they had desired the assistance of the Flatheads, and as an inducement had offered to supply them with powder at lower rates, but that after the Tuscaroras were subdued and dispersed they had sold their powder at higher rates than before; that the Flatheads had resented this breach of faith, and had turned their hatchets against the men for whom they had fought the year before. Nevertheless, if the governor would brighten and sharpen their hatchets, now rusty and dull for want of use, by a liberal supply of powder and guns, they would engage in the war, and teach their old enemies to remain quiet and no longer annoy the English.

The governor complied with the terms; and in the following October the Indians sent messengers to Albany, to inform the commissioners that they had fulfilled their

engagement, and had sent a fighting party against the Flatheads, as also eight orators, with many presents, to negotiate a peace. The war-party returned the next spring with "several scalps and some prisoners."

Meanwhile Hunter's representations to his government as to the necessity of giving more attention to the Five Nations, particularly as to presents from the king, attracted attention, and were attended with favorable results. The Lords of Trade reported to Secretary Stanhope that they had referred to their books to learn what had been done theretofore. They found that New York had always been reputed the frontier of the English colonies in North America, and that the Five Nations were the only barrier between the French and the English provinces south of New York. These Indians were the most warlike people on the continent, and "were capable of turning European interests to whichever side they inclined." Inasmuch as the French were obtaining a great influence over them, and seemed likely to detach them from the English, they recommended that a present to the amount of £800 should be sent to them by the king.

It was nearly two years before the presents were ready for distribution, which took place at a conference held at Albany, in June, 1717. Dekanissora was the chief speaker on the part of the Five Nations, but presented no belts, alleging that they were too poor to buy them. He again referred to the reports current among them, that the English colonies had combined to destroy them. This was an old story, but nevertheless repeated at every conference. It may have been for the purpose of securing presents, as in time of peace there was less need of their services, conferences were not so frequent, and gratuities less; or it may have been that their minds, through its constant iteration by the French, had become possessed with this

idea to such an extent they could not divest themselves of the thought.

The next year, in August, the Indian board reported that the Indians were again greatly excited, and on the same old subject. The sachems then in Albany demanded the governor's immediate reply as to the truth of the reports. They were also in need of guns and ammunition for their hunting. The governor went up to Albany without delay, and appeased the excitement. This was Brigadier Hunter's last conference with the Five Nations. He made certain propositions to the Indians, to which they declined a reply until the next year. Governor Hunter was not there to receive it. He was wearied with the cares of office, and had determined to go "home." His advances for the Palatines, and for other purposes, had not been repaid, and there seemed to be no possibility of effecting a settlement without his personal presence; he was in affliction by the death of his wife; he was annoyed by his enemies in England, who kept up a constant fire of misrepresentations, to which the government too often gave a willing ear; he had been away from friends and congenial society for nine years, and was homesick. He did not resign, but asked for and obtained a leave of absence; he kept his intentions a secret until he was ready to embark. He delivered to Colonel Schuyler, who, as oldest member of the Council, would be entrusted with the government in his absence, his own commissions and instructions as his guide in the administration on July 13, 1729. He then took leave of the Council, which was cordial, if not affecting, and went aboard the ship of war which was to convey him home.

Colonel Schuyler had just recovered from a tedious illness, and had regained to some degree his old-time spirit and activity. The day after his arrival in New York,

shortly before the governor left, a letter was received from the Indian board, which informed them that Dekanissora had appeared in Albany with the news that the French were building a fort at Niagara. The orator added that he was only a private person, and could accept no belt or message on the subject. He had no doubt, however, that if the governor would use the same methods as in the destruction of the block-house at Onondaga, this fort might in like manner be destroyed to the satisfaction of all concerned. The "same methods" could not now be put in requisition. Hunter was ready to leave for England, and Colonel Schuyler must remain in New York. There had been such reports before, which proved to be mere rumors. The Council, thinking perhaps this might be one of the same kind, and that Dekanissora was after an annual present, directed the interpreter to visit the Indian country, with sixty pounds' worth of presents, and forbid the work to be done. He was not successful in his mission. The fortified trading-house remained, and became a fort; it gave the French more influence among the Indians, and cut off from Albany a large amount of trade.

Brigadier Robert Hunter did not return to New York. He found the province in a low condition, and the people rent into divisions and factions; he left it peaceful and prosperous; party spirit had been subdued, and factions reconciled; he did more to quiet the people than any or all of his predecessors. They openly chose sides with one or the other, and thus made matters worse. Hunter, leaning to the Leislerians, did not quarrel with their opponents; he patronized both, and judiciously compelled them to be quiet.

In the absence of the governor, and of the lieutenant-governor when there was one, the government devolved on the eldest councillor with the title of president. There

had been at various times lieutenant-governors, but after Ingoldesby's commission was revoked no one had been appointed to that position, which consequently left the administration to the eldest councillor in the absence of the governor. Hunter had not resigned, but was absent on leave of absence; how long he would be gone was not known, but it was his intention to return after he had arranged his private affairs.

Schuyler entered upon the duties of president on July 21, 1719, when, at a meeting of the Council, Governor Hunter's commission and instructions were read, and he took the oaths of office. The Council minutes and other records indicate that Schuyler began and executed his trust with a fixed purpose to be faithful to his duties and instructions. The book of Council minutes, numbered twelve, contains the records of his administration from July 21, 1719, to September 5, 1720, inclusive. The records are full and minute, more so than those of any one who had preceded him. They show that a majority of the Council was always present, whose opinions were always sought and given on all business of importance, including that of lands. He introduced some new features into the minutes of Council, which were an improvement on the old methods, particularly to the student of history. Theretofore, when communications were received from the commissioners of Indian affairs, a simple record was made: "they were read, and ordered on file." When the governor met the Indian sachems in conference, on his return to the capital, he reported verbally to the Council, and a note to that effect was made. Now the letters and the proceedings of the president's conference with the Five Nations, lasting eight days, are recorded in full; as also a full list of the presents distributed. Such records were novel, but were adopted by succeeding governors.

The governors were always instructed to make frequent reports of all matters relating to the colony, and especially to send copies of the Council records at stated periods to the parent government. Many of them had neglected their duty in this regard, for which they had been sharply reproved. Even Brigadier Hunter was occasionally reminded that he had not complied with his instructions on these points. Schuyler was particular to send the required reports and records, so that no complaints were made; he knew that he was closely watched by political opponents and others jealous of his position and reputation, who would report anything that seemed like an infraction of his instructions; this knowledge made him the more careful. Hunter had filled the various civil offices with his friends, and after several dissolutions had secured an Assembly subservient to his will. When he left for home with the expectation of returning, he desired that there should be no change in his absence, and was especially solicitous that the Assembly should not be dissolved, either by proclamation or by limitation of adjournment. It was well known that the president held the doctrine, that on the appointment of every new governor the Assembly called by his predecessor was legally dissolved. Such had been the custom, and usage made the law, if not the legislature. Hunter had prorogued the Assembly to May 1, 1720; should it not again be prorogued by proclamation previous to that date, in the absence of the governor, it would be dissolved.

The president's opponents and the spies over his conduct were not required to wait more than two months for an occasion to make such representations as were calculated to arouse Hunter's suspicions that Schuyler intended to make some radical changes in the government. The mayors and sheriffs of New York and Albany were

annually appointed by the governor on September 29th, as provided by their charters. Dr. Johnston, mayor of New York, had served five years, and Robert Livingston, Jr., mayor of Albany, nine years; both appointed by Hunter. In the place of Johnston Schuyler appointed Jacobus Van Cortlandt, and in place of Livingston Myndert Schuyler. He reappointed Farmer, Hunter's appointee, sheriff of New York, and Gerritt Van Schaick in place of Samuel Babbington, sheriff of Albany. The new officials were all men of character and position; some of them, if not all, were friends of Hunter. There were good reasons for the changes, as we shall see, and as the politics of the new were the same as that of the old officers, there was little or no change in policy. The change of men, however, was sufficient cause of complaint.

Members of the Council and "others" immediately despatched letters to Hunter, which alarmed him lest the "president should break into the measures that he had with so much labor settled for the peace of the country." Having begun with a change of the principal magistracy, his correspondents expressed the belief that Schuyler would follow it up by changing all the rest, and then, to put a finishing touch to his innovations, he would dissolve the Assembly, "the most dutiful to their sovereign, and the most attentive to the interests of the colony that the colony could ever boast of." Hunter, on the receipt of these alarming letters, memorialized the Lords of Trade, reciting the facts, and suggesting immediate instructions be sent to the president to make no other changes than "such as shall be thought by the Council to be absolutely necessary."

The Lords of Trade the next day sent a note to Mr. Secretary Craggs, requesting the order to be made, as Hunter had suggested. Only three days afterward (there

was no red tape about this business) Secretary Craggs wrote to Schuyler, as follows :

"Whitehall, Dec. 26, 1719.

"Sir,

"The King having received information that you have begun to make such alterations in the magistracy as may be prejudicial to his Majesty's service, if your further proceedings therein be not prevented, I am hereby to signify his Majesty's express commands, that you do not make any other alterations than such as shall be thought by the Council to be aboslutely necessary, and particularly that you do not dissolve the present Assembly, or suffer it to be dissolved.

"I am,
"Sir,
"Your most
"humble servant
"J. CRAGGS."

"To Peter Schuyler Esq.
"President of the Council of
"New York."

Within a month after the appointment of the mayors and sheriffs, the nerves of "some of the Council and others," but more especially of the "others," received another severe shock. This time death, and not the limitation of terms, created a vacancy in an important office, for which there was more than one candidate. Augustine Graham, surveyor-general, having died, Schuyler, by advice of the Council, appointed Allan Jarret to the vacant place. This was a sore disappointment to one of the "others," who quickly notified Hunter of the president's presumption in the selection of a man whom Hunter himself had appointed to run the boundary line between New York and New Jersey. Another missive of Mr. Secretary Craggs soon followed :

"Whitehall, Feby. 2, 1720.

"Sir,

"I am hereby to signify the King's pleasure to you, that you do forthwith constitute and appoint Dr. Cadwallader Colden his Majesty's Surveyor General of all the lands within the province of New York in the room of Augustin Graham, deceased.

"I am

"Sir,

"Your most humble Servant,

"Govr of New York "J. CRAGGS."

"or the commander in chief.

At a meeting of the Council, on April 21, 1720, the president presented these letters, and another directing him to admit Francis Harison, Esq., as member of the Council. Mr. Harison was immediately admitted, and took the oaths of office. A few days afterward the president addressed the following letter to the Lords of Trade. It serves to show the reasons why some changes in the magistracy were made, and is a justification of his action therein.

"In New York, 27, April 1720.

"To the Lords of Trade,

"My Lords,

"Having on the 16th inst. with a letter from his Excellency, Brigadier Hunter, dated the 18th February last received the following orders, to wit: A warrant under the Privy seal to swear and admit Frances Harison Esq. one of the Council of this Province: His Majesty's order signified by Mr. Secretary Craggs, that no alteration should be made in the magistracy, but such as the Council shall think absolutely necessary, and to prevent the present Assembly's being dissolved; Another to constitute Doc. Cadwallader Colden, Surveyor of lands, I judge it my duty to acquaint your Lordships, that these orders were punctually complied

with. Mr. Harison accordingly took his place at the Council board, Mr. Colden has a commission under the seal of the Province, and a proclamation is issued to adjourn the Assembly to the second Tuesday of June next.

"As I had reason to believe my administration would be of no long duration, I was desirous of keeping it in the same state it was left to me, and therefore avoided perhaps more than any other person in that station would have done, to make alterations in its officers, and those few that were made I gave account of to his Excellency on the 31st of October last, as by the enclosed extract of my letter to him may appear, to which I crave your Lordships' reference.[1]

"And to clear myself of any misrepresentations on this score, I take leave to remind your Lordships, that the mayors of New York and Albany are (as may appear by minutes of the Council) annually appointed on the 29th September by the Governor, or commander in chief, and tho' they happen to be continued they must be appointed *de novo*, and have a commission every year. Nor was it ever looked upon an alteration if it happened on the days prescribed by their charters. As to the mayor of this city, I had no other motive in it than those hinted at in said extract;[2] nor any views, but that the public should be properly attended. Of him of Albany it was upon his own importunity, nor can it be suspected that I had any other inducement, since he is my own son-in-law, and one for whom I have a great affection.

"As for my appointing Capt. Jarret Surveyor General of lands in room of Col. Graham, deceased, I conceive myself well warranted therein for the reasons I gave your

---

[1] Unfortunately the extract is not with the public documents. It might clear up some matters which are now subjects of surmise. I have no doubt that his explanations were satisfactory to Hunter, if not to Colden, one of the "others."

[2] Dr. Johnston was about to take up his residence in New Jersey. This may have been made known to the president himself, without wishing it to become public. If so, it was a sufficient reason to appoint another.

Lordships on the 31 October last, to which I crave your Lordships' reference.[1] . . .

"Your Lordships
"Most humble and obedient
"Servant to command,
"P. SCHUYLER."

In a letter to the Lords of Trade, November 21, 1719, he had informed them, that although he had ordered a commission for Jarret, he had postponed it, because there were several candidates, until he had the opinion of the Council, who by a majority concurred in his selection. It seems, however, that Colden was Hunter's candidate, and he secured the prize. It is fair to conclude that Colden's dislike to Schuyler grew out of the controversies relating to this appointment. Schuyler was too independent to conciliate him, and probably had reason to despise him.

It is quite evident that the president was justified in his appointments, and his explanations must have put a different face upon them than they were made to bear by the representations of "some members of the Council and others."

Schuyler's letters to the Lords of Trade were frequent, but have not all been preserved. He kept them acquainted with the affairs of the province, and all his more important transactions; he transmitted copies of the Council records, which contained the conferences of the Indian board with the sachems of the Five Nations, the journals of his agents among them, and his own convention with them; he was punctual in the fulfilment of

[1] The letter to which reference is made recites that he had appointed in place of Colonel Graham, surveyor of lands, lately deceased, Allan Jarret, a man agreed on all hands to be the most competent in the province for the position, and so recommended to Governor Hunter for ascertaining the bounds between New York and New Jersey, as honest and capable.

his instructions in all these particulars. The business of greatest importance transacted during his administration was that relating to the Indians. They had been restless during the last years of Hunter's stay in the province, and although he could say with truth that all was quiet when he left, their uneasiness was soon again apparent. They were not well affected toward the English, and especially toward those of the southern colonies. French interests were becoming stronger year by year; the peace afforded a fuller scope for the intrigues of that restless people, who, from Fort Frontenac, and now from Fort Niagara, had easy access to the four western cantons.

Several sachems held an interview with the commissioners of Indian affairs on September 25, 1719. They declared with emphasis that they were troubled about the alarming reports, which came to them from the south, that the English were coming with an army resolved to destroy them. These reports were confirmed by the French. Many of their people believed them, "because the governor (Hunter) has gone without letting us know, and Colonel Schuyler, who is in his place, has also gone without letting us know." They wished Colonel Schuyler to visit them later in the fall, that an inquiry might be made into the alarming reports, and to quiet, if possible, the minds of their people.

The commissioners soothed them with presents, assuring them that the reports were false, and promising to send a smith into their country to repair their guns and axes. They also told them that Governor Hunter had not left without "letting them know," for he had sent a message by some Cayuga sachems, with wampum, to inform them of his intentions. But they could not promise them a visit from Colonel Schuyler, whose duties required his presence in New York. The sachems came again in No-

vember, hoping, they said, to meet Colonel Schuyler, but learning that he was indisposed, they desired to see their friends, the commissioners. They again complained of the neglect of the southern governors. It was true that these gentlemen had neglected to send them presents, and hence the alarming reports from that quarter. In reference to their complaints, the president wrote to the Lords of Trade :

"They look upon themselves as slighted by his majesty's other governments to the southward, and though this government uses its utmost efforts to prevent them from going to war against Indians that live that way, it is possible that such neglect may at one time or another occasion consequences which are much easier prevented than redressed."

During the following winter the French kept several agents, besides the priests, among the Five Nations, who found means to have some individuals appointed sachems who favored the French interests, in place of those friendly to the English. To put a stop to these proceedings, Schuyler directed two of the commissioners to visit the Indian country, with proper presents, and rectify the abuses. The mayor of Albany, Myndert Schuyler, and the late mayor, Robert Livingston, Jr., were selected for this delicate mission. These gentlemen left Albany on April 27, 1720, and arrived in the Seneca country on May 12th. They were successful in persuading the Senecas not to send out war-parties against the southern Indians, and to keep the peace with the western tribes. Some days later representatives of all the nations were present, and it was agreed that the French ought not to be permitted to remain at Niagara, and some of their chiefs were sent for the purpose of having the fort demolished, but

were unsuccessful. The commissioners, however, induced the Senecas to restore Blawbeck, a man friendly to the English, to his sachemship. Otherwise little was accomplished. The Senecas, if not the Cayugas, were evidently drifting to the French. In consideration of the reports brought back by the commissioners, Schuyler wrote earnestly to the English Government, that they should demand the recall of the French agents, and the demolition of the fort at Niagara, as contrary to the treaty of Utrecht.

About a month after Livingston and Schuyler had presented the report of their visit to the Seneca nation, the commissioners of Indian affairs wrote to the president, that there was a pressing necessity of a conference with the Indians by the governor, if he should have arrived, or by himself. If the Five Nations were not to be wholly lost immediate measures should be taken to conciliate them, and disabuse their minds of the false impressions made by the priests and the Canadians. This letter was presented to the Council, who at once voted £400 for presents, and authorized a conference in September.

A few days before the sachems were expected in Albany, Robert Livingston addressed to Schuyler a memorial, which contains some thoughtful suggestions. He said that he had been in the country over forty-five years, but had never known the colony in a more melancholy and distracted condition. Affairs at Albany were so deplorable, that it was on the verge of ruin, and if not speedily remedied, it, as well as the whole country, would be involved in destruction. The reasons for this state of things he summed up under three heads:

1. The incursions of the Five Nations on the southern colonies, which had become unendurable.

2. The French fort and trading-house at Niagara.

3. The supplying the French and their Indians with

English goods, by which the Five Nations were furnished, and the trade of Albany ruined.

He proposed, that at the coming conference the Five Nations should be prevailed upon to desist from their southern expeditions, and be induced to go to Virginia and make a treaty with the governor. He believed that the great confidence they had in Quidor's affection, and the influence he had over them, would induce them to adopt his advice. On the second point, he suggested that a sachem of each nation should be persuaded to form a party for the destruction of the buildings at Niagara; and added, that as this fort had been built during his administration, it would place him in a secure position should he have it demolished, as he had always been considered a person having a most powerful influence over the Five Nations.

Thirdly, he proposed to stop all goods going to Canada for three months, and for this purpose to post a guard at the carrying-place.

He was convinced that the Council would freely assist him in these measures; for "the affairs are come to a crisis—we must do or die."

It seems that the boast of Governor Hunter, "all was well in the province when I left," was not well founded. Indeed it was not, for the French had begun their fort at Niagara before he left, and he had despatched agents to hinder them. It was the same old uneasiness that broke out afresh, and which was beyond the power of the colonial government to allay. Had the crown furnished its governors with money and priests, as did the French to the Canadian governors, they could have closed the Indian country against all intruders. It required thirty years more of time to awaken the British Government, and bring them to understand the true situation. It then cost much blood and treasure to remedy the evils, which

might have been prevented in time at small cost of life and money.

As the new governor had not arrived, the president held a conference with four of the Five Nations and with the River Indians in September, 1720. The Senecas were not represented, for the French had obtained such an influence over them that they did not accept the wampum inviting them. The proceedings of the conference were of the usual kind. The covenant-chain was renewed and brightened; the Indians were required not to molest the Indians at the south under English protection, and to confine their journeys southward to the country west of the mountains; they were advised to listen no longer to the French, "who had burned their castles and destroyed their corn," nor suffer them to build forts among them. To all this they readily assented. Presents were given to them, but they gave none in return, for they had none to give, and they were not the proud people of thirty years before; they were poor in furs, because the French had shut them out from their hunting-grounds, and now they depended on presents for their living.

During the conference, Hendrick was restored to his chieftainship. Four years before he had been degraded, and made the common Indian he was when Colden "saw him in the crowd." His forced retirement from office taught him some useful lessons, and later he became one of Sir William Johnson's heroes. Before the president left for New York, the authorities of Albany presented an address, in which they gave a true statement of the situation. Its main features were the same as contained in Livingston's memorial; it was probably drawn by the same hand. These documents prove conclusively that the relations with the Five Nations had become serious and alarming. The truth was that the French com-

manded respect by their activity in extending their settlements, and by the building of substantial forts for the protection of their citizens and their Indian friends, by their military display, and their fondness for glory. As a rule the king of France was liberal to the colonists of New France; he supplied them with soldiers from year to year, and with military stores; he sent over some of of his choicest troops, and the best officers of his army; he gave them money to build forts, and guns to equip them; he furnished presents for the Indians, and allowed them to be carried, at times, by skilful agents to the wigwams of the natives; he gave them missionaries in such numbers that every tribe and village had a priest. Frenchmen were encouraged to live among them, and become sachems by adoption. Favorites of any particular nation or tribe were allowed to remain, and were not withdrawn at the caprice of governors.

Meanwhile the English did little or nothing to conciliate and attach the Indians to their nation. A few presents were occasionally furnished by the king and distributed by his governors. The English built no forts, and suffered the old to go to decay; they sent over few recruits, and allowed the four companies of soldiers stationed in the province to be reduced to half their number by death and desertion, and even these were badly paid and poorly clothed; they sent no ministers to live among their heathen subjects, and instruct them in the Christian religion; they kept no agents in the Indian country to watch their interests and direct their councils. Their sole dependence for holding their fickle allies to their allegiance was the distribution of Indian goods mainly furnished by the province; their governors and other officials, both military and civil, were not appointed on account of their fitness, but rather as a means to give them bread.

The difference between the two nations, and their modes of dealing with the native population, was so great that it could not but be observed by the dullest savage. The Five Nations were too quick witted not to appreciate it, and gradually inclined to the most active and showy nation. Had it not been for the large gratuities occasionally furnished them, the fears of the Albanians would have been realized—the Indians would have been lost to the English. Had this "barrier" been removed, the dreams of Frontenac and others would have become facts—New York would have become a dependency of France.

The president returned to New York from his conference with the Indians, and communicated to the Council his proceedings on September 9th. Six days later he presided for the last time, when he further adjourned the Assembly to the second Tuesday of October. In his last letter to the Lords of Trade, he said that he was about to go to Albany to meet the sachems, and after the conference he would write to the governor of Canada in reference to his unwarrantable proceedings at Niagara. He concluded his letter by saying: "The affairs of the province being still in perfect tranquillity, I make no doubt of preserving them in the same good posture until the governor's arrival. I take leave to assure your lordships that this will be the highest satisfaction imaginable to me."

After William Burnet had taken the oaths of office, Schuyler handed him the seal of the province, the keys of the fort, and the papers pertaining to his office, of which there were two lists, one of those received from Brigadier Hunter, the other of those since received. Among the papers were three counterfeit notes of the province, two of four pounds each, and one of forty shillings. He remained in New York until October 6th, when he returned home, having attended the Council for the last time.

When Hunter left New York for England, he expected to return soon ; but he was tired of the position, and within a few months made an arrangement with Burnet, then a government official, to exchange places. His administration had been a successful one in many respects, and he retired with honor ; he retained to the end the confidence of his superiors, who continued to consult him about the affairs of the province, and placed much reliance on his judgment and recommendations.

William Burnet was appointed governor of New York on April 19, 1720, and arrived September 17th following, when he took the oaths of office, and entered upon duties new to him, but for which he had been prepared in a certain sense by his friend Hunter. New as they were, and strange as were the men and all things surrounding him, he did not doubt his own abilities to meet every emergency with credit to himself and friends. He was self-conscious, and never forgot "I am governor."

On the third day after his arrival, the great problem of his administration was forced upon his attention. Blawbeck and other Seneca sachems, who had not been present at the last conference, came to New York, and had an audience of the governor and Council. They had been detained by the French partisans of their nation, who seemed determined that none of their sachems should go to Albany. The difficulties interposed were finally overcome, and they began their journey, but arrived too late, for Quidor had gone to New York. Unwilling to go home without an interview, although their share of the presents was ready for them, they followed the president. On reaching New York, they found to their surprise that the expected governor had arrived, and were happy to be the first of the confederates to see him.

Blawbeck, in his speech, referred to the encroachments

of the French, and lamented that they had been allowed to build forts on territory belonging to his nation. He also condemned the trade conducted by the people of this province with their ancient enemies. Burnet, never before having seen these "English subjects and allies," and knowing little of Indian politics, was embarrassed and awkward. He answered briefly in a non-committal way, seeming cold and distant; but his first letter home urged that the Indian presents might not be delayed, although he did not mention his first audience to the forest kings.

After the Assembly adjourned, on November 19th, Burnet wrote a jubilant letter to the Lords of Trade. Hunter's legislature had given him a five years' support, and in other respects had followed his recommendations. In this letter, speaking of the Assembly, he said, "I found that the president and six others of the Council combined to have a new Assembly." In a private conversation, finding them unyielding, he threatened them with the exposure of certain "unwarrantable proceedings," upon which Schuyler and four others desired leave of absence. They did not yield their convictions, nor were they intimidated by the threats, but, being unwilling to legislate with an Assembly they believed to be illegal, they desired to relieve themselves from responsibility; they knew that the governor could suspend them, and they chose that alternative rather than act against their judgment. The president returned to his home in Albany. Burnet said that they asked for leave of absence, "that they might reserve themselves to oppose me on other occasions." How so? Could they not oppose him on other occasions without a leave? But for the discouragement of such attempts, he asked that two of these gentlemen be dismissed from the Council, to wit, Peter Schuyler and Adolph Philipse, for several reasons:

1. Because, after Brigadier Hunter's departure, the president made several alterations in the affairs of the government, and threatened a dissolution of the Assembly; and this he did by advice of Philipse.

2. Schuyler, by advice of Philipse, granted away several tracts of land, contrary to instructions.

3. Schuyler, by concurrence of Philipse, sought to alienate the minds of the people from Hunter's administration.

4. In case of his (Burnet's) death, the province would come under the same administration, and be in the utmost confusion; and the president, being a weak, ignorant man, is easily prompted to do wrong by Adolph Philipse, who has always been an enemy to Brigadier Hunter.

Burnet should certainly have added a fifth reason, the most potent of all, that two gentlemen, Scotchmen, the countrymen of Hunter and Burnet, were solicitous to fill the places of Schuyler and Philipse, who were Dutchmen—they were James Alexander and Cadwallader Colden.

These were not Burnet's real reasons; they were supplied by the hand of another, also a Scotchman. Had he carefully read the Council minutes and other public records for the thirty previous years, he must have come to other conclusions. The records of Schuyler's administration show that he was more painstaking and methodical than others, not excepting even Hunter and Burnet. His letters to the Lords of Trade show that his reasons for the appointment of a few persons to office in the place of others were eminently just and proper. The documents show that he was not the ignorant man alleged, and was not governed by Philipse; they show that on some questions of importance he and Philipse were widely apart; they show that he alienated no lands except by advice of the Council; that every application for land was referred to a com-

mittee, and passed all the legal preliminaries, before a patent was granted. It has been said by an English governor, that the king had no more loyal subjects than the Dutch residents of New York. This was pre-eminently true of Peter Schuyler and Adolph Philipse. It is not at all probable, judging from the records, that they sought to alienate the minds of the people from Hunter's policy or administration. The whole public life of Peter Schuyler shows that he was not a weak and ignorant man; he was brave to a fault, and wise in council. He had not the same advantages of education as Burnet, yet his letters to the Lords of Trade compare very favorably with Burnet's. His letter to the governor of Canada on the barbarities of Indian wars has become historical.

Burnet recommended Schuyler's removal from the Council for ignorance and incapacity. Why, then, did he leave him at the head of the Indian board? There is hardly a doubt that Burnet was unduly influenced in this recommendation by his Scotch countrymen, one of whom, in his histories and other writings, reveals his feelings toward Schuyler in insinuations and charges which we know to be ungenerous and untrue. The king's letter approving the removal of Schuyler and Philipse from the Council was not received until the following August. Before this time the other disaffected members made their peace, and held their places at the board. Schuyler did not consider the reasons for his removal of sufficient consequence to require an answer; he may not have been served with a copy, as custom and instructions required. It is possible he never knew the reasons, as there is no mention of it. Be that as it may, he showed that he was above resentment, leaving his vindication to the future; he met the governor at the Indian board as though nothing had occurred to mar their friendship.

Burnet was jubilant over his success with the Assembly, not only in procuring five years' salary ("the main act," as he puts it), but because an act had been passed, on his recommendation, prohibiting trade with Canada, which he believed would promote the Indian trade of the colony. French traders were unable to procure Indian goods so easily and cheaply as from New York and Albany merchants. Without this means of supply, the Indian trade must come directly to Albany, whose merchants would reap the profits, and not Canadians. The Assembly also made an appropriation for building and repairing fortifications.

Burnet proposed, when he received the king's presents for the Indians, "to go into the Indian country through the Five Nations, and give them the presents at their own homes," and when he got to the Senecas he would propose to build a fort at Niagara, "and leave a whole company of soldiers to guard it;" and then he would build a small fort at Onondaga. How sanguine, and yet how ignorant! In less than a year he was better informed, and saw the insuperable difficulties in the way of performance. He did not deliver the presents at the doors of the wigwams, nor build a fort at Niagara, nor even a small one at Onondaga. The king did not even approve the act which was designed to furnish the money for these splendid projects.

The governor did not find it convenient to meet the sachems of the Five Nations at Albany until he had been in the province quite a year; assisted by Colonel Schuyler and the Indian commissioners, he met them in convention on September 7, 1721. His speech was long, and, unlike some by former governors, full of metaphors and allusions to their ancestors; he spoke to them as children, and with an assumption of knowledge and authority; he insisted that they should not suffer the French agents and priests to live among them, nor keep up a correspondence

with them; he directed them not to go to war against the southern Indians, nor molest the southern colonies; in their journeys south they must not cross the river Potomac, or the mountains which bound Virginia on the west. To all his propositions they yielded a cheerful consent, even to the degradation of Dekanissora from his sachemship, as a French spy, for he had told them of the large quantity of presents he had in hand for them. They hailed with delight his proposal to make a settlement of ten persons at Irondequoit, on the south shore of Lake Ontario.

After the sachems had concluded their usual reply, they congratulated the governor on his recent marriage.[1] As a token of their joy on the occasion, "we present a few beavers to your lady for pin-money, and say withal, it is customary for a brother on his marriage to invite his brethren to be merry and dance." The governor thanked them, and ordered some barrels of beer.

He then distributed the presents, among which were one thousand pounds of powder, two hundred pounds of lead, ten cases of bullets, fifty guns, and various other articles, amounting in all to a generous gratuity. To the principal sachems he gave guns, powder, shirts, rum, laced hats, laced coats, etc. In his report to his government, he naturally said nothing of the merrymaking over his marriage.

Burnet's anticipations of a royal progress through the Indian country, bearing presents to the doors of the natives, resolved themselves into the old matter-of-fact custom of calling the sachems to Albany, and letting them carry their presents to their own cabins. His proposed fort at Niagara, to be occupied by a whole company of soldiers, dwindled down to a settlement of ten young men

[1] He married a daughter of Abraham Van Horne, a New York merchant, who was afterward raised to the Council on Burnet's recommendation.

sixty miles from the great falls for one year. The little fort at Onondaga was not built until some years later.

He did not prolong his stay at Albany. After the conference, lasting only three days, with his young wife and new councillors, he went down to Livingston's manor-house, where he finished the business which it would have been better to have transacted at Albany. At a meeting of the Council, on September 21st, held at Livingston's manor, his excellency gave it as his opinion, that a "man of distinction" should be placed in command of the company to be stationed at Irondequoit, with which the Council concurred. The question of salaries was discussed, and it was finally agreed to pay to the man of distinction, as commandant, £50, and each of the others £25. Besides this, they were to be allowed to trade in the Seneca country (not in the other four cantons) on joint stock account. With this little company they concluded to send a smith and helper, whose emoluments would be derived from the Indians. When all these preliminaries were settled, the Council presented the name of Peter Schuyler, Jr., second son of Colonel Schuyler, for the high position of commandant, with the rank of captain.[1] The governor graciously approved the nomination. Peter Schuyler, Jr., was then at the age of twenty-three, and had already become a man of "distinction" in the opinion of the governor and his councillors.

Burnet takes no little credit to himself for the appointment of young Schuyler. He wrote to the Lords of Trade:

"And because the late President of the Council Peter Schuyler's son first offered his services to go at the head

[1] The other members of the company were Jacob Verplanck, lieutenant; Gilleyn Verplanck, Johannes Virger, Jr., Harmanus Schuyler, Johannes Van den Bergh, Peter Groenendyck, and David Van der Heyden.

of the expedition I readily accepted him and have made him several presents to equip him and given him a handsome allowance for his own salary and a commission of Captain over the rest that are or may be there with him and Agent to treat with the Indians from me for purchasing Land and other things which I the rather did that I might show that I had no personal dislike to the family."

The reasons for the appointment, and manner of giving them, are rather amusing. Had the governor said that he was appointed because he was the son of Peter Schuyler, whose name had more influence with the Indians than other men of distinction, he would have been truthful and correct.

The Five Nations, ever since the peace they had concluded with the French, had been losing ground and becoming daily more dependent on the Europeans, by whom they were surrounded. Their friendship, however, was sought the same as before. They now, and for many years to come, were considered a protection to the English colonies from their ambitious neighbors, and their name alone filled their weaker countrymen with fear; they still roved through the countries they had conquered, gathering tribute and enforcing their supremacy; they had not laid aside the trade of war, but when thus engaged made long journeys to reach their enemies. The Flatheads living in Georgia were their hereditary foes, not because they came north to fight them, but rather because they had not yet been subdued. The Five Nations were always ready to strike their blows, but to do so they had to march many hundreds of miles to reach the enemy whom to strike. Their war-path led through Pennsylvania and Virginia, whose settlers and friendly Indians often suffered at their hands. The eastern Indians submitted to their dictation as a conquered people,

and were in much dread of them, although, more by instigation of the French than from their own choice, they continued their barbarous war on the New England settlements.

The governors of Pennsylvania and Virginia protested against the injuries inflicted on their people, and asked for redress. Massachusetts continued to seek the interposition of the Five Nations against their eastern enemies. Hence it was arranged to have a conference at Albany with the governor of New York, at which the governors of the other colonies should be present, and make their own propositions. The appointment was for August 27th, but there were few of the sachems in attendance. They were not prompt, as the year before, but kept the governors waiting more than a week. On September 10th, after Virginia and Pennsylvania had made their treaties, there was a session at which all the governors were present. Burnet congratulated the sachems on the progress which had been made in coming to a true understanding as to their mutual interests and responsibilities. He then appealed to them to stop the war which the eastern Indians were making on New England. He also asked their assistance in sustaining the law to prohibit the Canada trade in Indian goods, saying that there was a fine of £100, besides the goods, payable to the man who should detect any one engaged in the unlawful traffic; and for their encouragement to keep their engagements, and to promote the trade with the far Indians, he had despatched Major Abraham Schuyler,[1] their old friend, to reside in the Seneca country, adding. "I doubt not you will embrace him as a brother."

[1] He was appointed by the Council, August 28, 1722, to command a company of eight, besides a smith and helper. He and his company were commissioned on the same terms as Peter Schuyler, Jr's., the year before.

The sachems replied that they would by some means endeavor to put a stop to the barbarous war waged by the eastern Indians on New England. As to their intercourse with Canada, they could not see any evil consequences, now in time of peace, because of their visits on business or pleasure. And as to their assistance in enforcing the prohibitory law, they declined altogether; they desired "to be excused from intermeddling." Shrewd sachems! Although they had often asked that the trade might be stopped, now that they knew the law was not altogether popular, they considered it a matter to be left to the Christians.

The governors of Virginia and Pennsylvania laid at the feet of the warriors large presents, and the convention adjourned.

Colonel Schuyler rendered assistance throughout, apparently as cheerful and ready in the discharge of his duties as though he were not face to face with men who had disparaged his services and undermined his position. The next year, 1723, his youngest son, Jeremiah, was appointed captain of the company detailed for a year's residence in the Seneca country. Peter Schuyler's name was worth something to conjure with.

Burnet's Indian policy was of a mixed character. In some respects it was excellent; in others far from wise. The law shutting off the direct trade with Canada in Indian staple goods was a good one, and for the true interests of the province. It soon began to bear fruit. So long as Canadian traders could buy their goods for the Indian trade at Albany and New York, they could supply the distant tribes lying on the great lakes and rivers of the west "at their doors," and thus prevent them from coming east with their furs to exchange for clothing and other articles, which to them had become a necessity.

After the enactment of the law, enforced by severe penalties and a guard of soldiers at the great carrying-place, it was difficult, if not impossible for a time, for the Canadian merchants to procure the goods, even in small quantities, much less than was required to supply the demand. The more remote Indians were the first to feel the scarcity, and were forced to take a long journey to procure them.

In May, 1723, eighty men, besides women and children, of the far Indians appeared in Albany for purposes of trade, but first held a conference with the commissioners of Indian affairs. Colonel Schuyler, the chairman, asked them a few questions, to which they replied.

They said that they were of that nation living at Michillimakinac, where the French had a small fort and missionary station. Instead of belts of wampum they brought the calumet, the pipe of peace, which they always smoked before entering upon negotiations, and desired that, according to their custom, the members of the board would each take a whiff. They represented six villages, and brought a letter from Captain Abraham Schuyler, then stationed among the Senecas; they were desirous of forming an alliance with the Five Nations, and of entering into the covenant-chain with them and the English.

They had come to Albany because they were told in their own country, by those who knew, that they could get better prices for their furs and could buy goods at cheaper rates than were paid or furnished by the French. It was a long journey, but, as time was of little value to an Indian, their success in their trade was an abundant reward. The commissioners treated them with much kindness, and after their speech of welcome made them presents, providing food for them while in the city and on their journey home.

The visit of these savages from countries so remote,

with their strange apparel and pipe of peace, made a sensation in Albany. Governor Burnet improved the occasion to write to the Lords of Trade, claiming that it was only the beginning of the large trade to be drawn to Albany by his prohibitory law. He said that they were now incorporated with the Five Nations, as the seventh nation, the Tuscaroras having been admitted as the sixth. Thereafter the Iroquois were termed by the English the Six Nations, but not the Seven.

Peter Schuyler did not live to meet the Indians at another conference. He died in February, 1724, and was buried in a vault under the Dutch Church at Albany.

His chief service to his country was in his management of Indian affairs, which continued for nearly forty years. During this time his prudence in council and his acknowledged authority among the Five Nations saved the province from serious disasters. To him the people were indebted for peace and prosperity for the first eight years of the long war from 1702 to 1713; to his timely warnings several villages and settlements of Massachusetts attributed their safety from the tomahawk and scalping-knife. For a time Massachusetts forgot that he was a Dutchman.

As soon as he became of age to enter into public life, he seems to have been more useful as an agent to transact this peculiar business than any of his contemporaries, and from the time he was appointed mayor by Governor Dongan until his death, except for a brief interval, he was at the head of the Indian board. His maternal grandfather and his father laid the foundation for his success in this branch of the public service. It had been their policy to deal with the Indians as men, and not as brutes; in all their intercourse with them they were guided by the principles of kindness and justice, and never took advantage of their ignorance to wrong them. Peter Schuyler

pursued the same line of conduct, and thus in time acquired an influence over them inferior to none who succeeded him. He never conformed to their habits, or mode of life, or forgot that he was a Christian ; occasionally he admitted their sachems to his table, and treated them as men entitled to the courtesies of civilized life; he contracted no morganatic marriage with an Indian beauty, that through her family and friends he might strengthen and extend his influence ; he did not paint and dress himself as an Indian brave, and as such sink to their level. When he led eight hundred Indian warriors into Albany, and passed in review before Governor Hunter, he was dressed in the uniform of a militia colonel, and not in the war-paint and feathers of an Indian chief. He preserved his own self-respect and the affections of his family by appearing what he was, while he strove by example and instruction to temper the cruel dispositions of savages with mercy and to soften their character with Christian virtues. As in the time of his father, his large farm-buildings were always open for their accommodation, and his granaries and store-rooms were never locked against their hunger. He was not loved by the Mohawks alone, although his intercourse with them was more frequent because they were near, but the sachems and warriors of the more distant cantons sought his hospitality, and at times were welcome guests on his farm for weeks.

The Indian mode of fighting did not indicate courage, yet the confederates were among the bravest people of the world ; courage was with them a cardinal virtue, which they admired in others as in themselves. Perhaps the known bravery of Peter Schuyler gave him as much influence as his kindness and benevolence. They had known him lead his men to the attack when the odds were against him, and "push the enemy by mere strength

of arm" when to falter would have been disaster and death; by their side they had known him endure hunger and fatigue while pursuing their fleeing enemy. They had seen his courage in battle, and knew him to be brave; and for this they admired and loved him.

For more than twelve years, to the time of Bellomont, the expenses of Peter Schuyler's superintendency (if I may so term it) were economical and moderate. For the most part the province furnished the Indian presents and provided for contingencies, while the commissioners served without salary. The return presents by the Indians were the perquisites of the governor, sometimes amounting to a handsome sum, measured generally by those received. Bellomont presented a much larger gratuity than had been customary; his example was followed by succeed-ceeding governors, vying with each other, until the cost to the people became excessive and burdensome. After a time the superintendent was paid a salary, and the expenses of the Indian bureau formed a large item of the annual budget.

Peter Schuyler's fame was not confined to New York or the English colonies. He was well known in Canada for his upright and benevolent character, for his courage and his influence over the Iroquois. His correspondence with the French governors, and his efforts in the cause of humanity by the cessation of a barbarous war, were reported to their government. Although an uncomprising enemy, they esteemed him worthy the highest honor, and were surprised that his merits were not recognized by the British crown. Years after his death the Marquis de Beauharnois, governor of Canada, in one of his despatches, reported, "beyond a doubt the King of England has granted Lake Champlain to the children of Sieur Peter Schuyler." He knew that Peter Schuyler had earned a

recognition, and believed the idle story that his reward for faithful services had been bestowed upon his children.

Schuyler's memory was long held in grateful remembrance by the Five Nations. In 1754, a Mohawk chief, in a council with Lieutenant-Governor de Lancey, said that the reason why they were so divided, and the French had gained so much influence among them, was because they were neglected. "When you neglect business, the French, never quiet, take advantage of it. We remember how it was in former times, when we were strong and powerful. Colonel Schuyler came frequently among us, and by this means we were kept together." Fifty years after his death, when the commissioners appointed by Congress, at the beginning of the Revolution, proposed a conference with them, they insisted on the presence of his descendants, and one of the commissioners, addressing them, said: "We, the deputies of Congress and the descendants of Quidor, congratulate you on your arrival."

The only opinion adverse to the merits of Peter Schuyler came from his enemy, Cadwallader Colden, to which allusion has before been made. After William Smith had published the first volume of his "History of New York," Colden took exceptions to some of the statements, and asked to have them suppressed or modified. This Smith refused to do, as he maintained their accuracy. Colden thereupon, in order to clear himself at least to his own family, wrote several letters to his son containing severe criticisms on Smith's history. These were published, with other of Colden's papers, by the New York Historical Society, in 1868.

Under the date of September, 1759, Mr. Colden wrote:

"Mr. Smith makes much mention of Col. Peter Schuyler on several occasions that had you known him as I did

you would pay little regard to Mr. Smith's characters whether in panegyric or Satyre. Col. Schuyler was a plain country farmer who had on some occasions given proof of his courage. This with strong connections between that family and some of the Mohawk tribe gave him a considerable interest with the Mohawks but as to the other tribes it was in no respect such as Mr. Smith represents it. His whole exterior and deportment had much of the Indian mixed with the sullen Dutch manner. He was no way distinguished by abilities either natural or acquired and you may judge of his sense of honor by his being prevailed upon by Mr. Nicholson to join with him in the grossest imposition on the Queen and the British nation by carrying to England five or six common Indians and making them personate one the Emperor of the Five Nations, and the others the kings of each nation."

These statements need no further refutation. They are inserted by way of contrast.

Peter Schuyler left no will. He disposed of his large estate to his heirs a year or more before his death, apparently to avoid the risk of misunderstandings among them.

PETER SCHUYLER'S LANDS.

Among the large tracts of land granted by colonial governors to individuals or companies, there are some which have become historical, while the most are interesting only to the families and descendants of the first proprietors. Peter Schuyler, like many others, had large transactions in lands. Unlike his brothers-in-law, Van Cortlandt and Livingston, he had no ambition to be a landgrave or a manorial lord. He made few purchases on his own individual account, but in company with friends, or on their behalf, he was interested in several tracts, some of which were of more than usual proportions.

There is a kind of fascination in studying the history of a given property, whether lands or houses, and tracing it down from the first possessor, through its various changes of ownership and conditions, to the present time. It is all the more interesting in this country, because there are no laws of entail to preserve it in one line of succession. It is a marvel to find any real estate which has been in the same family two hundred years, and a greater wonder to find an individual owner who for two hundred years or more can trace his title to the Indian deed given to his ancestor. However pleasant the study to one fond of antiquarian research, the minute history would be tiresome to the general reader. This I shall not attempt, but will give only a few data of Peter Schuyler's lands, which may be of service to the antiquarian who may wish to prosecute the work. Some of the grants to him and his partners were classed by Lord Bellomont as extravagant; one of them was annulled.

The Saratoga Patent.

On July 26, 1683, four Mohawk sachems appeared before Captain Gervis Baxter, commander of the troops stationed at Albany, and certain magistrates of Albany, Schenectady, and Rensselaerwyck, and declared that they had sold to Cornelis Van Dyck, Jan Janse Bleecker, Peter Philipse Schuyler, and Johannes Wendell, a certain parcel of land called Ochserantogue, otherwise called Sarachtogie,

"beginning at the uppermost limits of the land bought from the Indians by Goose Gerritse and the late Philip Pieterse Schuyler, there being a kill called Tioncendehoueve, reaching northwards on both sides of the river to the end of the land of Sarachtoge aforesaid, bordering on the kill on the east side of the river, called Dionoendo-

geha, and keeping along the same the same length on the west side over against the kill, reaching westward through the wood as the Indian owners will designate, and the same eastward through the woods, with all the islands in the river by said lands. This the sellers do, being the lawful owners and proprietors of the aforesaid land, and they acknowledge to have received therefor full and satisfactory payment."

On November 4, 1684, Governor Dongan granted a patent for this tract, as above described, to Cornelis Van Dyck, John Johnson Bleecker, Peter Philipse Schuyler, Johannes Wendell, Dirck Wessels, David Schuyler, and Robert Livingston, for which they were to pay an annual rental to the crown of twenty bushels of wheat.

The deed and patent include the land on both sides the Hudson River from the southern starting-point, now known as Mechanicsville, to the northern limit, now known as Battenkill, estimated at the time to be a tract twenty-two miles north and south and twelve miles east and west. Eight years before some Indians from New England had been located on the east side of the river, whose territory was bounded north by the Hoosac River, a part of which was included in this patent. These Indians, afterward known as the Schaghticokes, claimed the ownership of the land they occupied, and subsequently sold portions to the city of Albany, Hendrick Van Rensselaer and Peter Schuyler. The proprietors of the Saratoga Patent, in their first division, evidently recognized for the time the claims of the Schaghticoke Indians, leaving the question for subsequent adjustment.

In the spring of 1685, the patentees made a division of the arable or low lands lying near the river, leaving the uplands to be surveyed and divided at some future time. For this purpose they selected five uninterested men to di-

vide the bottom-lands into seven equal parts, as to value and location, and not as to extent and size. Their report was incorporated in an indenture by the patentees, made and signed after they had drawn lots for their respective shares.

Lot 1 began "at the foremost land on the west side of the kill, where we slept during the winter's night, and ran northward along the river to a post on the bank marked No. 1, thence from the bank through the first flat to a marked oak tree, in the bosket marked No. 1." The owner of No. 1 is to have the privilege of locating two acres on No. 2, on which to erect his homestead, but not till after the owner of No. 2 has made his choice.

Lot 2 began at the north line of No. 1, and extended northward "to a tree on the bank of Doove Kill[1] marked No. 2, and thence into the woods.

Lot 3 began at Lot 2, and ran northward to a tree marked No. 3, the owner to have the privilege of erecting his homestead on No. 4, "it being understood he must remain one hundred rods south of the homestead of No. 4."

Lot 4 began at the limits of No. 3, and ran along the river to Fish Kill, or outlet of Saratoga Lake.

Lot 5 was "all the land lying north of the Fish Kill to the northern boundaries of the patent, including a meadow on the west side of the river above "The Stillwater."

---

[1] 1. In a petition of the owners of the patent, in 1743, Doove Kill is called *Doove Gat*. The Germans in Burgoyne's campaign crossed the river on September 15, 1777, and encamped at night at *Dovogat's house*, now Coveville, near the junction of Doove Kill with the Hudson River. There has been some speculation as to the origin of the name, one writer asserting that it was called Dovecot (dove place), because it was a resort for wild pigeons in ancient times. It is now what is known as a cove. Undoubtedly it was once a channel of the river divided from the main stream by an island, which in process of time was joined at its upper end to the mainland. The Dutch at first named it Doove Kill, but when they found it was not a *kill*, or creek, gave it the more appropriate name of *gat*, gut or cove.

Lot 6 began at Batten Kill, on the east side of the Hudson, and ran south on the river to Titmouse Kill, to which were added two flats below No. 7 and opposite Nos. 2 and 3.

Lot 7 began on the south side of Titmouse Kill, and ended at a small creek by a grove.

"All the lands in the patent not now allotted," the agreement recites, "shall remain common property, provided that everybody may run his line two hundred rods back into the woods for the entire breadth of his lot."

The indenture then gives the result of the allotment:

"The lots were chosen without evil design and cunning, the children of the seven partners drawing seven tickets out of a hat, and were distributed as follows:

"Lot 1 fell to the share of Peter Schuyler.

"Lot 2 fell to the share of Jan Jansen Bleecker.

"Lot 3 fell to the share of Dirck Wessels.

"Lot 4 fell to the share of Johannes Wendell.

"Lot 5 fell to the share of Robert Livingston.

"Lot 6 fell to the share of David Schuyler.

"Lot 7 fell to the share of Cornelis Van Dyck.

"Thus done and chosen without craft or cunning, with which we all declare ourselves to be satisfied."

The country on the east side of the river was mountainous, with much broken and untillable land, while on the west side there were large arable plains, from which the hills swept off in gentle slopes to the boundaries of the tract, covered with the best of pine and other timber. The land was valuable for agricultural purposes after the timber was removed, and was intersected by several large streams, affording unfailing power for mills of various descriptions. Lot 1 began on the south side of the creek which flows into the Hudson at Mechanicsville, and probably included the present site of Stillwater. Peter Schuy-

ler was fortunate when one of his children drew the "ticket from the hat."

The patentees took immediate steps to improve their property; but as it was situated far from Albany, and exposed to the incursions of the Canadian savages, their progress was slow. It was the policy of the French to permit none but Catholics to settle in Canada, and to banish any Protestants who might find their way to the country. The province of New York, being more accessible than other parts of the continent, was the asylum of the banished Huguenots, and several of them found a home at Albany or in its vicinity. A few families were induced to settle on the lands of the Saratoga Patent. After they were thus located, it was suspected, and with good reason, that the Canadian Government caused some of its friends to emigrate as refugees among them, and, acting the part of spies, to keep them acquainted with what was occurring in the neighboring colony.

In March, 1686, David Schuyler sold his seventh share to Peter Schuyler and Robert Livingston for £55 16 0; Livingston taking the part opposite to his own fifth share, and Schuyler the part lying opposite to Lots 2 and 3. On this latter a French family, known by the name of Dubison, was then living.

Cornelis Van Dyck died early in 1687, and by his will, dated November 5, 1686, gave his Lot 7 to his son Hendrick, who, on October 27, 1706, conveyed it by deed to his son Cornelis.

Johannes Wendell, owner of Lot 4, died in 1691. By his will he gave his share to his eldest son, Abraham, who, in 1702, conveyed it to Johannes Schuyler in consideration of £125.

In December, 1695, Peter Schuyler sold to his brother Johannes, for "a considerable sum of money," one of the

flats he had bought of David Schuyler, with two hundred rods of woodland in rear, on which had "formerly lived Symon Janse Post, and Fransorra," a Frenchman.

In February, 1698, Peter Schuyler bought of Taspelalet, a Schaghticoke Indian, all his land on the east side of the river, "known as Schaghticoke," for a "valuable consideration." This land was included in the Indian deed and Dongan's patent, but, as the Schaghticoke Indians claimed it by right of possession since 1675, it was thought advisable to extinguish their title by purchase in a quiet way.

About the same time Hendrick Van Rensselaer bought of the Schaghticokes a tract six miles square, for which he received a patent from Governor Fletcher, on March 29, 1698. It is possible that he made this purchase in the interests of the patentees. Be this so or not, it created a great commotion among the citizens of Albany. By its charter of 1686, the city was granted the privilege of buying five hundred acres of land at Schaghticoke, whenever it was convenient and wherever it might be located. When Van Rensselaer's purchase was known, the Common Council held a special session to discuss the situation. It was claimed that the patent interfered with the rights of the city, although no purchase or location had been made. The Common Council offered to compromise the affair in three different ways, none of which were acceptable, but finally Van Rensselaer offered to take £100 for his purchase. To this the city would not agree, and threatened to apply to Lord Bellomont, the new governor, to have the patent vacated. Bellomont was much perplexed, and proposed an amicable adjustment. His advice was adopted, and on August 8, 1699, Van Rensselaer passed his patent over to the city.

Four years afterward, 1703, Peter Schuyler presented

to the Common Council his deed of Schaghticoke received from the sachem Taspelalet, with an account of his payments. How this was settled is uncertain, as the record is not complete.

On February 28, 1707, the city made the purchase of all Schaghticoke from two Indians, who professed to act for seven others. The city fathers assigned as a reason why they had not transacted the business before, that the Indian owners had been long from home and had just returned. They now resolved to apply to Lord Cornbury for a patent, but objections were interposed by the patentees of Saratoga, which had to be quieted before a patent could be granted. A year later the controversy had not been settled, and Evert Bancker was appointed a committee to confer with the patentees, and offer, as a compromise of all questions in dispute, a division line commencing on the north side of the mouth of Schaghticoke Creek, and thence running due east.

Meantime, on November 20, 1707, the patentees applied to Lord Cornbury for a new patent, against which the mayor and Common Council remonstrated. The business was deferred from time to time, until in June, 1708, a new patent was ordered, on the basis of an agreement between the city of Albany and the patentees of the Dongan patent. In order to effect a full settlement of the controversy, the city was obliged to pay some difference, of which there was still due, July 11, 1710, more than £38, and as there was no money in the treasury, fifty acres of land were offered for sale to meet the liability. The debt was finally paid in the following December.

Johannes Schuyler sold the flats and woodland he had bought of his brother Peter, estimated to contain one hundred and eighty acres, on July 1, 1705, to Dirk Van der Hayden for £120. Van der Hayden five years afterward

bought ten acres of woodland adjoining, and stipulated to pay one bushel of wheat yearly as quit-rent for both parcels.

I have now traced the changes in the proprietorship of the Saratoga Patent from 1684 to 1708, when a new patent was issued by Lord Cornbury. David Schuyler's seventh share was now vested in Peter Schuyler and Robert Livingston, Cornelis Van Dyck's in his grandson of the same name, and Johannes Wendell's in Johannes Schuyler. The city of Albany, by shrewd and persistent management, had obtained possession of Schaghticoke, a strip of land extending from the northern line of the Half Moon patent to the Schaghticoke Creek, now Hoosac River, on the north. A farm of about two hundred acres had been sold to Van der Hayden, which, however, was included in the limits of the new patent.

On October 29, 1708, a patent passed the seals, in which the boundaries of the land are more definitely given ; and its legality was never afterward questioned. It recites the grant of 1684, the division of the lowlands along the river of 1685, the changes in the ownership, and bounds the tract as follows :

" Beginning at the south side of the confluence of the creek, called Tionoondehowe on the west side of the Hudson river, thence west along the south side of said creek six miles, thence northerly by a line parallel to the course of the river to a point opposite the mouth of the creek on the east side of the river, called Dionoondehowe, thence east to the river six miles, thence on the east side of the river six miles, which is computed to be twenty-two English miles more or less from the place of beginning, thence southerly parallel to the course of the river six miles distant, until the line comes opposite the mouth of Schaghticoke Kill which bounds the patent of Henry Van Rensselaer, now belonging to the city of Albany."

Of the tract of land within these limits three-fourteenths are assigned to Peter Schuyler, the same to Robert Livingston; and to Jan Jansen Bleecker, Johannes Schuyler, Cornelis Van Dyck, and Dirck Wessels two-fourteenths each.

Dirck Wessels, owner of Lot 3, in his will, dated February 4, 1715, gave two-thirds of his share, valued at £125, to his son Wessel; and one-third, valued at £75, to his daughter Gertrude, wife of Abraham Schuyler. He directed that "none of my lands shall be sold to strangers, but shall remain in my family for all time." Wessel, in March, 1719, conveyed his two-thirds to his son, Dirck Ten Broeck. In April, 1736, the widow of Abraham Schuyler conveyed her third to her son, Dirck Schuyler, who sold it, in June, 1738, to his cousin, Dirck Ten Broeck, for £250. Dirck Wessel's share in the original patent was now in the hands of his grandson of the same name.

Robert Livingston's son, Gilbert, became embarrassed in business, and for the purpose of enabling him to pay his debts, his father gave a deed of trust to Philip Livingston of his three-fourteenths, with authority to sell and apply the proceeds to the liquidation of Gilbert's debts, after which the residue of the land, if any, should be made over to the beneficiary, Gilbert. Philip, as trustee, sold the part his father had bought of David Schuyler, on the east side of the river next to Batten Kill, to John Schuyler, Jr., for £200. This, with money realized from the sale of some lots in New York, enabled Gilbert to settle with his creditors, and become the owner of his father's original share on the west side the river. Subsequently Robert Livingston redeemed the one-fourteenth from John Schuyler, Jr., and divided it between his daughters, Mrs. Vetch and Mrs. Van Horne.

Peter Schuyler, before his death, gave his three-four-

teenths to his daughter Margaret, wife of Robert Livingston, Jr. His brother Johannes, while living, divided the lowlands of his two-fourteenths between his two sons, Philip and John, Jr. Jan Jansen Bleecker left his share in the patent to one or more, but to whom I have not learned. As to the Van Dyck share, I have seen no trace after the second patent.

The long peace after 1713 enabled the proprietors to improve their property. Settlements were made along the river, and little villages sprang up at "The Stillwater" and Fish Creek, where at an early day flour and saw mills were erected. The land was not sold, but let on long leases; on account of the abundance of timber, the lumber trade, next to that of agriculture, was the most prosperous business. The products of the field and forest were floated down the river in rafts or batteaux, and found a ready market at Albany or New York, whence the surplus was sent to the West India Islands.

After the original patentees were all deceased,[1] in June, 1743, the then proprietors of the Saratoga Patent, or a majority of them, initiated proceedings for a division of the lands. It was fifty-eight years since the allotment of the arable lands had been made, and there had been no other division. The Assembly had made several efforts to enact a law for the partition of estates held in common, but had not succeeded in passing an act acceptable to the governor.

On June 6, 1743, the proprietors of five-sevenths of the Saratoga Patent sent a petition to the sheriff of Albany, asking for a partition, as provided by law, by a jury of nine disinterested and substantial freeholders. The petition contained a brief history of the patent, the boundaries,

[1] Johannes Schuyler and Cornelis Van Dyck, named in the second patent, were still living.

the first patentees, the first division, the second patent, and the then proprietors. It was signed by Dirck Ten Broeck [1] and Gilbert Livingston,[2] each holding two-fourteenths; Gerrit Van Horne[3] and Margaret Vetch,[4] each one-twenty-eighth; Philip J. Schuyler and the executors of John Schuyler, Jr.,[5] each one-fourteenth; and by Margaret Livingston,[6] three-fourteenths. Cornelis Van Dyck and the heirs of Jan Jansen Bleecker did not sign the paper.

No action seems to have been taken on this petition, and in 1750 John R. Bleecker made a survey for the owners, and divided the tract into twenty-eight lots, extending from the river to the outer bounds. To a map of this survey was attached a contract for a division of the property, executed June 1, 1752, and recorded in July, 1763.[7] It was signed by John Glen for the heirs of Jan Jansen Bleecker, deceased; Killian de Rider for the heirs of Cornelis Van Dyck, deceased; Gerardus Groesbeck for the heirs of Dirck Wessels Ten Broeck, deceased; and John Van Rensselaer for the heirs of Peter Schuyler, deceased. The shares owned by the heirs of Robert Livingston and Johannes Schuyler were not represented.

The greater portion of the lands in the province not occupied by the Indians was held by large proprietors, either as individuals or in companies, to whom they had been granted chiefly by the early English governors before 1708. It was hardly possible for the children and grandchil-

[1] Grandson of Dirck Wessels Ten Broeck, original patentee.

[2] Son of Robert Livingston.

[3] Grandson of Robert Livingston.

[4] Daughter of Robert Livingston.

[5] Sons of Johannes Schuyler.

[6] Eldest daughter of Peter Schuyler.

[7] This map, by some unknown means, was conveyed to Europe. Only a few years since it was found at a paper-mill at Fort Miller, four miles from the land covered by the survey, in a bale of foreign rags. It was in a good state of preservation.

dren of the first proprietors, under the existing laws, to agree upon divisions, and the Legistature had passed enabling acts to make such partitions more easy and effectual. This had been done repeatedly by the Assembly, whose bills were sometimes passed by the Council, but they were vetoed by the governor or crown. A law for the "easier partition of lands" was enacted in 1726, to which Mr. Colden, the surveyor-general, was opposed. Although Governor Burnet approved the law, and solicited its approval by the crown; and although his successor, Montgomerie, before he left England, memorialized the Lords of Trade in its favor, Mr. Colden's reasons against it prevailed, and it was vetoed.

In 1762, a bill for the same purpose, and containing similar provisions, passed both houses of the Legislature, and was approved by Mr. Colden, then lieutenant-governor. He did it with a sort of mental reservation, and wrote to the Lords of Trade that he stood alone and could not resist the pressure. The law-officers of the crown did not approve the law, but do not appear to have reported against it. It was probably under this law that the final proceedings were taken for a division of the Saratoga Patent.

In 1768, the heirs of Margaret Livingston made a division of her portion of the patent, which remained the same as in 1743, three-fourteenths. Philip Schuyler, afterward the general, now came in for an additional slice of the tract; through his father and uncle he had acquired a seventh part, now through his wife he gained possession of a fifth of Peter Schuyler's original seventh.

General Philip Schuyler, by his will, dated June 20, 1803, gave to his grandson, Philip, son of John Bradstreet Schuyler, deceased, that portion of the Saratoga Patent situate at Schuylerville, on which were mills and factories; to his

son, Philip Jeremiah, Lots 22, 23, and 44, with two mill-seats on Batten Kill; to his son, Rensselaer, Lot 41 and four other farms; and the residue of the Saratoga tract to his five daughters, or their heirs.

Philip Schuyler, grandson of the general, improved his princely estate by the erection of other mills and factories. But his affairs became embarrassed, and in a monetary crisis he lost the whole.

While there are isolated farms in possession of descendants of the first patentees, not a foot of the soil is now owned by a Schuyler, although some of Peter Schuyler's descendants through the female line, under other names, may reside on homesteads within the bounds of the patent.

Having completed the narrative of the Saratoga Patent, as it relates to the first proprietors and their descendants —imperfectly, it is true—I now turn to its general history, which may contain some items worthy of attention.

About two years after the date of the first patent, and after settlements had been begun, Governor Dongan made an arrangement with the patentees to occupy it, temporarily at least, for an Indian settlement. It was estimated that there were about seven hundred of the Five Nations, of whom the majority were Mohawks, settled in Canada. They were the proselytes of Jesuit missionaries, and were termed by the English and Dutch the "Praying Indians." Their withdrawal from the province had weakened the Five Nations as a barrier, and had added strength to the Canadians; besides this, the emigration, which still continued, diminished the trade of Albany and lessened the profits of its merchants. It was desirable, for these and other reasons, to induce those self-expatriated natives to return, and to put a stop to the desertion of others; they seemed inclined to return to the province, provided a place could be assigned them where they would not be in direct

contact with their heathen countrymen, who were now much addicted to the use of rum, and when drunk offered them many insults; they also made it a condition, that in case of their return they should have the means of religious instruction, by priests residing among them. Dongan, himself a Catholic, readily consented to these conditions; and so great was the anxiety of the people, that the citizens of Albany petitioned the governor to make an arrangement to settle them at Saratoga, where they would be at a distance from their unbaptized brethren, and serve to block the war-path of the French.

The project was not successful. Instead of the proselytes, some French refugees settled along the river within the limits of the patent. More than sixty years afterward, Lieutenant-Governor De Lancey revived the project, and wrote to the Indian commissioners on the subject. They replied that "there was no convenient place at Saratoga for a castle, although the widows Schuyler and Ten Broeck were willing to dispose of their lands."

In 1689 there had been several families living on the tract. Jacob Leisler termed them papists, who had settled there for some bad design, still preserving their relations with Canada. The same suspicion had found lodgment in the minds of Albanians, and in view of the unsettled times (August 1, 1689), war having been declared between England and France, they concluded that it would be wise to arrest "those Frenchmen living toward Stillwater and Saratoga." La Fleur, Villeroy, and De la Fortune were brought to Albany, and examined by the magistrates on the charge of holding correspondence with Canada. La Fleur was confined in the "chamber of Arnout Cornelise, until witnesses come from Sarachtoge," and the others "to stay in town until further orders." Anthony Lespinard, a resident of Albany, was also arrested. After a

detention of four days they gave bonds for good behavior.

Lespinard had resided in Albany since 1674, and was engaged in the bakery business "for both Christians and Indians." In 1687, he and Jean Rosie, another Frenchman, were sent by Governor Dongan as bearers of despatches to the governor of Canada. While at Montreal, Rosie reported that Lespinard was quite intimate with the governor and other officials, being an old acquaintance, for he had visited Canada before. He had been in Montreal in the previous year looking after a son, who was at a Jesuit school. He was deceased before 1697, when his widow, then a resident of New York, made deeds of his property at Niskayuna, which he had contracted to sell to Rosie in 1688. His family became highly respectable, and his memory is perpetuated by a street which bears his name.

La Fleur was a soldier at Fort Frontenac in 1684. Two years afterward he was in charge of the block-house which La Salle had built at Niagara, whence he came, without leave, to Albany, and took up his residence at the "Stillwater, near Saratoga." Soon afterward he was arrested for having contraband goods in his possession, and for trafficking in them with the Indians; he was tried before a jury, of which Lespinard was one, and convicted. His goods, consisting of two hundred and thirty-four guilders in wampum, nine pairs of stockings, and eight deer-skins, were confiscated. He obtained a mitigation of his sentence by pleading ignorance of the laws.

Villeroy, alias Pierre de Garmo, escaped from Canada, leaving some debts behind him. A Montreal merchant, writing to Major Baxter, commandant of Albany, in August, 1683, said: "I learn you are going to do justice to some French vagabonds, among them one Villeroy, who

left these parts considerably in debt." Baxter obliged him to make a deposit of money sufficient to liquidate his indebtedness before he would allow him to become a resident.

These persons, arrested on suspicion of correspondence with the enemy, it is only fair to say, were Protestants, and earned the reputation of good citizens. They signed the famous address to the king, in 1701, for the promotion of which Nicholas Bayard was tried and convicted of treason.

In September, 1689, a message was brought to the Albany convention, that three persons at Bartol Vrooman's house at Saratoga had been killed by French Indians. Lieutenant Jochem Staats and ten soldiers were immediately despatched to the place, with orders to build a fort around Vrooman's house, and occupy it until relieved. Staats was directed to employ some Schaghticoke Indians as scouts, and thus protect the infant settlement from further harm. The fort, as it was called, was erected, but Leisler thought it was a trap, in which his friend Staats and his men would be caught and sacrificed. When General Winthrop was on his march, in August, 1690, for the invasion of Canada, he spent a night at Saratoga, where was a "block-house occupied by some Dutch soldiers." There Dirck Wessels, recorder, and a "volunteer company of the principal gentlemen of Albany" joined him.

In 1691, Major Peter Schuyler, on his way "to strike a blow" in Canada, encamped his little army around the block-house of Saratoga, and was detained some time by "foul weather." The fort and farms were subsequently deserted, on account of their distance from Albany and the great expense in keeping up the communications.

In 1698, after the close of the war, Colonel Romer, the engineer, reported to Lord Bellomont that Saratoga was

an important frontier post, which he was unable to reach on account of high water, but that he had learned that the farms, seven in number, and the fort, built in Leisler's times, were entirely ruined in the late war. On this account, and because the French claimed the country west of the Hudson, the settlers had not returned. He recommended the building of a small fort of palisades, with a stone tower in the centre, "to maintain possession, and to encourage the farmers to rebuild their houses."

Nothing was done by Bellomont, and after his death Lord Cornbury, who visited the locality, proposed to build a "stockaded fort, and occupy it with an officer and thirty men." He thought that such a fort, in connection with those at Albany, Schenectady, Canastagione (Niskayuna), and Half Moon would effectually secure the frontiers. In the next year, 1703, he reported to the Lords of Trade, that the old frontier forts were repaired, a new one built, and another soon to be erected at Saratoga. "There are but a few families there," he added, "but they will desert unless protected; besides, a fort will give great satisfaction to the Indians."

In 1704, Mr. Congreve, an English agent, reported that the frontier forts, including that at Saratoga, were not in order, but it was proposed to repair them, adding, "It is to be feared, however, no men will be raised to man them as usual." Through the valley of the Hudson to the great carrying-place (Fort Edward), Nicholson and Schuyler led their army for the invasion of Canada, in 1709; by the same route the army marched in 1711. Saratoga was then a depot for supplies. We learn little of Saratoga for the next eleven years, until Philip Livingston, in 1722, presented a bill for materials used in rebuilding the fort. Meantime some Schaghticoke Indians had made a small settlement near the old fort, but on hearing that the French

were about to attack them, they anticipated the blow, abandoned their village, fled to Canada, and made their submission to the enemy.

The Marquis de Beauharnois, governor of Canada, commenced the erection of Fort St. Frederick on Crown Point, Lake Champlain, in 1731, by advice of the French Government, which had not renounced its claims to the country first discovered by Champlain. The possession of this place gave the French much advantage in time of war. Had the authorities of New York been alive to its importance, they would have made some efforts to prevent the old enemy locating so near their borders, and on ground belonging to their allies, the Five Nations; but New York was without a governor, and Rip Van Dam, the president, could do no more than make a feeble protest. Colonel Cosby, the succeeding governor, was too much occupied in acquiring a fortune, by means lawful and unlawful, to give serious attention to public affairs, and the French were allowed to remain unmolested to complete their fortifications. Fort St. Frederick gave them a new base of operations, whence their scalping parties, with comparative ease, could annoy the frontiers of New York, Massachusetts, and New Hampshire.

It was not probable that the peace made at Utrecht would continue forever, and at last it began to penetrate the minds of the English authorities that something should be done for the protection of the border settlers. The fort at Saratoga, rebuilt in 1722, had been allowed to decay and go to ruin; it became apparent that a new one of larger proportions should be erected, substantial enough to resist any ordinary attack, and large enough to accommodate the people as a place of refuge. It was the only place of any importance between Crown Point and Albany; the population had largely increased during

the years of peace, and the business interests were important. The Legislature of 1739 was induced to make a liberal appropriation; the fort was rebuilt, and occupied by a garrison. It was none too soon. The war of the Austrian succession began in Europe in 1740, involving the English and the French, whose colonies could not escape its consequences.

In March, 1744, a project was set on foot by New England and New York for the capture of Fort St. Frederick. Troops were raised for this purpose, and began their march, but, as in 1690, 1709, and 1711, the expedition was abandoned before reaching the enemy. The fort at Saratoga was now an object of solicitude, and the Assembly asked Governor Clinton to strengthen its garrison by a detachment of troops. Clinton promised, but did not fulfill; he excused his neglect by alleging that it was difficult to procure the consent of the militia to occupy that position. Before November, 1745, the fort was vacated by the few men who had garrisoned it, because, as Clinton said, it was untenable, for there was no oven or well within the walls, the block-houses were without floors, the roofs were decayed, and there was no place to keep the powder dry. It seems incredible that no efforts were made to repair the fort and make it defensible; the people must have been infatuated to remain on their farms, in isolated dwellings, with an enemy ever on the alert for mischief only two days' march from their doors. When it was seen that the government had failed in its duty, ordinary precaution should have prompted them to have repaired the fort and block-houses as a refuge for themselves and families. They trusted to Providence, and slept as securely as though the enemy were beyond the sea; they had a rude awakening.

Before daybreak on the morning of November 28, 1745,

the settlers were aroused from sleep by the war-whoop of five hundred French and Indians. I will let the adjutant of the army tell the story of the expedition. His report, in the form of a journal, is among the papers of the late General Schuyler, and has never been published. It is an official document, and was doubtless preserved among the archives until the conquest of Canada, when it fell into the possession of General Schuyler, as one interested in the property destroyed, and as the nephew and heir of a brave man among the killed on that occasion. The author's name is not known:

M. de Beauharnois, governor of Canada, organized an expedition against the settlements on the Connecticut River, consisting of about 300 miltia and 200 Indian proselytes of different nations, of whom the Iroquois were the more numerous. M. Marin was put in command. He left Montreal on November 4, 1745, to join his troops in camp near Fort Chambly. At Ash Island, the general rendezvous, he informed his Indians of their destination—through Otter River to the Connecticut. To this they subsequently objected, on account of the difficult navigation of the river and the lateness of the season, but suggested Saratoga as more accessible, and less likely to be prepared for an attack, than the villages on the Connecticut. After consulting with his officers, Marin gracefully consented to the change.

The army arrived at Fort St. Frederick on the 13th, where the final preparations were made for the march on Saratoga. They started on the 20th, and landed in the evening at a point about four miles below Ticonderoga, where they spent the night. The next day they left the canoes in charge of a detachment from the fort, and plunged into the woods. Owing to the fault of the guides, they crossed and recrossed the outlet of Lake St. Sacrament (Lake

George) seven times before discovering the trail they were to follow. Their route was east of the lake. On account of the hills, ravines, and mountain streams their march was toilsome and dangerous. They approached the Hudson on the 27th near the great carrying-place (Fort Edward), where John Henry Lydius, a son of Dominic Lydius, of Albany, had a farm, and a house of larger proportions than usual for the time.[1] It was important for the success of the raid that the Saratogans should have no intimation of their presence in the neighborhood, and unless the inmates of Lydius' house could be secured they would give the alarm. An offer was made by an Indian, to approach the house without arms as a friend, and thus capture the inmates before the army left the woods, where they were as yet concealed. The stratagem was successfully and easily accomplished, for there were only a hired man and a boy at home, Lydius and his family having retired to Albany for the winter. The Indians captured three men in a house near by, who, with two Schaghticoke Indians taken the day before, and Lydius' hired man and boy, were bound and confined in a room of the house, a guard of twenty men being placed over them. After these arrangements, the army took up its line of march down the east side of the river, having first received general absolution from the priest, who remained with the guard and the prisoners. The journalist will tell the remainder of the story:

"M. Marin embarked in a canoe with several officers and Indians (at Lydius' house). M. de St. Pierre was in

[1] Lydius abjured Protestantism for the sake of a Catholic wife, a resident of Canada; but he refused to conform to the Roman Catholic religion. He had a considerable influence with the Indians, and for a while was the agent of Massachusetts among them. He was not fully trusted either by the English or the French.

command of those marching by land. On the way the Indians captured six or seven men in a house on our (the west) side of the river. They were sent to keep company with the other captives at Lydius'. Two leagues from Saratoga we met a man and his wife, who with a team were carrying some sacks of flour. M. de la Colombière, with the Indians, stepped forward to stop them, and took hold of the woman, who made some resistance. The Indians thought that they had a right to dispute the possession of her, and finally she and her husband were given to Atagaronche, who undertook to take them both back to join the other captives. M. de la Colombière for the time contented himself with one of the horses, which he mounted, and travelled with more ease. Thus far not a single person had escaped us. As the woman left us, she said: 'You are going to Saratoga, but you will find in the fort two hundred men, who are awaiting you with resolution.' This induced M. Marin to wish all the French to keep near him, in order to be prepared to get possession of the fort, if what this woman said should prove true. The two Schaghticokes whom we had captured told us that there was no one in the fort.

"M. Marin, who had descended the river in a canoe, in order to become acquainted with it, so that he might find a place for his whole command to cross, gave us a rendezvous at a certain point, but, as we did not know the place, we wandered so far that we had great trouble in finding one another again, and should not have succeeded had it not been for Beauvais, who made great exertions to bring us together. Night had overtaken us. However, we reached the place where M. Marin had arranged to be with M. de St. Pierre at the appointed hour. He had with him the Hurons and the Iroquois, but only a small number of officers and French. M. St. Luc de la Corne, who was there, took several persons over, and as soon as I had crossed with him, I gave all my attention to the work of assisting every one to cross. It was done very quietly. Happily we found ourselves near an island and a water-

fall, whose sound mingled with the noise we made in crossing the river. The Nipissings and Abenakis followed the eastern shore of the river, under the lead of Messrs. de Comtemanche and Niverville, with a few French volunteers.

"*November* 28th. It was about midnight when we all rejoined the commandant, and we awaited the order for departure, which was to be given between two and three o'clock. The night was extraordinarily cold, and had it not been for a little fire, which the bed of a creek sheltered by two hillocks enabled us to make, some would have run the risk of freezing their feet, as we all had wet feet. We dried ourselves, however, and awaited comfortably enough the order to march. At two o'clock, Beauvais, who for his conduct and capacity merited the esteem of good people, made a reconnoissance. On his return we began to move quietly, and in good order, with all the officers at their posts. We marched through the woods about a league, along a very good road, and then came to the houses. When we reached the first one, M. Marin ordered me to detail four Frenchmen and ten Indians to go and invest it, but did not permit them to attack it until daybreak, which was the time when we were all to make the attack together. We had not gone more than an eighth of a league, when they fired a gun and uttered their death-yells, rushing to the assault. The Abenakis, who until then had awaited the signal, took upon themselves to make the attack, and from that time it was not possible to exercise any control. However, we went on to the edge of the wood in good order.

"M. de Beauvais having told M. Marin that we were discovered, he directed us to follow him. We passed a very rapid river,[1] for which we were not prepared, and came to a saw-mill, which two men (a negro and a Dutchman) were running, and in which there was a large fire. M. de St. Ours and M. Marin's son were disputing the possession of the negro with an Indian, although another

[1] Fish Creek.

Indian said that it was Marin who had captured him. His father, with whom I was, told him this was not the time to dispute about prisoners, and that it was necessary to go on and take others. A large party attacked a blacksmith's house on this side of the river, when a native unfortunately killed a child twelve or fourteen years old. It was doubtless the darkness of the night and the fear of the river that separated us.

"Coming out of the mill, we went to the house of a man named Philip Schuyler, a brave man, who would not have been seriously incommoded, if he had only had a dozen men as valiant as himself. M. Beauvais, who knew and liked him, entered the house first, and, giving his name, asked him to give himself up, saying that no harm would would be done him. The other replied that he was a dog, and he would kill him. In fact, he fired his gun. Beauvais repeated the request to surrender, to which Philip replied by several shots. Finally Beauvais, being exposed to his fire, shot and killed him. We immediately entered, and all was quickly pillaged. This house was of brick, pierced with loop-holes to the ground floor. The Indians had told us that it was a sort of guard-house where there were soldiers. In fact, I found there twenty-five pounds or more of powder, but no soldiers. We made some servants prisoners, and it was said that some people were burned who had taken refuge in the cellar.

"We burned no more houses before reaching the fort, as this was the last. We had captured everybody, and had no longer any cause to fear lest any one should go and warn the fort of our approach. It was at quite a considerable distance from the houses where we had been. We found no one in it. We admired its construction. It was regularly built, and some thought one hundred men would have been able to defend it against five hundred. I asked M. Marin if he wished to place a detachment there? He replied that he was going to set fire to it, and then told me I might go and do my best. This permission gave several of us the pleasure of taking some pris-

oners, and it did not take us long to get possession of all the houses below the fort, breaking in the doors and windows in order to get at the people inside. However, every one surrendered very peaceably. We had never counted on the facility with which all the houses were taken and the pillage accomplished. We set fire to everything good and useful; for instance, more than ten thousand planks and joists, four fine mills, and all the barns and stables, some of which were filled with animals. The people who were in the fields were in great part killed by French and Indians. In short, according to our estimation, the Dutch will not repair the damage we caused short of two hundred marks. The barns were full of wheat, Indian corn, and other grain. The number of prisoners amounted to one hundred and nine, and about a dozen were killed and burned in the houses. Our achievement would have been much more widely known and glorious, if all the merchants of Saratoga had not left their country-houses, and gone to spend the winter at Albany; and, I may add, had we met with more resistance.

"Our expedition ended at eight o'clock, when M. Marin issued orders for all to commence the retreat. That night we made our camp at Ten Acres in the Woods. The Indians, by consent of M. Marin, slept at the house of Lydius, and joined us early in the morning of November 29th. We reached Fort St. Frederick December 3d, and Montreal December 7th."

Governor Clinton, of New York, in a letter to the Lords of Trade, November 30, 1745, O. S., said: "I received an account on the 19th inst., by express from Albany, that a party of French and their Indians had cut off a settlement in this province called Saratogue, about fifty miles from Albany, and that about twenty houses, with a fort (which the public would not repair), were burned to ashes, thirty persons killed and scalped, and about sixty taken prisoners."

The controversy relating to this disaster between Governor Clinton and his Assembly was long and bitter. The governor threw the responsibility upon the Assembly, because they had made no appropriations for the repair of the fort. The Assembly accused the governor of incompetence and dereliction of duty, for withdrawing the garrison instead of re-enforcing it. As described in his report by the French officer, the fort was not untenable. In October of the previous year, the chief of the Canadian proselytes made a careful examination of it, and reported that it was about the same size as the fort at La Prairie, with a building in each bastion to accommodate the inhabitants in times of danger. A large garrison could have been furnished from the forces then in and around Albany, who themselves could have made all needed repairs from the abundance of materials near at hand. Governor Clinton was without excuse for his neglect of this important post. He was at variance with the Assembly, and was controlled by a man as opinionated and headstrong as himself; if they could not have their own way, they leaned back in the harness, and would do nothing. However, Clinton was not alone to blame. The Assembly was under the leadership of a man of a strong will and a bitter enemy of the governor. Under his manipulation the House was factious and unreasonable.

Governor Clinton was not slow to see his error, and, calling his Council together for advice, ordered the fort to be rebuilt without delay. At a session of the Assembly in the following December, he asked for an appropriation to cover the expenses. The Assembly responded by a grant of £150. Before June, 1746, the new fort was built, and occupied by a garrison. It was located on the east side of the Hudson, just south of Batten Kill, and named Fort Clinton. It had an unfortunate history. Situated as it

was on the extreme frontier, with the well-appointed Fort St. Frederick in such close proximity, it should have been strongly built, and of sufficient dimensions to accommodate a large number of men. On the other hand, it was a small structure of wood, and not well built at that. Lying near the enemy, it was subject to the frequent visits of scalping parties, who so harassed the soldiers in garrison that they feared to appear outside the walls. Add to this, that the stores were insufficient, and that the men suffered from want of provisions and medicines.

M. St. Luc de la Corne, one of M. Marin's officers, and a fearless partisan, led a party of over two hundred French and Indians to the vicinity of the fort, and, watching his opportunity, killed over thirty of the garrison and took forty prisoners. Only a short time before, a small scalping party killed four and took four prisoners at the very gates. Captain Livingston, who was commandant from November, 1746, to March, 1747, said in one of his intercepted letters, that the fort was in a most miserable condition, and in want of everything, with only one hundred men fit for duty.

Colonel Peter Schuyler, of New Jersey, was stationed there with his regiment in the early fall of 1747, but for want of rations was obliged to withdraw. The Assembly then urged Governor Clinton to send supplies from Albany, and garrison it with the men who had been raised to capture Crown Point. This he refused to do, but directed Colonel Roberts, commandant at Albany, to make an examination ; and if he did not not think it defensible, to remove the cannon and stores, and then burn it. The fort was burned. Great was the astonishment of a French scouting party to find it "no more." Happily, the belligerents of Europe were becoming exhausted, and made peace in the following year.

During the few years of peace which followed, the

French pursued their old policy of grasping the greater part of the continent, and continued their aggressions on the English settlements, in spite of the treaty stipulations. Their Indians, officered by Frenchmen in Indian costume, continued their raids on the English of Nova Scotia and northeastern Maine. They erected forts on the Ohio and its tributaries in territory belonging to Pennsylvania and Virginia, and assaulted an English trading-post, making prisoners of its occupants. They strengthened the works of Forts St. Frederick and Niagara, and continued their intrigues with the Five Nations. England at last learned the value of her North American possessions, and saw that unless effectual resistance were offered to the pretensions of the French, her possessions would be confined to a narrow strip of country along the ocean. Without declaring war, the English ordered their navy to make reprisals by seizing all the French ships met on the seas. They sent a fleet to intercept and capture a French fleet bearing stores and re-enforcements to Canada, and sent out General Braddock, with a few regiments of regulars, with instructions to arrange with the colonies for the capture of the French forts on the Ohio and Forts Niagara and St. Frederick. To General William Johnson was assigned the task of taking Fort St. Frederick, or Crown Point. Troops from Massachusetts and Connecticut formed a part of his army. Colonel Lyman, of Connecticut, preceded the general on the march, and at the great carrying-place had nearly completed a fort, afterward named Fort Edward by Johnson, before his general's arrival. At a council of war it was decided to march on Crown Point by way of Lake St. Sacrament, and Johnson moved his army to the head of that beautiful sheet of water, where a few days after he won his title and some renown by the defeat of Dieskau, the French general.

Fort Clinton, burned in 1747, had not been rebuilt. After the erection of Fort Edward, a fort at Saratoga was of little consequence. It was no longer the extreme frontier position, and henceforth became a depot for supplies.

In 1756, war had been declared, and an English general had been put in charge of the army to capture Crown Point, and from thence march against Montreal. But General Winslow, after assembling an army of seven thousand men, decided that he was not strong enough to accomplish the task, and the effort for that year was laid aside. Winslow probably built the fort known by his name at Stillwater, opposite the mouth of the Hoosac River.

In 1757, the incompetence and cowardice of the English general, Webb, who was at Fort Edward with four thousand men, occasioned the surrender to the French of Fort William Henry, built by Sir William Johnson after the defeat of Dieskau, in 1755.

In 1758, General Abercromby, at the head of a large army, marched through Saratoga to Lake George, whence he proceeded down the lake in boats to its outlet, and thence through the woods to Ticonderoga, where he was defeated by Montcalm with much slaughter. He retreated precipitately, and hardly stayed his flight until he reached the fort at Albany.

In the next year, 1759, General Amherst occupied Ticonderoga and Crown Point without resistance, the French retiring as he approached. The cautious Amherst proceeded no farther. He had engaged to meet General Wolfe before the walls of Quebec, but sent messengers instead to tell him that he was unable to keep the appointment. The year following he marched to Oswego, and thence down the St. Lawrence to Montreal, while Colonel Haviland went down Lake Champlain, driving the enemy

from their forts, and arrived opposite Montreal shortly before his general. The French governor capitulated, and surrendered all Canada to the English. Thenceforth, for fifteen years or more, Saratoga enjoyed immunity from scalping parties and the march of armies.

These French and Indian wars taught the English colonies some useful lessons. They learned that the British generals were many of them ignorant of their profession, and incompetent to accomplish results; the inferior officers proud and supercilious; the rank and file no more courageous than themselves, though better disciplined and better uniformed. They learned to be self-reliant and independent. They learned too the absolute necessity of acting together and in harmony. When the time was ripe, they pronounced for freedom, with entire confidence of ultimate success.

In 1775, troops were again on the march for the invasion of Canada, and for seven years the valley of the upper Hudson was the theatre of war. The Green Mountain Boys, under Ethan Allen, obtained possession of Forts Ticonderoga and Crown Point before General Philip Schuyler was placed in command of the northern department, and he made them the base of his operations for the campaign. There the army for the invasion of Canada, composed of militia and volunteers, under General Montgomery, second in command, were assembled, with Albany as headquarters. Montgomery pushed his way to Quebec, laid siege to that important fortress, and fell in an assault on its walls. The next year his army was pushed slowly back to Ticonderoga. In 1777, Burgoyne, the new British general, captured the latter place, and resumed his march on Albany. His progress was slow, although for several weeks he encountered no effectual resistance. The route of General Schuyler's retreating army, and of its pursuer,

from Fort Edward, was the same as that trodden by hostile feet for an hundred years.

Burgoyne's army crossed the Hudson River not far from the spot where M. Marin and his party crossed in 1745, just above Batten Kill, and encamped on the hills of Saratoga just north of Fish Creek. He occupied the summer residence of General Schuyler, on the south side of the creek, as his headquarters. When all the army had reached the western bank, the bridge of boats was destroyed, and the advance was begun. At night an encampment was made at Doove Gat. The next day, Burgoyne, at the head of several regiments, led his army two and a half miles in search of the rebels, whose drums calling the men to arms he had heard in the morning. He was slow in his search, as though in no great haste to find them. The next day he made a further advance of a few miles, and found the rebels. They stopped his further progress, after a severe battle on September 19th. The battle was not decisive, and on October 7th another was fought, in which the English were defeated, and forced to retreat. They halted at their old camping-ground north of Fish Creek, and Burgoyne spent the night in the house where he had established his headquarters on his advance. He was now within the toils of the rebels, and unable to make his escape. After a few days' hesitation, he sent an officer to General Gates to open negotiations for surrender. The treaty was signed on October 16th, and the next day the English army piled their arms on the meadow north of Fish Creek and west of the Hudson River, and as prisoners of war began their march to Massachusetts.

The first encampment of the British army after crossing the Hudson, and their last encampment on their retreat, where they "piled their arms," were on that portion of the

Saratoga Patent allotted to Robert Livingston in the division made by the seven partners in 1685. The general's headquarters were on Lot No. 4, assigned to Johannes Wendell. Their second camp, at Doove Gat, was on Lot 3, drawn by Dirck Wessels. The battles of September 19th and October 7th were fought on Lot 2, which Jan Jansen Bleecker obtained. The fortified camp of General Schuyler at Stillwater, whence General Gates marched to the battle-fields, was on Lot No. 1, beginning on the kill, "where we slept that winter's night," which had been drawn for Peter Schuyler.

The decisive battle of the American Revolution, one of the few decisive battles of history, was fought on the Saratoga Patent.

I cannot leave Saratoga without an effort to contribute something for the true location of the forts on that historic ground. There is some confusion on this point, even among the residents of the locality. Although the whole tract covered by the patent was known as Saratoga, the name was more especially applied to the locality now known as Schuylerville, while other portions of the tract received other names, as Stillwater and Doove Gat. Johannes Wendell drew Lot 4, on which was a fine water-power, bordered by timber-lands. He was a man of enterprise, and doubtless began the development of his property as soon as the division was made. That Bartel Vrooman's house was on Wendell's property, is fairly proved from the journals of Winthrop and Peter Schuyler of their campaigns of 1660 and 1691. The Albany Convention had ordered it to be fortified in 1689. General Winthrop left Albany on August 1st, and spent the night at the "Still Water." The next day he arrived at Saratoga, "about fifty miles from Albany," where was a block-house occupied by Dutch soldiers. Peter Schuyler left Albany on

June 21st, and stopped at the Stillwater, "twenty-four miles from Albany," where he stayed two days, and on the 24th he marched to Saratoga, "sixteen miles" from Stillwater. On June 26th he reached the great carrying-place (Fort Edward), "ten miles" from Saratoga.

The block-house, or fort, at Saratoga, was on the south side of Fish Creek, as that was Wendell's north line. Johannes Schuyler, who succeeded Wendell in the ownership of Lot 4, was also a man of energy and enterprise, and he continued to make improvements by the erection of mills and the cultivation of the soil. Robert Livingston, whose lot was on the north side of Fish Creek, had larger interests in his manor, to which he gave his time and attention. His property at Saratoga remained in its natural state for many years. The journal of the French officer, in 1745, proves beyond a question that the fort was on the Schuyler property. The French came from the north, and after passing one house reached the end of the road, when M. Marin made a rush for the fort. To reach it he had to cross a rapid river. After crossing this rapid river, he first came to a saw-mill, and then to Schuyler's brick house, beyond which was the fort and the principal settlement. Sauthier's map, in 1779, locates Schuyler's mill on the south bank of Fish Creek, and the village of Saratoga some distance south of that, while Fort Hardy appears opposite the mouth of Batten Kill. When the fort was rebuilt, in 1739, it was without doubt on the spot where the block-house had been erected in 1689; it was there when burnt by the French, 1745. There is no question as to the location of Fort Clinton, built in 1746, and burned the next year—east of the river and south of Batten Kill.

The saw-mill referred to by the French journal probably stood on the south side of the creek, near where the canal now crosses it, and the brick Schuyler house on the bluff

south of the mill, fronting the river. The house when rebuilt, and which was ruthlessly burned by Burgoyne, occupied nearly, if not quite, the same position. The present "Schuyler mansion" (so-called) is situated several rods west from the original location. Schuylerville, the present village, lying north of the creek, is in a better location, by reason of the canal, for commercial purposes, than the site of the old village of Saratoga.

The good people of Schuylerville point with pride to the place just east of the village where the army of Burgoyne laid down their arms, and call it old Fort Hardy. But was there a fort by that name in that locality? Lieutenant-Governor De Lancey wrote, in December, 1754, "from Albany northward toward Canada there is no fort. We had one before, and in the last war, at Saratoga, which was abandoned and destroyed, so that the country lies entirely open." Hendrick, the Mohawk chief, in a speech at Albany, in 1745, said: "We had determined to take Crown Point, but you burnt your fort at Saratoga, and ran away. Look at your country! You have no fortifications, and it is but a step to Canada." Governor Hardy wrote, in November, 1755, "the two forts (William Henry at Lake George, and Fort Edward) are sufficient, I trust, to maintain the advanced frontier." Nothing was said of Fort Hardy. General Schuyler wrote to Washington, in July, 1777: "Of Fort Edward there is nothing left but ruins. I have frequently galloped my horse in on one side and out at the other. As for Forts Miller, Saratoga, and Stillwater, there is not a trace left, although they still retain their names."

If there ever was a fort named Hardy in the place indicated, he was a poor engineer who placed it in that position. Only a few rods away a curious individual, standing on the hills, could observe all that was passing

within the walls. It is probable that during the last French war, and in the time of Governor Hardy, an entrenched camp, as a depot of troops and supplies, may have been established, and after a time called Fort Hardy. As a fort for military defence it was hardly possible. Had there been a regular fort of that name where Sauthier places it on his map, we should be able to learn something about it in the historical records.

Kinderhook.

On November 3, 1685, Peter Schuyler received a patent from Governor Dongan for eight hundred acres of land, previously purchased from the native proprietors, lying south of the manor of Rensselaerwyck, extending to the great Kinderhook Creek, about two thousand paces over the New England path.[1]

Richard Nicolls, the first English governor, granted to Evert Luycas and Jan Hendrix Bruyn two parcels of land on the east side of Hudson River, south of a point known as Kinderhook (the children's point), and near the bouwery of Captain Abraham Staats. Subsequently he granted to the same parties, with Dirck Wesselse and Peter Van Alen as partners, another parcel of land lying south of the last-mentioned tract. In 1671, Governor Lovelace granted to Bruyn another small tract adjoining. Peter Schuyler's purchase in 1685 filled the gap between these several tracts and Van Rensselaer's manor.

Several families having settled on these lands, the proprietors petitioned for a grant of incorporation as a town-

[1] The Boston and Albany Railroad now follows the route of the bridle-path, through the woods to New England two hundred years ago, as far as Kinderhook, and perhaps farther. The Indians sought the easiest routes over the mountains from place to place.

ship. A patent was accordingly issued by Governor Dongan, on March 14, 1686,

"for all that tract of land on the east side of the Hudson River, lying at a place called Swart Hook, running north on said river four English miles to David Hook, thence east into the woods with the same breadth to the land of Dirck Wesselse and the high hills eight English miles, thence south to the falls of Major Abrahamse (Staats), there being thirty-one freeholders, to whom is granted the aforesaid tract of land, to be divided according to previous agreement; and erected into one township, to be called the town of Kinderhook."

Two Tracts on the East Side of Hudson River.

Governor Dongan, on June 2, 1688, issued a patent of confirmation to Peter Schuyler for two tracts of land on the east side of Hudson River, for which a patent had been previously granted by Governor Lovelace. The first tract is described as beginning opposite Magdalen Island, thence running east to a small lake, thence north to a point in a due east and west line from Sawyer's Creek (south line of Livingston's manor), thence west to the river, and along the river to the place of beginning.

The second tract began at the long reach on the river, and was bounded south and east by a creek flowing into the river (Wappinger Creek), and north by lands of Robert Sanders.

Schuyler sold the north half of the first tract on June 5, 1689, to Harme Gansevoort, for £9. In 1704, Gansevoort sold it to Harmen Janse Knickerbocker for £150. Knickerbocker resided for a time near Stillwater, and was of the same family as the Schaghticoke Knickerbackers. The two branches do not spell the name alike; one using an *o*,

the other an *a*, in the third syllable. Schuyler, 1698, sold a third of the remaining half, with a third of a saw-mill he had recently erected upon it, to Tjerch Clausen De Witt, of Kingston, for £60. How he disposed of what was left I am unable to learn.

The tract on the long reach he sold, August 30, 1699, to Robert Sanders and Myndert Harmense (Van der Bogert), who owned the tract adjoining north, on which the city of Poughkeepsie now stands. The consideration is not stated.

Some doubts having arisen as to the validity of the old patents, Lord Cornbury, in 1704, granted confirmatory patents.

The Kingston records show that Schuyler was interested with Jan Jansen Bleecker and Jochem Staats in a tract of land called Wawarsinch, his third of which he sold, in February, 1695, to Major Jacob Rutse for £70.

The Westenhook Patent.

Among the records of the Albany County clerk's office are three Indian deeds, dated October 1, 1703, October 2, 1703, and April 2, 1704, given to Colonel Peter Schuyler, Major Dirck Wessels, Captain Jan Jansen Bleecker, and Mr. John Abeel, conveying the tract of land lying east of Kinderhook and south of Rensselaerwyck. The land described by the first deed was on Westenhook Creek, a branch of the Housatonic River, which gave its name to the whole tract, Westenhook. The consideration expressed in the deeds was the sum of "one hundred and eighty-two and a half beavers and twelve otters."

The grantees associated with themselves Ebenezer Wilson, Peter Fauconier, Doctor Daniel Cox, Thomas Wenham, and Henry Smith, gentlemen holding official posi-

[illegible]

[illegible] Revolutionary [illegible]

[illegible] divided between two

sons and two sons-in-law. Jan Jansen Bleecker's ninth was vested in six of his descendants, each a sixth share. Ebenezer Wilson's ninth belonged to the Bayard family of New York. The ninth originally held by Peter Fauconier was divided between the families of Philip and Robert Livingston, sons of Robert Livingston the first. The ninth of Daniel Cox was allotted to three of his children in unequal proportions. Thomas Wenham's ninth belonged to the estate of John Wenham, deceased. Henry Smith, one of the original patentees, was still living at Brookhaven, L. I., and held his ninth in his own possession.

The Oriskany Patent.

Certain sachems of the Oneida nation, on July 19, 1704, gave a deed to Colonel Peter Schuyler, Colonel Thomas Wenham, and George Clark, for two tracts of land—the first, beginning at the mouth of Oriskany Creek, and extending up the creek four miles, and two miles on each side; the second, beginning on the Mohawk River at the mouth of Oriskany Creek, and running up two miles in breadth on each side of the river to the Oneida carrying-place, "where the path begins," and thence two miles on each side of the path to a swamp. For these tracts a patent was issued, on April 18, 1705, by Lord Cornbury, to Thomas Wenham,[1] George Clark,[2] Peter Schuyler,[1] Peter Fauconier,[3] and Roger Mompesson;[1] to each one-fifth, at the annual rent of ten shillings. On Sauthier's map it is named "Oriskany Patent, granted to Thomas Wenham & Co."

Why the purchase of these lands was made at that time is a question which will admit of speculation, but of no satisfactory solution. They were not required for settle-

[1] Members of the Council. [2] Secretary of the province. [3] Naval officer.

ment in the near future, and were remote from civilization. Schenectady was the western frontier of the province, only a few farms being cultivated on the Mohawk west of that village ; all beyond was yet a wilderness, occupied by the Mohawks and kindred tribes. The Oriskany Creek afforded water-power for mills, and the Oneida carrying-place was at a point where the waters began their eastward and westward courses, while not far off, among the hills at the south, were the sources of the Susquehanna and Delaware Rivers. Perhaps the speculative gentlemen, looking off into the future, imagined that their purchase might become the site of a great commercial emporium. It was then a place through which passed all eastward bound and westward bound traffic of the province, transferred from boats to human shoulders across the neck of land between the Mohawk River and Oneida River, or Wood Creek. The city of Rome, situate on that neck of land, preserves some of the features of the ancient commerce, being a place of transfer. If the tracts did not become a great commercial centre, they are immortalized in history by the battle of Oriskany and the siege of Fort Stanwix.

In what way Peter Schuyler disposed of his interest in the patent I have not learned, except that after the Revolution Governor William Livingston, of New Jersey, was the owner of Schuyler's share.

The Mohawk Lands.

The transaction I am about to relate caused unusual excitement in the province, and because of its importance I have reserved it for the last, although it was prior in date to some others already mentioned.

On September 19, 1695, Dominie Dellius, minister of

the Dutch Church in Albany, sent the following paper to Governor Fletcher :

"May it please your Excellency,
"Humbly sheweth

"Godfrey Dellius, Pieter Schuyler, Dirck Wessels, Evert Banker make their humble application to your Excellency to give them leave to buy of the Maquas a parcel of land lying upon the Schenectady river two miles on every side from a place called Ovakkie to another place named Onnawadago.

"The humble petitioners beg your Excellency's favor to grant them the time of seven years to make the purchase, which will oblige them always to pray for your Excellency's prosperity &c.

"By your Excellency's
"Most obedient Servant
"Dellius."

No formal action seems to have been taken on this petition; for what reason does not appear. But the next year Dellius procured a patent, in his own name, for a large tract of land, extending from Batten Kill north to near the mouth of Otter Creek, on the east side of Lake Champlain, said to contain 620,000 acres. The land belonged to the Mohawk nation, but was not occupied except for hunting-grounds.

On February 6, 1697, a petition, signed by Peter Schuyler, Dellius, Dirck Wessels, and Evert Bancker, was presented to the governor and Council, asking leave to purchase a tract of land on Schenectady River, "two miles on each side and fifty miles long." It was drawn by Dellius, who seemed to be the chief promoter of the project. The petition was read in the Council the following June, and leave was granted, "provided Judge Pinhorne be included in the purchase." In July, a deed,

signed by "Dirk, called Rode," chief sachem, and seven other Mohawks, one of whom was Hannah, conveyed to Colonel Peter Schuyler, Dominie Godfrey Dellius, Major Dirck Wessels, and Captain Evert Bancker a tract of land fifty miles long and four miles on each side of the river, with this proviso: "It is the true intent and meaning of this instrument, that if we or any of our posterity shall have occasion or need of any part of said land, we or they shall have provision for our planting and occupancy."

The chief sachems of the Mohawk nation attached a certificate, that the deed had been interpreted by Hilliche Van Olinda,[1] the legal interpretess, before they signed it. Dirck, called Rode, the chief sachem, had been baptized by Dellius in 1695, and his age was entered at eighty years.

This deed was presented to the governor and Council on July 31, 1697, who ordered a patent to issue, with a quit-rent of one beaver-skin yearly for seven years, and thereafter five beaver-skins annually.

On the same day a patent passed the seals, to William Pinhorne, Peter Schuyler, Godfrey Dellius, Dirck Wessels, and Evert Bancker, describing the tract as in the deed, except the four miles on each side of the river were changed to two; and except in another particular, which of itself was sufficient to vitiate the instrument. It was absolute and not conditioned, making no reservation for the occupancy of the Indians, at the present time or for the future. Had it conformed to the deed, there could not have been the valid objections to it which were afterward urged. Perhaps no land-patent caused so much excitement as

[1] Her mother was a Mohawk woman and her father a white man. After spending some years with her mother's tribe, she was taken into a Christian family, when she became a Protestant, and was received into the Dutch Church. She afterward married Van Olinda, and was long employed as interpretess.

this, not only in Albany, but in New York, and even in England. Why it did not conform to the deed is a question difficult to answer. It is fair to suppose that it was not so intended by the gentlemen to whom the deed was given, but was changed at the suggestion, or through the influence, of Judge Pinhorne, a member of the Council.

When it was known in Albany that such a patent had been granted, the Common Council resolved that "it was a great prejudice to the city and county," and desired a public meeting of the citizens to be held, "to have a right understanding of the matter." The mayor, Dirck Wessels, appointed such a meeting to be held on January 28th. Schuyler, Dellius, and Wessels attended the meeting, and were interrogated as to the "patent, and the ground thereof." An effort was made to have them assign it to the city, but without success. Coming to no conclusion, the meeting adjourned to February 4th, when for the third time the "commonalty rehearsed their grievance." At the suggestion of the mayor, a committee was appointed to confer with the patentees, and the meeting adjourned to the 7th. At the time appointed, the committee reported that they had had no interview with the patentees, but that the mayor had informed them that Dominie Dellius would do nothing until he had consulted Judge Pinhorne and Mr. Bancker, who were in New York, and that Colonel Schuyler had said, "he thought the patent was as safe in his hands as in the city's." The Common Council then appointed Alderman Hendrick Hansen and Assistant-Alderman David Schuyler a committee, to lay their grievances before the governor.

On their return the committee reported, May 7th, the petition they had presented to the late Governor Fletcher and Council, and their order in reference to it. They also reported the address and petition which they had pre-

sented to the new governor, Lord Bellomont, who ordered a hearing before himself and Council. The report of the committee was approved by the Common Council, who "resolved, they will effectually prosecute the said affair until they have perfect relief from the violence done them in taking the Mohawk land," and appointed "Jan Janse Bleecker, recorder, and Robert Livingston, to prosecute the same, and procure the best counsel they can."

Jan Janse Bleecker and Ryer Schermerhoorn, members of Assembly from Albany County, presented a memorial "on behalf of themselves and their constituents," to Lord Bellomont and the Council, asking to have the patent vacated. Hendrick and Joseph, two of Dellius' converts, who had signed the deed, were sent to New York, to be examined by the governor. They said they had not sold or given away their land; they had never intended to alienate the soil, but that the pretended purchasers had used artifice to circumvent them, by saying they would keep their land for them; they now wished the patent annulled or vacated.

Schuyler and Wessels saw their mistake, and were prompt to correct it, so far as they were concerned. Among the best friends the Indians ever had, they had consented to take a trust deed of their land, and hold it for their use as therein expressed. The Mohawks were selling their land at intervals, in small tracts, to speculators, who would soon be in possession of the whole. As their friends, they sought to save the nation from ruin. The omission in the patent of the trust, and the conditions of the deed, was not of their procurement. Before March of the following year they surrendered their interests, declaring that "it was their true intent and meaning, the land should be preserved and kept for the Mohawk nation, and should it be otherwise, it would be a great

discouragement to the Indians and the trade of Albany. They therefore freely and of their own accord surrender whatever interests they hold under the patent."

Early in May, 1699, the Council passed a bill vacating the patent. It was carried to the Assembly, and passed by that body on the 13th, with an amendment prohibiting Dellius from longer officiating in the church at Albany, in which the Council concurred. The Council stood three to three on the amendment. The governor gave the casting vote, and then signed the bill, an assumption of authority not warranted by his instructions or by parliamentary law. Although the act was not approved by the crown until June, 1708, it quieted the excitement, and satisfied the small speculators.

Peter Schuyler was not a favorite of Bellomont's. He had been an active opponent of Leisler, and had always opposed the policy and measures of the party who sustained him; he was too thoughtful and independent to change his politics with the change of governors; he was the one man in the province who understood the Five Nations, and the methods to be pursued in dealing with them. Bellomont was a bitter partisan, and had little patience with his opponents. He was supremely vain, and could not brook contradiction, or receive advice, if it did not square with his own opinions. Men who would not yield their own convictions to his, and pour the incense of flattery into his ears, could not be his friends. Men who were regarded by the Indians with equal or more affection than himself stood in his way, and must be removed. He could not forgive Schuyler, because he was regarded by the Mohawks, notwithstanding his connection with this patent, with reverence and brotherly kindness, as they esteemed his friendship of more value than that of the governor's.

It is quite natural, under such circumstances, that Bellomont should seize upon Schuyler's connection with the patent, and make it the pretext of doing him all the injury he could, both here and in England. Although Schuyler had resigned his interest, the governor to the last used it to his disparagement. From this he passed to his other land transactions, charging him with having vast tracts twenty miles square, calling him a "mighty landgrave," "a large land-owner with no tenants," and all the while holding out the idea that it was through Fletcher he had procured his patents.

The truth is, Peter Schuyler was a small land-owner compared to several others, who were Bellomont's friends and favorites. In Bellomont's time he held three-fourteenths of Saratoga, eight hundred acres in Kinderhook, and one-twentieth of a small tract on the east side of the Hudson south of Livingston's manor. Besides this, not a foot of the lands he now owned, or had sold to friends at nominal prices, had been granted by Fletcher, but by Dongan several years before Fletcher's administration.

The history of the Mohawk Patent would not be complete without some notice of the patentees aside from Peter Schuyler. Of Dirck Wessels I shall have occasion to speak hereafter.

William Pinhorne, an Englishman, came to this province with Sir Edmund Andros, in 1678, and settled in New York as a merchant. He was elected speaker of the Assembly in 1685, and the next year was appointed an alderman by Governor Dongan under the new charter of the city; he was a member of the Council, and one of the judges of the court which tried and convicted Leisler of treason; he was recorder of the city, and judge of the Supreme Court. He lost these various positions by removal from the province, but on his return, in 1693, he was restored to

the Council and to his seat on the bench. Bellomont, who said, "The English here (New York) are so profligate I cannot find a man fit to be trusted that is capable of business," removed him from the Council and the court in 1698. He then retired to his estate in New Jersey, and was appointed to the offices in that province from which he had been suspended in this; but in 1713 he was dismissed from all his employments on demand of the Assembly. He died in 1719.

Gerrit Bancker, the father of Evert, came to New Amsterdam before 1660, and removed thence to Fort Orange, where he accumulated a considerable estate. After his death, before 1691, his widow (Elizabeth Van Eps) returned to New York, and, like many women of the period, engaged in trade. She died in 1693, and left a large estate for the times to her son Evert and her daughter Anna, wife of Johannes de Peyster.

Evert Bancker remained in Albany after the death of his father, and prosecuted his business as a merchant. He was an alderman, and *ex officio* commissioner of Indian affairs; he was appointed justice of the peace in 1694, and when Governor Fletcher reorganized the Indian board, in 1696, he was one of its five members. He was mayor of Albany in 1695, 1707–8, master in chancery in 1705, and member of the ninth Assembly.

When quite a young man he was elected an officer of the church. While serving in this capacity, Dominie Dellius was settled as co-pastor, and they became confidential friends. It was not singular that he should have been placed on the Board of Indian Affairs with his pastor and other officers of the church, and with them should have been interested in the Mohawk land-grant.

The Assembly presented charges against him on account of this transaction, and denounced him in severe

words, but the persecution did not seriously affect his reputation either at home or with the government. In 1703 he was again elected alderman, was appointed mayor in 1707 by Lord Cornbury, and was restored to the Indian board in 1710 by Governor Hunter, by whom he was also made one of the managers of the Canada expedition.

When he was over sixty years old, he was appointed by Governor Burnet resident commissioner among the Senecas, a position of responsibility, attended with self-denial and danger. The next year he commanded the newly erected trading-house and fort at Oswego, and was summoned by a French-Canadian officer to demolish the block-house and other structures, and withdraw from territory claimed by his master, the King of France. He was not frightened, and kept possession.

Evert Bancker died in Albany in 1734, leaving five sons and one daughter. Three of his sons resided in New York. They were prominent merchants, and connected by marriage with the leading families of the city. Their sons, in the Revolutionary War, were active and efficient supporters of the patriot cause. The Banckers were of a good family in Holland.

Rev. Godfrey Dellius came to Albany in 1683, as colleague of Dominie Schaets, then seventy-five years old, minister of the Dutch Church in Albany. He was a man of fine education, acquainted with several languages, and soon mastered another, the Mohawk. When he first came he wrote his name Ge. Dell, Godfrey Dell, or simply Dell, but, following the fashion of the day among his countrymen, he Latinized it into Godofredus Dellius. He introduced some new features in the records of his church, which have been of much value, particularly to genealogists. He soon became interested in missionary work among the Indians, and to facilitate his work he learned

their language. He baptized his first Indian convert in the latter part of 1689, and six months afterward eleven more. Among these was the celebrated Hendrick, termed "Emperor" in England, and "King" in Sir William Johnson's time. His Indian name, as Dellius wrote it, was Tejenihokarawe (open the door); as spelled in the "Annals of Queen Anne," Tee-Yee-Neeu-Ho-Ga-Prow; in the *Tatler* (1710), Tee-Yee-Neeu-Ho-Ga-Row, and by other writers each in a different way. From 1692 to 1698, inclusive, Dellius baptized one hundred and five Indian men, women, and children, among whom was the old Mohawk chief, Rode, named Dirk in baptism.

In politics Dellius was a warm supporter of the Albany Convention, and an uncompromising opponent of Leisler. When the latter secured the control of the city, he retired to Boston to avoid arrest. After Leisler's fall he returned, and was received with hearty congratulations, especially by the Mohawks.

Bellomont, on his first arrival, treated Dellius with consideration, and joined him with Colonel Schuyler in an embassy to Frontenac, governor of Canada. This was done at the request of Schuyler, because he understood French. He made a favorable impression on Frontenac as an agreeable gentleman, "zealous in the execution of his instructions." The excitement in Albany over the Mohawk grant divided the church into angry parties, the Leislerians becoming so embittered that they filled Bellomont's ears with their complaints and slanderous accusations against their minister. Dellius was high-minded, and, conscious of his good intentions, refused to conciliate them by explanations and apologies, or to make court to the governor, who consequently became a bitter enemy.

Bellomont recommended to the Assembly, which con-

vened in March, 1699, an investigation of Indian affairs for the correction of abuses. The committee of grievances, Abraham Gouverneur, chairman, reported that, after a full investigation,

"we are of opinion that the said patent (for the Mohawk land), as well as the manner of obtaining it, is a great injustice to the Indians; and therefore move that Mr. Godfrey Dellius, Mr. Evert Bancker and Mr. William Pinhorne, some of the patentees (Colonel Schuyler and Major Wessels having resigned their interest therein), be required forthwith to attend this house, and show cause, if any they have, why the said patent should not be vacated, and make answer to such objections as shall be made against them for the illegal practices that were used by them in obtaining it."

It was accordingly ordered that the speaker issue his warrant to compel their appearance on April 13th next. The committee was also directed to report articles of complaint or accusation against them. On April 13th the committee reported that Dellius, Bancker and Pinhorne, had by fraudulent means, induced eight Mohawks to sign the deed; that the Mohawks had only intended to sign a deed of trust, instead of a deed in fee,[1] and hence Dellius and Bancker had betrayed the trust reposed in them by the Indians, and had also betrayed their trust by taking into partnership William Pinhorne.

Dellius and Bancker appeared before the house on April 17th, demanded a copy of the complaint, and gave in their answer on the 19th, to which, on the 25th, the committee made their "replication." It was then ordered that Dellius and Bancker appear for a hearing at ten o'clock the next morning.

[1] The Indian deed on record in Albany is a deed of trust. Did the committee have a copy with the trust clause omitted?

Unfortunately the records of the Assembly from April 25th to the end of the session are lost, and we are unable to learn any further proceedings in the trial. The journals of the legislative council inform us that a bill was introduced into that body for "vacating extravagant grants of land made by Colonel Fletcher," among them the Mohawk Patent, which passed that house on May 12th, and the Assembly on the 13th, with an amendment to the effect, that Mr. Dellius having been the main instrument in procuring the patent, "he ought to be and is hereby suspended from the exercise of his ministerial function in the city and county of Albany." The amendment was agreed to by the Council, and the bill was signed by the governor on May 16th.

After the lapse of nearly two hundred years, the student of those times must give a different verdict on Dellius' character and works than that of Bellomont and his Assembly. Dellius saw the Mohawk nation fast disappearing before the steady advance of the whites, and their lands being gradually absorbed by farmers and speculators. The religious sentiment first awakened by the Jesuit missionaries had made a deep impression upon some of them, and more especially upon their women. Under its influence many had emigrated to Canada to receive instruction in the Christian faith, and had refused all inducements to return, unless they were provided with a home apart from their heathen countrymen and furnished with Christian teachers. Their pride as a nation had been broken by French invasions. The English seemed powerless to protect them, or to furnish them with missionaries, for although the latter had been often promised by the English governors, none had come. One by one, and family by family, they still emigrated to Canada, leaving a country superior in climate and in many other

respects to that of their new home. Rum was making fearful havoc in their ranks; for this they would barter their furs, and when these failed their lands, to unprincipled traders and speculators. Their chief sachem often protested against this abuse, but without effect; the evil continued.

Dellius' sympathies were awakened in their behalf. He learned their language, and put himself into direct communication with them. Availing himself of their strong religious sentiment, he instructed them in the Protestant faith; they listened, and many of them joined his church. It would seem at this time, that had there been two or three men with Dellius' spirit and activity to go and live among them, as did the Jesuits, the whole nation might have been converted to Christianity. The impressions made by Dellius were not transient, for many, if not all, of his converts lived exemplary lives, and remained true to the faith he taught them. When Dellius left, the work of evangelization among them soon ceased. His successor in the church baptized a few Indian converts, Dellius' catechumens, and the work of the Albany church among them was finished forever. When the passions of the hour had time to cool, there were but few, both whites and Indians, who did not regret Dellius' departure.

Dellius' nature was sympathetic, and he was ever ready to render assistance to those in distress. Much as he disliked the religion taught by the Jesuits, and much as he was opposed to them as missionaries among the Five Nations, he was ever ready to afford them relief when suffering for the necessaries of life. Some of them had been captured by the Iroquois on their raids, and remained as captives, although permitted to teach. Such were in want of many things which they could not procure from Canada in time of war. To one such, Milet, in the Oneida coun-

try, Dellius had sent delicacies, and afterward purchased things for him at his request. This led to a correspondence with him and his superiors in Canada, in which on the one side there was nothing but kindness, and on the other expresions of gratitude and thankfulness. But so passionate were men at that time, that his enemies made this an accusation against him, none more notably than the governor.

After the Legislature had deprived him of his pastorate, Mr. Dellius was satisfied that his work in his adopted country was done, and he prepared to leave for the fatherland. Previously to his departure, in June, 1698, several of his Indian converts called to take their leave. There were present at the farewell interview, Johannes Schuyler, Wessel Ten Broeck, Killian and Henry Van Rensselaer, officers of the church ; they also happened to be justices of the peace. At the conclusion of the interview, they gave a certificate to the effect, that the Indians said they were grieved to see him go away; that they had not caused it, but others, "who have led us as by a cord;" that they had always resolved to be true to him, and asked his forgiveness for the evil they had done him; and that he willingly and promptly forgave them.

Two days afterward, Dellius' enemies caused a meeting of the justices of the city and county to be called. With a copy of the certificate before them, they proceeded to examine Hendrick and other Indians touching its statements. The Indians admitted its truthfulness, except in one particular—they did not say, "others led them as by a cord," but Hilli, the interpretess, had used those words as coming from them. According to the facts elicited by this examination, designed to invalidate the certificate, the last interview between the missionary and his Indian converts was tender and affecting. Some one asked him why

he went away. He replied: "My brethren that live here bring many wicked reports into my house—that is the cause of my going away." Turning to Hendrick, for whom he seemed to have a peculiar affection, he asked: "Do you love me?" "Yes," he answered, "I ever loved you since we have been praying Indians." Gideon, presenting him with a beaver, said: "I am grieved to my soul that you are going away. Will you come again, when this evil is over?" He answered, "I will never forget you."

Few men of his time in the colony had a more enviable reputation for capacity and benevolence; no one made a deeper impression on the public mind; no one was more reverentially regarded by the Indians than Dellius. There can be little doubt that he sought to save their lands for their own use; he saw how fast they were being taken from them, and he made his first effort to save their homes on the banks of their beautiful river, where were their villages and their planting-grounds. When this apparently failed, he procured a patent of their hunting-grounds to the east of Hudson River and Lake Champlain, that, when they lost their home lands, the remnant, whom he hoped to have Christianized, might have a place to live on not too remote from civilization. A year later he secured their homestead by a trust-deed to himself and others, their friends. Had it not been for the selfishness of one man, who thrust his name into the patent and changed its tenure, all might have been secure against the ravings of disappointed and designing men.

The justices who signed the certificate as to the last meeting of Dellius with his Indian converts were summoned before the governor and Council in New York to answer for this grave offence. After a hearing, they were all suspended from office. Bellomont treated the minister

of the Protestant French Church at New Rochelle with much cruelty, because "he attached his signature to an ecclesiastical certificate which the churches and pastors of the province had given to Sieur Dellius, minister of Albany, who had not the good fortune to please his Lordship:" he deprived him of the pittance the province had pledged him as salary. Truly, the governor and his friends were the "angry people," and not their opponents, as they charged. Bellomont railed against Dellius, and even pursued him to his home across the seas with infamous scandals, but good people grieved. Mr. Vesey, the Episcopal clergyman of New York, prayed in his pulpit for Dellius' prosperous voyage, and that he might be preserved from the wrath of his enemies. His voyage was fortunate and he arrived safely in Holland. He was cordially received by his brethren in the ministry, and was assigned to an important church, where he closed his life and labors.

GENEALOGICAL TABLE.

PETER SCHUYLER'S DESCENDANTS.

[Furnished by John C. Schuyler, of West Troy, N. Y.]

5. PETER SCHUYLER, b. September 17, 1657, d. February 19, 1724, m. 1, in 1681, *Engeltie Van Schaick*, d. 1689.
   12. MARGARITA, b. November, 1682.
       m. August 26, 1697, *Robert Livingston, Jr.*
   13. PHILIP, bp. October, 1684, d. y.
   14. ANNA, bp. September 12, 1686, d. at age of 12.
   15. GERTRUDE, bp. August 17, 1689, d. y.

5. PETER SCHUYLER,[1] m. 2, September 14, 1691, *Maria Van Rensselaer.*
   16. GERTRUDE, bp. February 11, 1694.
       m. June 13, 1714, *Johannes Lansing.*
   17. PHILIP, bp. January 15, 1696, d. s. p. 1758.
       m. December 29, 1720, *Margarita Schuyler* (360), d. August 28, 1782, in her 83d year.
   18. PETER, JR., bp. January 12, 1698.
       m. November 4, 1722, *Catherine Groesbeck.*
   19. JEREMIAH, bp. January 12, 1698, twin with the last, buried at the Flatts, December 10, 1753.
       m. Susanna ———, a French lady of New York.

18. PETER SCHUYLER, JR., and *Catherine Groesbeck.*
   20. PETER (second jun.), bp. February 20, 1723.
       m. *Gertrude Schuyler* (362). He was buried at the Flatts, September 2, 1753.
   21. ELIZABETH, bp. January 3, 1725.
       m. January 11, 1747, *Robert Sanders.*

---

[1] According to the records of the church, (5) Peter Schuyler had a daughter named Maria, bp. May, 1692. Her sponsors were Arent Schuyler, Margarita Schuyler (her grandmother), and Hendrick Van Rensselaer. She married Abraham Staats, and had two sons, Peter and Barent, and a daughter, Annatje. She died before her father. It was her son, Barent, who married (28) Magdalena Schuyler, and is mentioned in the will of (17) Philip Schuyler.—G. W. S.

22. STEPHANUS, bp. October 3, 1728, d. y.
23. STEPHANUS, bp. December 13, 1729, d. y.
24. STEPHANUS, bp. April 2, 1732, d. October 6, 1798.
m. *Engeltie Van Vechten*, d. April 22, 1792.
25. PHILIP, bp. April 22, 1736, d. June 3, 1808.
m. April 21, 1765, *Annatje Wendell*, d. December 5, 1802.
26. MARIA, bp. December 20, 1738, d. y.
27. JOHANNES, bp. August 14, 1743, d. y.

19. JEREMIAH SCHUYLER and *Susanna* ———.
28. MAGDALENA, bp. November 10, 1723.
m. November 2, 1743, *Barent Staats*.
29. MARIA, bp. April 17, 1726.
m. May 11, 1745, *Nicholas Cuyler*.
30. PETER, bp. September 22, 1728, d. y.
31. THOMAS, bp. December 15, 1734, d. y.
32. MARGARETA, bp. September 3, 1738.
m. *Goosen Van Schaick*.

20. PETER SCHUYLER and *Gertrude Schuyler*.[1]
33. PETER, d. January 4, 1792.
m. January 17, 1767, *Gertrude Lansing*.
34. CORNELIA, bp. July 26, 1746.
m. *Walter Livingston*.

24. STEPHEN SCHUYLER and *Engeltie Van Vechten*.
35. PETER S., bp. May 14, 1758, d. November 1, 1832.
m. December 5, 1789, *Catharine Cuyler*, d. September 28, 1855.
36. GERTRUDE, bp. January 4, 1760, d. July 5, 1787.
37. REUBEN, bp. June 10, 1762, d. May 23, 1842.
m. 1, *Sara Fort*.
m. 2, *Elizabeth Truax*, d. May 27, 1838.
38. PHILIP S., bp. August 31, 1763, d. July 20, 1844.
m. July 1, 1789, *Rachel Van den Bergh*, d. March 20, 1809.
39. CATHARINE, b. October 9, 1765, d. y.
40. JOHN, b. May 23, 1768, d. May 15, 1843.
m. 1, *Anna Cuyler*, d. 1815.
m. 2, *Maria McCoun*, d. 1832.
41. JEREMIAH, b. September 27, 1771, d. 1854.
m. *Jane Cuyler*, d. 1832.

25. PHILIP SCHUYLER and *Annatje Wendell*.
42. CATHARINE, b. March 23, 1766.
m. *Abraham Van Vechten*.

---

[1] Daughter of John Schuyler, Jr., and sister of General Philip Schuyler.

43. HARMANUS, b. 1769, d. October 13, 1822.
m. 1, October 2, 1790, *Mary Staats*, d. March 24, 1794.
m. 2, February 16, 1797, *Hester Beekman.*
m. 3, *Mary Dean*, d. December 28, 1810.
m. 4, *Sarah Packwood.*

44. ELIZABETH, b. May 4, 1771.
m. *James Van Ingen.*

45. GERTRUDE, b. June 26, 1773.
m. *James Van Ingen.*

46. PETER P., b. July 15, 1776.
m. an adopted dau. of General Cushing.

47. MARIA, b. September 11, 1778, d. January 21, 1815.

48. STEPHEN P., b. November 17, 1780, d. February 5, 1846.
m. *Angelica Schuyler* (71), d. January 30, 1880.

49. ARIANTIA, b. September 15, 1782.
m. *Jacob Van Orden*, of Catskill, N. Y.

50. LUCAS, b. March 9, 1785, d. s. p. October 21, 1809.

33. PETER SCHUYLER and *Gertrude Lansing.*

51. ANNA, bp. February 26, 1769, d. y.

35. PETER S. SCHUYLER and *Catharine Cuyler.*

52. ENGELICA, b. September 8, 1790, d. September 24, 1793.

53. SUSANNA, b. April 17, 1793, d. September 17, 1796.

54. ENGELICA, b. January 25, 1795, d. July 10, 1796.

55. ENGELICA, b. July 18, 1797, d. y.

56. ENGELICA, b. October 1, 1798, d. December 12, 1812.

57. JOHN CUYLER, b. December 1, 1801, d. April 22, 1882.
m. September 24, 1828, *Anna Maria Schuyler* (69).

58. STEPHEN R., d. November 26, 1877.
m. 1, January 30, 1838, *Catharine Elizabeth Schuyler* (80), d. May 21, 1849.
m. 2, November 16, 1854, *Catharine Boyd.*

37. REUBEN SCHUYLER and *Sara Fort.*

59. SARA, b. March 8, 1785, d. y.

37. REUBEN SCHUYLER and *Elizabeth Truax.*

60. STEPHEN V. V., married and settled in Mobile, Ala. Nothing is known of his family.[1]

---

[1] (60) STEPHEN VAN VECHTEN SCHUYLER married *Martha Vincent Brown*, from Pennsylvania, and removed to Mobile, Ala. Their children were :

60 *a*. MARY ELIZABETH, m. *Samuel C. Muldow.*

60 *b*. ANGELICA, m. 1, *George G. Gazzam.*
m. 2, *Temple Taylor.*

60 *c*. REUBEN VAN VECHTEN, m. ———, and is now residing in the State of New York.
—G. W. S.

61. ABRAHAM, m. *Laura Sanders.*
62. ANGELICA, d. January 22, 1848.

38. PHILIP S. SCHUYLER and *Rachel Van den Bergh.*
63. GERTRUDE, m. January, 1836, *Abraham Ten Eyck, Jr.*
64. RACHEL, m. *Isaac D. F. Lansing.*
65. STEPHEN, b. October 27, 1794, d. s. p. October 4, 1857.
66. ANGELICA, m. January, 1826, *Sanders Lansing.*
67. ABRAHAM, b. September 5, 1799, d. s. p. October 21, 1869.
68. LUCAS, b. November 20, 1801, d. May 4, 1852.
m. September, 1825, *Angelica Lansing.*
69. ANNA MARIA, m. September 24, 1828, (57) *John Cuyler Schuyler.*

40. JOHN SCHUYLER and *Anna Cuyler.*
70. ANGELICA, m. 1, *Clarkson Crosby.*
m. 2, *John Taylor Cooper.*

41. JEREMIAH SCHUYLER and *Jane Cuyler.*
71. ANGELICA, m. *Stephen P. Schuyler* (48).
72. CORNELIUS, b. July 1, 1795, d. February, 1878.
m. 1817, *Harriet Hillhouse.*
73. ANN JANE, b. May 28, 1797, d. y.

43. HARMANUS P. SCHUYLER and *Mary Staats.*
74. MARY, b. July 8, 1791, d. y.
75. PHILIP, b. January 26, 1793, d. y.

43. HARMANUS P. SCHUYLER and *Mary Dean.*
76. MARIANNA, b. July 27, 1800.
m. *John Vreedenburg.*

43. HARMANUS P. SCHUYLER and *Sarah Packwood.*
77. PHILIP PIETERSE, d. unmarried in Texas.
78. THOMAS, m. *Angelica Aspinwall.*
79. RICHARD, d. unmarried in Texas.
80. CATHARINE ELIZABETH, m. *Stephen R. Schuyler* (58).

46. PETER P. SCHUYLER and *Miss Cushing.*
81. ANN, m. *Dr. Simpson.*
82. WILLIAM CUSHING, d. s. p. m. 1879, *Margaret Sickles.*
83. MARIA, m. *John Doane.*
84. PHILIP, d. y.
85. HENRY.
86. FRANCES, m. *Samuel Eddy.*

48. STEPHEN P. SCHUYLER and *Angelica Schuyler.*
87. PHILIP LUCAS, d. s. p. aged 43 years.
88. JANE, d. y.
89. ANNA, d. y.
90. ANGELICA, d. y.
91. JEREMIAH, d. y.

92. CHARLES, d. y.
93. CORNELIA.
94. CATALINA, m. *Frederick Van Valkenburg.*

57. JOHN C. SCHUYLER and *Anna Maria Schuyler.*
95. PETER, d. April 9, 1865.
m. November, 1853, *Elsie A. Jauncy.*
96. RACHEL, d. February 13, 1834.
97. PHILIP, d. November 18, 1833.
98. CATHARINE, d. June 1, 1855.
99. RACHEL, d. June 13, 1851.
100. PHILIP; residence, Watervliet, Albany County, N. Y.
101. ANGELICA, d. August 31, 1880.
102. GERTRUDE.
103. ANNA MARIA.
104. STEPHEN; residence, Watervliet, Albany County, N. Y.

58. STEPHEN R. SCHUYLER and *Catharine E. Schuyler.*
105. PETER, d. s. p. July 3, 1860.
106. JOHN, d. y. January 31, 1854.
107. MARY HOOK, d. May 16, 1842.
108. RICHARD PHILIP, m. September 1, 1875, *Susan Drake;* residence, Watervliet, N. Y.

61. ABRAHAM SCHUYLER and *Laura Sanders.*
109. ELIZABETH, d. y.
110. JEANETTA.

68. LUCAS V. V. SCHUYLER and *Angelica Lansing.*
111. RACHEL, m. *George B. Wilson.*
112. ALIDA.
113. GERTRUDE, m. *Rev. Charles D. Cooper.*
114. PHILIP, d. y.
115. GERRIT L., m. *Eliza L. Hunt;* resides in Watervliet, N. Y.
116. PHILIP S.; resides in Watervliet, N. Y.
117. ISAAC L., m. April 12, 1883, *Elsie Cuyler Evertsen;* residence, Manchester, Vt.

72. CORNELIUS SCHUYLER and *Harriet Hillhouse.*
118. HARRIET, m. *Edward C. Delavan,* of Albany, the great temperance reformer.
119. JANE CUYLER, m. *Robert P. McMaster.*
120. CORNELIA LOUISA, d. y. October 9, 1828.
121. THOMAS HILLHOUSE; residence, Albany, N. Y.
122. CAROLINE TIBBETTS, m. *James Davis.*
123. EDWARD HENRY, d. y. January 29, 1835.
124. JEREMIAH CUYLER, d. y. January 26, 1835.
125. SARAH HILLHOUSE, m. October 12, 1882, *Ira Kingsley Martin.*

78. THOMAS SCHUYLER and *Angelica Aspinwall.*
126. HARMANUS, m. *Ella Drake;* residence, West Troy, N. Y.
127. SARAH, m. *John Burroughs.*
128. MARIA, d. y.
129. CLARKSON CROSBY, m. *Catharine Scoville.*
130. FRANK, m. October 12, 1882, *Nellie Kenyon;* residence, West Troy, N. Y.
131. MARIANNA.

95. PETER SCHUYLER and *Elsie A. Jauncy.*
132. WALTER JAUNCY, d. y.

108. RICHARD PHILIP SCHUYLER and *Susan Drake.*
133. STEPHEN REUBEN, b. November 15, 1876, d. y.
134. JANE DRAKE, b. December 22, 1879.
135. CATHARINE, b. November 23, 1882.

NOTES ON THE GENEALOGICAL TABLE.

THE preceding genealogical table shows that the descendants of Peter Schuyler are not numerous. The mortality of those at an early age is very noticeable. Of the one hundred and twenty-four names in the list, forty-two are of children who died before they reached the age of fifteen years. At least ten, of whom five were males, died unmarried. Several others died in early manhood, leaving small families. The living male descendants at the present time number not more than ten, of whom four of mature years are unmarried.

Very few of his family in the direct line emigrated far from their old home. I have been able to trace only four: (46) Peter P., who settled at Natchez; (60) Stephen, who resided at Mobile, and the brothers, (77) Philip Pieterse and (79) Richard, who died in Texas. Most of them lived and died on the lands acquired by Philip (Pieterse) Schuyler, known as the "Flatts," with Winter's plantation and the farm given to (18) Peter and (19) Jeremiah Schuyler as their mother's share of the manor of Rensselaerwyck. When they died they were buried in the private cemetry near the old house. Besides the forty-four graves in that old burial-place marked by monuments, there are many others without a stone or tablet to indicate whose remains lie below. Here were buried the three sons of Peter Schuyler—Philip, Peter and Jeremiah; and his only adult

grandsons—Peter, Stephen, and Philip. Indeed, all his descendants in the male line, except the four emigrants to the south, were until quite a recent period buried here.

Although this "place of graves" had been in use several years, it had not been formally detached from the farm and set apart for a burial-place; but when (17) Philip Schuyler made his will, he gave the ground for that use and no other.

"It is my will," he said, "that the present Burying Place be forever kept and appropriated for that use and no other, and I do hereby devise the said ground containing one acre for the Burying Place for all the descendants of my father Peter Schuyler dec[d] and of my father-in-law John Schuyler dec[d] and such other persons as my beloved wife, or my brothers Jeremy and Peter, or their heirs, shall permit."

This burial-place is now included within the limits of West Troy. Fearing lest it may be disturbed, various members of the family are depositing their dead in the Albany Rural Cemetry. From present appearances, this interesting spot will soon be a thing of the past. Rather than have the dead with their monuments removed, and this consecrated ground occupied for other purposes, it should be surrounded with a solid wall. In its centre should be placed a block of granite, inscribed, "Here lie the remains of four generations of Schuylers, the descendants of the great Quidor of the Five Nations."

Peter Schuyler's first wife, Engeltie Van Schaick, was the daughter of his father's old friend, Goosen Gerritse Van Schaick, by his second wife, Annatje Lievens. After her death he married Maria, daughter of Jeremiah Van Rensselaer, son of the first patroon, who for many years had charge of the colony of Rensselaerwyck. Her brother

Killian, in the settlement of his grandfather's estate, obtained possession of the manor and of the Claverack tract for himself, two brothers, and two sisters, of which his sister Maria's two sons, Peter and Jeremy, eventually obtained a farm of three or four hundred acres only as their mother's share of the vast estate. This was the second in a long succession of marriages between the Schuylers and Van Rensselaers continued to the present generation.

PHILIP SCHUYLER (17) held a prominent position in the province many years. He succeeded his father as commissioner of Indian affairs, but not to his influence among the Five Nations. They respected him for his high character and integrity, but did not defer implicitly to his counsel. He was not so much in the confidence of the governors as his father had been, and hence his influence was weakened among the Indians. He was not in favor with Governor Clinton, because in the Assembly he was independent, and acted rather with the party opposed to the governor, which was under the leadership of James de Lancey.

In August, 1747, while Colonel Schuyler was in New York attending the Assembly, his family was in peril from scalping parties of the French Indians, who were in the neighborhood, and had killed a white man and an Indian on the road between Albany and Schenectady, besides a large number of cattle on the deserted farms at Canastagione. By order of Governor Clinton, the troops which had been posted north of Albany, except those in Fort Clinton at Saratoga, were transferred to a camp at Greenbush, where they were of little service in case of a sudden attack on the northern suburbs of Albany.

Colonel Schuyler's house at the Flatts, where his family resided, was stockaded and made defensible. "It could contain a hundred men at least." When the troops were

about to leave the vicinity, Mrs. Schuyler and her friends made earnest appeals to the commanding officer to leave some of them at her house, if only for a short time, until she could remove her effects to the city; but in vain, the officer alleging that the orders of the governor were imperative. When these facts were known in New York, the Council presented an address to Clinton, urging him to reconsider his orders and encamp the troops at the Flatts, being a better site for a camp and a far better position for the protection of the frontiers. He gave an evasive reply, but left the troops at Greenbush. Later in the season he destroyed the fort at Saratoga, leaving the northern frontiers down to Albany open to the enemy.

The Assembly charged that the governor "was directed by the counsels of a man obnoxious to them, who by low, wicked acts disturbed the peace of the people," referring to Cadwallader Colden. It is quite probable that this gentleman advised the removal of the troops stationed at the Flatts because of his dislike to Colonel Peter Schuyler. The historian Smith remarked, "Colonel Philip Schuyler unwisely joined the opposition to Clinton." He could not certainly with self-respect attach himself to the governor's party, while it was controlled by Colden.

Colonel Schuyler was fortunate in his domestic relations, except that he was not blessed with children. At the age of twenty-four years he married his cousin, Margarita Schuyler, the "American lady" of Mrs. Grant, with whom he spent thirty-four years of uninterrupted happiness. He had a house in town, but lived much of the time on his farm at the Flatts. He died on February 16, 1758, and was buried in the private cemetery near his house, where his monument, erected by his widow, still stands in good preservation.

His will is dated June 28, 1748, and was admitted to probate on August 29, 1766. His large landed estate, all of which he had received from his father, he distributed among his brothers and sisters, or their heirs. To his brothers, Peter and Jeremy, he gave his wearing apparel. To his sister, Gertrude Lansing, and her son Peter, he gave each £50 ; and to his nephew, Peter Schuyler, he gave his "two large silver salt-cellars." "To my two sisters, Margrita Livingston and Gertruy Lansing, and my nephew, Barent Staats, Jr.,"[1] he gave his ninth share in the patent of Westenhook, each a third. Barent Staats, Jr., was required to pay from his share, "to his sister, Anna Van der Poel,[2] the sum of fifty pounds." After making provision for the "Burying Place," he bequeathed to his wife a farm on the Mohawk River opposite Canajoharie, all his personal estate after the payment of his debts and funeral expenses, and the use of the Flatts farm during life. He gave to his brother Jeremy the island, and to his brother Peter the remainder of the farm, both to come into possession after the death of his widow. To this point all his bequests were confined to his own family, but before closing he left a token of remembrance to one bearing his own name, a favorite nephew of his wife, Philip Schuyler, the future general, giving him a piece of woodland lying on the west side of the river north of his farm.

---

[1] He was *junior* to one of the same name, a cousin of his father's.

[2] Anna Staats married Johannes Van der Poel, May 5, 1743, and was his second wife. Hon. Aaron Van der Poel, of New York, supposed she was a daughter of "Dr. Samuel Staats, who married a sister of Aunt Schuyler." The will of Philip Schuyler shows this to be an error. She was doubtless the daughter of Abraham Staats, who was Dr. Samuel's nephew. She was a niece by marriage of Aunt Schuyler ("The American Lady"), and a second cousin by blood.

PETER SCHUYLER, JR., (18) in his youth was active and enterprising. When Governor Burnet made the experiment of establishing a fort among the Seneca Indians to counteract the efforts of the French to bring that nation more under their influence, he resolved to send ten men to Irondequoit for a year, and selected Schuyler as their captain. He was young, but bold and fearless. He accepted the position without hesitation, knowing that it was one of peril and self-denial, among barbarians, far away from civilization and the comforts of home. In after years he suffered from deafness, and was obliged to confine himself to the superintendence of his farm. He was much esteemed by his family and friends, who called him Pedrom ; he lived to an advanced age, and died in the midst of the Revolutionary strife. He alone of his father's sons continued the direct line of that branch of the family.

JEREMIAH SCHUYLER (19) seems to have led a quiet life, residing on his farm near the old homestead. He married a French lady of New York, whose family name is not known, and had five children. His only sons, Peter and Thomas, died in childhood. His three daughters married, but died in early life. He did not long survive them. Mrs. Grant, in the "American Lady," gives a sad picture of the lonely widow—confined to her bed with an incurable illness, bereft of husband and children, with none but servants or distant relatives to administer comfort and consolation.

PETER SCHUYLER (20) was the third of the name, and, being the eldest in the direct line, it was supposed that he would inherit the bulk of his uncle (17) Philip's landed estate. If such were the wishes of friends, they were doomed to disappointment, as seen by the will, made five

years before his death. He married his second cousin, the favorite niece of his uncle Philip's wife. He died early in life, at the age of thirty.

STEPHEN (24) and PHILIP SCHUYLER (25) were quiet farmers, contenting themselves with the produce of their lands and seldom appearing in public life. Philip was the colonel of a regiment in the Revolutionary War, but I have been unable to learn any details of his services.

PETER SCHUYLER (33), the fourth of the name, was State Senator from the western district, which then included Albany County, from 1787 to 1791, and was elected for another term, but died the day before the house convened. He was twice on the Council of Appointment, 1787 and 1791. His uncle, the general, was in the Senate and on the Council at the same time. Being quite young, and with little experience in public affairs, he was regarded by his uncle as a sort of pupil, who was bound to look to him as his guide and instructor in political matters. Peter had some of his uncle's spirit, and, being of the eldest line, he was disposed to resent the uncle's patronage and act on his own convictions. In fine, they did not agree, although they were of the same political party.

His grandfather had given him the farm on which he lived, but he wanted a wider field, and removed to Canajoharie, taking with him the family papers and relics, the "heirlooms" of the great Quidor, among which were the portrait, silver vase, and diamonds presented by Queen Anne in 1710. After the death of his first wife, he married a lady "outside the family circle." He was the first to take up his residence "so far from home," and after his death, without children, the relics were scattered, and some of them lost. General Schuyler, almost the only one of that generation of Schuylers who cared for such things

and had some taste for genealogy, recovered some of the papers and the silver vase, which are now in the possession of his grandson, George L. Schuyler, of New York City. The life-size portrait, painted by the court painter of Queen Anne, was returned to Peter S. Schuyler (35), then the eldest in descent, and is now in possession of the family of the late John C. Schuyler (57). The "diamonds" were retained by the second wife. Nearly a hundred years after his death they were sent to a jeweller in Albany to be reset. Peter Schuyler (33) was buried in the cemetery at the Flatts, and a monument placed over his grave.

PETER P. SCHUYLER (46) entered the army of the United States, as an Ensign of the Second Infantry, in July, 1797. He was promoted to be Second Lieutenant in the Third Infantry, July, 1798; First Lieutenant, March 2, 1799; Regimental Quartermaster, November, 1799; Assistant Military Agent at Mobile, May, 1802; Captain, Second Infantry, December, 1803; Colonel of the Thirteenth Infantry, March 12, 1812; Adjutant-General for Military District No. 1 (Massachusetts and New Hampshire), April 28, 1813; and resigned, June 15, 1815. He was also Treasurer of the State of Mississippi, and died at Natchez of yellow fever. His family returned to Albany.

Several other members of the family held responsible positions. Jeremiah Schuyler (41) was member of Assembly, 1810, and sheriff of Rensselaer County, 1813 to 1815. Harmanus P. Schuyler (43) was sheriff of Albany County, 1800. John C. Schuyler (57) was member of Assembly, 1836. Cornelius Schuyler (72) was sheriff of Rensselaer County, 1837 to 1840, and member of Assembly from Saratoga County, 1855.

III.

BRANDT SCHUYLER.

NOTHING is known of his early life. At the age of twenty-two years he married Cornelia, youngest daughter of the old burgomaster, Oloff Stevense Van Cortlandt, of New York City, July 12, 1682, and immediately afterward we find him in the mercantile business in that city; and he soon took a leading position among its business men. As others of his time, he found leisure to discharge the duties of some minor offices of the church and city. He was a thorough Dutchman, and adhered to the "Nether Dutch Church," in which he soon became an office-bearer. Two years after his marriage, he was commissioned as second lieutenant in one of the militia companies, of which Jacob Leisler was captain. A few years afterward he was promoted to the captaincy of another company.

In politics he was active and vigorous. There were two political parties then as now, but by what names they were known cannot be determined.

Under the Dutch the province had been governed by a director-general and Council appointed by the West India Company, and, when it passed into the hands of the Duke of York, by a governor and Council of his appointment. There was no Assembly or Legislature elected by the people, although in critical times the director-general had been forced to ask the people to select eight or ten men to form an advisory board. At first the Duke of

York, being opposed to popular assemblies, administered the government by a governor and Council. In after years he directed Governor Dongan to call an Assembly, whose bill of rights did not please him, and it was dissolved. The old method was pursued until, as James II., he lost his crown. William III., his successor, authorized Colonel Sloughter, in his instructions of November, 1689, to revive the Assembly. Before his arrival Jacob Leisler assumed control, and first caused a committee of safety, and subsequently a Council and Assembly, to be chosen by the people. Leisler's proceedings placed the old Council and their friends in opposition. Office-holders are not friendly to changes and revolutions—to measures which deprive them of their positions. Then, if not before, the political parties were distinctively known by party names —Leislerian and anti-Leislerian.

Brandt Schuyler belonged to the latter, and was not an inactive partisan. Leisler had possession of the fort, and thus controlled the city. He and his friends were now in power, and opposed the change; they sought to hold their places against all comers. Besides the military arm, they used the cry of "No popery" with much effect. The people were mostly ardent Protestants, and their fears were easily excited. It was known that King James was a Roman Catholic, who had sought to reinstate the old religion in its old place in the English realm, and, as Governor Dongan was a Catholic, it was believed that he had been pursuing the same policy in New York, by appointing adherents of the Catholic faith to office. Although the late councillors and their adherents were members, and some of them officers, of the same Protestant Church to which Leisler belonged, they were cried down as "papists," and persons dangerous to the religion and liberties of the people. False alarms were raised to excite

the populace, and, to procure the arrest of obnoxious individuals, some of whom were thrown into prison.

On one such occasion, in August, 1689, Brandt Schuyler and several others were arrested in the night, and detained until morning. This alarm was occasioned by a man on horseback, who did not stop when hailed. He was supposed to be Sir Edmund Andros, late governor, escaped from his Boston prison. After the capture and examination of a few Harvard College students, who had accompanied the post-rider on a pleasure trip through New England to New York, and learning that Sir Edmund was nowhere to be found, Leisler graciously released the prisoners. A year later, a commotion was raised by a proclamation of Leisler, who then assumed to be lieutenant-governor, requiring the militia to complete the city fortifications. Leisler had recently incarcerated some of his leading opponents in the dungeon of the fort, and he now imagined that he saw indications of a purpose on the part of the prisoners' friends to assault the fort for their rescue. He appeared in the streets armed, and by his blustering soon collected a crowd around him, composed of friends and foes. His arrogant manner provoked some of the crowd to jostle him, and perhaps to strike him; he charged that one John Crooke "stroke him with a cooper's adze, intending to murder him." He defended himself until the soldiers of the fort came to his rescue, by which means "his majesty's government was saved from destruction." He immediately issued another proclamation, reciting that "some of the head leaders were secured in the fort," but that as others had absconded, he enjoined the justices of the peace, the sheriff, and military officers to arrest them. Among the persons named in the proclamation was Brandt Schuyler. In the protracted investigation which followed, the only evidence implicating Schuy-

ler was that of Conrad Ten Eyck, who swore that he saw him and others "running toward the bridge (over Broad Street), saying they would fetch the prisoners out of the fort."

It does not appear that all of the offenders named were arrested. If the proclamation was meant in earnest, they succeeded in concealing themselves; but if it was intended only for effect on the popular mind, they remained within doors a few days, and then attended to their business as usual. Poor Bayard and Nicoll, the "head leaders," were secure in the dungeon, and were not released until Governor Sloughter's arrival.

Shortly after Leisler's execution, Bayard, Schuyler, and other leaders of their party, were appointed a court-martial to try the officers and privates of the militia companies who had thrown off all military discipline and followed Leislers fortune's. Had their proceedings been preserved, they would have thrown more light on the history of the times, at least on the story of individual actors in that stormy period.

From the time of Leisler's fall until May, 1698, seven years, the anti-Leislerian party were in power. Schuyler was elected an alderman of the city, and held the office by subsequent elections until 1697. He lost his election in 1698, but succeeded the next year, in spite of the governor's opposition. In 1694 he was appointed justice of the peace, and from 1695 to 1698 he was member of the Assembly.

When Lord Bellomont assumed the government, there was a change in majorities. He was a Leislerian, and threw all his influence on the side of his party friends. With a powerful advocate in the gubernatorial chair, the courage of the Leislerians revived, and they pushed their opponents to the wall. The old Assembly was dissolved,

and a new one was elected, in which they had a majority. Bellomont's administration was so partisan, that he lost his popularity, and drove some of his friends into the opposition ranks. The original anti-Leislerians were not conciliated, and were unwearied in their efforts to influence the home government against him. These efforts were not without some apparent success, for in about eighteen months after his arrival, it began to be whispered about that he would soon be recalled. His death (March 5, 1701) made a vacancy before his opponents could anticipate it by removal.

The opposite party were now quite sure that the next governor, whoever he might be, would favor their faction. Nor were they mistaken. So sure were they, that before Bellomont's burial a prominent member of the opposition wrote to the English ministry, recommending certain of his friends to the Council, under the firm belief that the Leislerians would be removed. Among the names was that of Brandt Schuyler. There is little doubt that had he lived he would have reached that position sooner or later. It was the highest in the province to which a native New Yorker could then aspire.

Lieutenant-Governor Nanfan was a brother-in-law of Bellomont, and was firmly attached to his party. He was in the West Indies when the governor died, but on his return succeeded to the government. His short administration was decidedly partisan, and became notorious by the trial and conviction of Nicholas Bayard and Alderman Hutchings for high treason. Nanfan was ambitious, and would have been greatly pleased to be left, for a time at least, the acting governor of the colony. He was profuse in pledges to the ministry to be impartial in his administration, and for a while seemed to regard his promises. He appointed Thomas Noel, an anti-Leislerian, mayor of the

city, and Abraham Gouverneur, Leislerian, recorder, in October, 1701. But he soon forgot his pledges, and, under the manipulation of the Council, became arbitrary and reckless. It was during his administration, as we have seen, that Brandt Schuyler had such an exciting contest to secure his seat in the Common Council. He won the place, but did not live to enjoy it.

In the fall of 1698, the friends of Leisler made application to the officers of the church for permission to bury his remains in the graveyard of the church. Their reply is worth preserving, as showing how neatly they extricated themselves from a dilemma. The congregation was divided in politics; the minister and leading members being anti-Leislerian, while many influential men belonged to the opposite party. There was great bitterness between the two factions, and it was difficult to please both, however the officers might decide. They gave the following reply to the application:

"Because we are pressed by both parties in the congregation, and wishing to preserve peace in our church, we cannot consent thereto, but we shall not hinder it.

"THOMAS DE KAY.
"JOHANNES KIP.
"BRANDT SCHUYLER."

The graveyard surrounded the church, and was not difficult of access. "We shall not hinder it" was interpreted to mean—the remains of Leisler and Milborne may be buried there, if you take the responsibility. They were accordingly disinterred at night from the foot of the gallows on which they had been executed, and by torchlight deposited in the cemetery of the Nether Dutch Church of New York. The proceeding caused an unusual excitement, and aroused afresh the old animosities. Even the

governor, Lord Bellomont, watched the proceedings, and made mention of them in a letter to the Lords of Trade.

Brandt Schuyler died in the prime of life, ere he had reaped the full reward of his business enterprise, or reached the goal of his political ambition. I have not been able to learn the exact date of his death. His name is attached to the petition of the Protestants of New York to King William III., dated December 30, 1701, and that is the last time that it appears in the records to which I have had access. His will is dated January 11, 1700, to which is attached a codicil, dated "25th Anno Dom. 1702," the month being omitted. The will was not offered for probate until April 18, 1723. It is probable that he died soon after signing the codicil, in the winter or early spring of 1702, as may be inferred from other papers in my possession. He left three minor sons to the care of their widowed mother.

GENEALOGICAL TABLE.

BRANDT SCHUYLER'S DESCENDANTS.

6. BRANDT SCHUYLER, b. December 18, 1659.
m. July 12, 1682, *Cornelia Van Cortlandt*, bp. November 28, 1655.
136. PHILIP, bp. November 6, 1683.
m. August 28, 1713, *Ann Elizabeth Staats*, bp. December 21, 1690.
137. OLOF, bp. December 19, 1686, d. s. p.
138. JOHN, bp. January 15, 1690, d. s. p.

136. PHILIP SCHUYLER and *Ann Elizabeth Staats.*
139. JOHANNA, bp. October 17, 1714.
140. BRANDT, bp. July 21, 1717, d. August 15, 1752.
m. April 16, 1741, *Margareta Van Wyck.*
141. SAMUEL, bp. June 7, 1719.

140. BRANDT SCHUYLER and *Margareta Van Wyck.*
142. JOHANNA, m. *William Lupton.*
143. CATHARINE, m. *Cornelis Switz.*
144. SAMUEL, m. June 27, 1770, *Elizabeth Clopper.*
145. ANN ELIZABETH, m. March 29, 1769, *John J. Bleecker.*

144. SAMUEL SCHUYLER and *Elizabeth Clopper.*
146. ELIZABETH, m. *Rev. Gerardus Cuypers.*
147. CATHARINE, m. *Cornelis Van Alen.*
148. MARGARET, m. *George Harson.*
149. ANNA, m. *John Elting.*
150. PETER CLOPPER, m. —— *Lamb*, d. s. p.
151. SAMUEL, d. s. p. in West Indies.
152. ABRAHAM LEFFERTS, m. *Elizabeth Voris.*

152. ABRAHAM LEFFERTS SCHUYLER and *Elizabeth Voris.*
153. ELIZA, m. *Edward Van Olingen.*
154. SAMUEL, m. *Catharine W. V. Boyd.*
155. MARIA, m. *Rev. J. S. Davis.*
156. CORNELIUS V. A., m. *Eliza Shaw.*
157. ABRAHAM L., died in infancy.
158. PETER C., m. *Hannah C. Kingsland.*
159. JANE ANN, m. *David Miller.*

It is seen by the foregoing table that the descendants of Brandt Schuyler (6) are very few. The reasons are obvious: the families were not large, and for four generations there was only one in each to continue the line of direct descent.

The wife of Philip Schuyler (136) was the daughter of Samuel Staats, of New York, who was a prominent man in the politics of his times. He was a leading adviser of Jacob Leisler, and a member of his Council. Under the administrations of Sloughter and Fletcher he was in retirement. Bellomont made him a member of his Council, 1698, in which he retained a seat until June, 1702, when he was removed by Lord Cornbury. He was restored to the Board by Governor Hunter, in 1710, and remained a member until his death. Staats was undoubtedly a shrewd politician. Before Leisler's fall he had withdrawn from his Council, and thereby escaped trial for treason, for which others less conspicuous were tried and convicted. It is curious to observe how quickly the political animosities of those days were forgotten by families apparently the most antagonistic. Dr. Staats was one of Leisler's main supporters when Brandt Schuyler and Stephanus Van Cortlandt were arrested and prosecuted, and yet within a few years their sons married his daughters on the same day.

Professor Pearson, in the "First Settlers of Albany," says: "It is said that Samuel Staats learned his profession in Holland, and on his return settled in New Amsterdam. When the province surrendered to the English, in 1664, he went back to Holland, where he remained until 1688, and then returned to New York."

Gouverneur Kemble said that Dr. Staats' first wife "was an East Indian Begum, or Princess, whom he married while holding an appointment in India, obtained for him

by William of Orange, and with whom and his children he returned to Holland, and thence to New York."

He was only seven years old when the English took possession of New York, and twenty-two when his first child was baptized in the Dutch Church of that city. Professor Pearson's authority is not trustworthy, or the doctor was precocious. Mr. Kemble was misled, probably by some family tradition, for Samuel Staats' first wife, and the mother of his children, was plain Johanna Rynders, of Albany, whose father was a smith, and not a prince. Family traditions are oftentimes curious and interesting, but seldom trustworthy.[1]

Dr. Samuel Staats died September 27, 1715, as recorded by Isaac Gouverneur, his son-in-law, in his Bible, which adds: "His age was 58 years in the month of May last past."

BRANDT SCHUYLER (140) died at an early age. The following notice of his death was contained in the *Weekly Post Boy*, August 17, 1752:

"Monday last departed this Life, after a very lingering Illness, Brandt Schuyler Esq. Deputy Mayor, and Alderman of the South Ward of this City; in which last Post he had been successively chosen for several Years past."

His widow, in the following October, advertised to sell a farm or plantation of eighty acres, situated near Greenwich on the North River, "with the stock of cattle and horses; and a fine young negro fellow used to the farm."

ANN ELIZABETH SCHUYLER (145) was born after her father's death. At an early age she developed a taste for literature and a talent for making verses. Colonel Stone,

[1] Another and probably equally veracious tradition is that the Staats family are descendants from a certain Rear-Admiral Joachim Ghyse, who captured a Spanish fleet, and as a recompense was given the name of Staats and a coat of arms engraved on a gold gorget.

in his "Life of Joseph Brant," relates the story of her flight from the Indians in 1777, and in a foot-note says: "It was taken from Kettell's biographical sketches of American poets. Her memoirs and her poems were published many years ago, but I have sought in vain among the libraries and among the Bleeckers to obtain a copy." More fortunate than Mr. Stone, I have been able to procure a perfect copy, containing an engraved portrait of the author by Tiebout. It is a duodecimo volume of xvii. and 375 pages, the title of which reads: "Posthumous Works of Ann Eliza Bleecker, in Prose and Verse. To which is added, A Collection of Essays, Prose and Poetical, by Margaretta V. Faugeres. New York. T. & J. Swords. 1793."

On the fly-leaf is written, "Jn°. Allan, 1802." Besides the publishers' address and a list of subscribers, among whom was DeWitt Clinton, it contains the memoirs of Mrs. Bleecker, written by her daughter, Mrs. Faugeres; the works of Mrs. Bleecker, consisting of two prose articles of some length, one the "History of Maria Kittle," the other the "Story of Henry and Anne," both narratives of facts in the lives of two of her neighbors at Tomhanack; several letters addressed to friends and relatives; and thirty-six poetical pieces, the longest of which, "Joseph," occupies fourteen pages. Of the 375 pages in the book, the contributions of Mrs. Faugeres cover 113.

The story of her own life, as gathered from her memoirs and letters, is quite as interesting and pathetic as anything she wrote.

Although unborn when her father made his will, Anne Elizabeth (changed to Ann Eliza) Schuyler shared by that instrument equally with her brother and sisters in the estate, which was considerable. She was less than seven-

teen years old when, on March 29, 1769, she married John J. Bleecker, of New Rochelle, a great-grandson of Jan Jansen Bleecker, of Albany, the American ancestor of the numerous families of that name. His grandmother was Catalyna, daughter of David Schuyler and Catalyna Ver Planck.

Soon after their marriage they removed to Poughkeepsie, where they remained about two years, when they removed to Tomhanack, now Schaghticoke, where Mr. Bleecker possessed some landed property. He built a house in a pleasant locality, commanding delightful prospects and surrounded by forest trees, in which he settled his little family. He had studied law, but had abandoned the profession and engaged in agriculture, as more congenial to his tastes. He was a kind and affectionate husband, and encouraged his wife to cultivate her literary tastes. Their fortune enabled them to live in a style becoming their education and acquirements, without reference to the economies of ordinary farmers. They were fond of their friends, and their house was always open for their entertainment. For a few years their lives flowed on in uninterrupted enjoyment. But the country was in the throes of revolution, and they could not long escape the vicissitudes of war. Their retreat lay in the path of armies, and was soon invaded by the enemy.

When Burgoyne, on his march down the Hudson, approached their neighborhood, with swarms of savages on his wings, Mr. Bleecker hastened to Albany to obtain accommodations for his family until the danger was past, leaving his wife and two young children to the care of his servants and neighbors. He had hardly been gone a day when Mrs. Bleecker, while at the breakfast-table, received intelligence that Burgoyne's Indians were within two miles, burning the dwellings and killing the people. A

mother's instinct to protect her little ones deprived her of reflection. Without stopping a moment to order a carriage, or make the slightest preparation for a journey, she took her youngest child on her arm, and the other, a girl of four years, by the hand, and fled, accompanied only by a young servant-girl. She joined a throng of fugitives, all so intent on their own safety that they did not observe, or apparently care for, the poor mother and her children. When worn down with anxiety and fatigue, she procured a place in a wagon for the little ones, and herself walked by their side. At last she reached Lansingburgh, where she had friends and acquaintances, among whom she had hoped to find a temporary resting-place. Some of them had enjoyed her hospitality, but they declined to receive her when she knocked at their doors. At last a rich old acquaintance admitted her to sleep in his garret, with a pair of blankets and the floor for her bed. Poor mother! she could not sleep, but sat and wept through the night. In view of this dismal night, she afterward exclaimed, in a letter to a friend, "Curst be the heart that is callous to the feelings of humanity." Her husband met her in the morning and conveyed her to Albany. Unable to find suitable lodgings in the city, they took passage on a vessel, hoping to find some place of rest and safety farther down the river. On their way the youngest child sickened and suddenly died. It was buried on the bank of the river, in a coffin prepared from a dining-table. The mother's heart was well-nigh broken, but there were other trials in store for her.

They arrived at Red Hook, and were received in the house of a relative. Here she met her mother, who had been spending some weeks with her at Tomhanack, and had left her just before her flight. She was now wasted to a shadow by her sorrows and afflictions, which had

been more than she could bear, and died within a few days in the arms of her daughter. Not long afterwards Burgoyne and his army surrendered to the patriots, and Mr. Bleecker with his family set out on their return to their desolate and plundered home. They arrived in Albany in time to stand by the deathbed of Mrs. Bleecker's only remaining sister, Mrs. Switz.

They arrived at Tomhanack late in the fall, and passed the winter in tolerable comfort, although the Indians had spared little in their house or fields.

The capture of Burgoyne relieved the country from pressing danger, but did not wholly secure the northern frontiers. They were yet open to the incursions of small parties of Indians and tories, who came for plunder and for prisoners. It was the policy of the British to keep the northern borders in constant alarm by parties from Canada, and thus, by detaining the men to guard their own homes, weaken the armies of the patriots. Such plundering parties were made up chiefly of tories and disaffected persons, who had fled to Canada. They knew the houses where the most plunder could be found, and, disguising themselves as Indians, they would steal through the forests, and suddenly swoop down on some unguarded neighborhood, committing acts of more savage cruelty than the savages themselves.

In the winter of 1779, thirty of these miscreants fell upon some of the inhabitants of Tomhanack, and then followed a scene of terror impossible to describe. Mr. Bleecker was much from home on the public service, being an ardent lover of the liberal cause, leaving his family to the care of servants. On this occasion they fled as before, but with more method and preparation. They reached Coeymans in safety, and found asylum with a distant relative of Mrs. Bleecker's grandmother, Anne

Elizabeth Staats, wife of Philip Schuyler, for whom she was named. They returned to Tomhanack in the spring, but they lived amid danger and excitement.

In August, 1781, Mr. Bleecker, on returning from the harvest-field toward the close of the day, was taken by a few tories and British soldiers within sight of his house. His captors hurried him into concealment, and then showed their orders from Colonel St. Leger for his capture. They had been on the watch several days from their hiding-place overlooking his farm, and had become so impatient of the delay that they had resolved to take him from his bed that same night. They securely bound his arms with cords, and obliged him to accompany them through the forests, travelling at night and lying concealed by day. On the fourth day, when they imagined themselves secure from pursuit, a party of Vermonters unexpectedly pounced upon them, and compelled them to surrender. Meantime, Mrs. Bleecker sat waiting for the return of her husband from the harvest-field, until becoming alarmed she sent out a messenger, who soon returned with the intelligence that he had found the team tied to a tree, but could find no trace of Mr. Bleecker. His poor wife, believing that he had been captured, alarmed the neighbors, who searched in vain. Despairing of ever seeing him again, she retired to Albany, and was kindly received by sympathizing friends. On the sixth day after his capture her husband joined her; her joy was overwhelming. The reaction brought on a fever, followed by a long and severe illness, from which she never fully recovered.

They again returned to Tomhanack; but they were never safe. In the following summer another attempt was made to capture Mr. Bleecker. A party of five men, headed by a notorious tory, lay concealed three days near

their house, but were frightened away before they could accomplish their purpose. With failing health Mrs. Bleecker assumed an air of cheerfulness, and corresponded with her friends as usual. Her kind husband tried every expedient to counteract the disease which was slowly wasting her strength and life. She accompanied him on journeys of business or pleasure into Vermont and western Massachusetts, but all without avail. Conscious that she had not long to live, she wrote a pathetic farewell letter to her brother, in May, 1783, in which she recounted some of her past experiences and sufferings, and said she had "given her little history, that you may see I die of a broken heart."

As a last expedient, Mr. Bleecker took her to New York, peace having been made, although the British troops had not yet left the city. He had hoped a visit to her old home might have a favorable influence on her health and spirits, and perhaps snatch her from the grave. It was a sad disappointment. A large part of the city had been devastated by fire early in the war, and still lay in ruins. The houses of parents, relatives, and friends were gone, and she with difficulty found the places where they had stood. Her relatives and old friends had not yet returned from the various parts of the country in which they had found refuge when the British army had occupied the city. Some were dead, while a few had left the country never to return. There were none to greet her with a kindly welcome, and she turned away with a heart more sad and heavy than when she arrived. She returned to her country home, where after a few months she quietly closed her eyes in the "sleep that knows no waking." She died at the early age of thirty-one years.

IV.

ARENT SCHUYLER.

ARENT SCHUYLER, the fourth son of Philip Schuyler and Margarita Van Slichtenhorst, was born in Beverwyck, June 25, 1662. Nothing is known of his boyhood or education. He received sufficient instruction in the schools to fit him for a business life, and it is probable that, like the young men of his time, he completed his education on the lakes and rivers, among the forests and mountains of the interior, on trading tours with the Indians.

In July, 1684, having fitted himself to pursue the business of a merchant, and having acquired some capital with which to commence, he began his preparations for marriage and housekeeping. He bought a house on Pearl Street, "where the eagle hangs out," of his mother, for two hundred beavers, to be paid in two instalments. He already occupied the house, and instead of a door-plate he hung out a live eagle in a cage for his name, Arent meaning eagle. He married Jenneke Teller, on November 26, 1684. She was the daughter of William Teller, who had come from Holland in 1639, and had settled in Albany, where after a few years of employment by the West India Company he engaged in trade, which he followed for fifty years, and then removed with his sons to New York. A few months after his marriage, Arent Schuyler and his wife made a joint will, which, written in Dutch, is preserved among the original records of Albany. They appeared before a notary public, who wrote :

"The worthy Mr. Arent Schuyler and Jenneke Teller, lawfully wedded husband and wife, living here in Albany, both sound in body and mind, able to walk and stand, memory and speech unimpaired, who together having meditated on the certainty of death, and the uncertainty of the hour of it, and moved by their mutual affection and love, have directed, without being persuaded or influenced by anybody, to have their last will and testament drawn up.

"They first and above all commend their souls to God Almighty, and their bodies to a Christian burial.

"They desire that the survivor shall remain possessed of and inherit all the estate and personal property, house, lot, movables and immovables, jewels, silver and gold, coined and uncoined, linen, wool, merchandise, furniture, and all and everything, which they now possess, or may hereafter possess (may he or she remarry or not), without being held to pay over to the parents, friends, or anybody else, even a stiver's worth, much less to deliver an inventory, or to give security, for the survivor shall remain absolute heir, administrator, and executor of the entire estate, even as if they were still both alive."

After making provision for any children that "hereafter may be born," and prohibiting any interference by the magistrates or orphan-masters, they declare this to be their last will and testament, and sign, "Arent Schuyler, Yenke Teller."

For the next five years Arent Schuyler is supposed to have been actively engaged in his business, meantime discharging some of the public duties of a good citizen. At one time he served on a committee for providing fuel and other comforts for the houses occupied by the Indians on their trading expeditions to Albany. He was one of the committee to raise funds by subscription to erect fortifications and prepare defences against expected attacks of the enemy. He actively participated in the pro-

ceedings of the Albany Convention in opposition to the pretensions of Jacob Leisler.

After the destruction of Schenectady, in 1690, the Albany Convention surrendered the fort and city to Leisler, but its supporters were none the less active in the defence of the province against the encroachments of the French. Leisler's commissioners sent out a small detachment of soldiers to take a position at Crown Point and watch the motions of the French. Shortly afterward Captain Abraham Schuyler, with nine whites and some friendly Indians, was directed to proceed to Otter creek and remain four weeks, keeping close watch of the lake and surrounding country. Arent Schuyler joined this party, and while on duty volunteered to lead a company of scouts into Canada. The scouting party consisted of eight Indians, Schuyler being the only white man. They went through the lake and forests, and down the river Sorel to Fort Chambly, and under its walls they "killed two, and took one Frenchman prisoner." He was the first man of the English or Dutch to lead a hostile party from this province into Canada. Hitherto the Five Nations had fought the French without the aid of their English allies. Thenceforward the war was conducted mainly by the English. Arent Schuyler's courage and success on this occasion gained him credit, and prepared the way for his advancement. He was commissioned a captain, and soon acquired considerable reputation in his new profession. In August, 1692, information was received by the acting governor, Ingoldesby, that a delegation of southern Indians, who had been at war with the Five Nations, was on the way to visit their enemies and sue for peace. They had arrived at the Delaware River, and were waiting for permission to continue their journey. The governor and Council considered this an important

business, which required wisdom in its management, on account of the sensitiveness of the Five Nations to outside interference in their affairs. They finally concluded that Captain Arent Schuyler, who was then in New York, should be despatched to meet them, and conduct them to the governor and Council. He was provided with instructions, and with the usual belts of wampum, as well as with letters of credit to the governor of Pennsylvania to cover extraordinary expenses. Only six days afterward he returned with the "far Indians, called Shawanoes, and some Senecas, who had been travelling together for nine years." He had been expeditious, considering the state of the country and the absence of roads. His itinerary and expense account give some interesting information as to the country and his route. On August 13th, he charges an item for ferriage at Elizabethtown; on the 14th, lodging and horse-hire; on the 15th, for horse-hire to the Falls (Trenton) and a guide to the Indians; on the 16th, for two Holland shirts to be given to the Indian chiefs, expenses for self and Indians at Raritan, and expenses at Woodbridge; on the 17th, for horse-hire from Benjamin Cluet's to Elizabethtown, when he settled with Mr. Whitehead, who had been his guide to the Falls and back; on the 18th, his expenses at Elizabethtown, and ferriage from Davitt's. At New York he charges for "butcher's meat, crackers, and peas," furnished the Indians by direction of the governor. After his arrival he was charged with the duty of providing for the wants and comforts of the Indians, and purchased for their use "fourteen gallons single beer, fish, bread, and oysters." When they were ready to leave, he furnished them with provisions for their journey to the Minisink country, and a belt of wampum to be sent to the Five Nations to announce their coming to Albany. The most singular feat-

ure of the account was its small amount—only £12. 5. 11. currency.

The report of his first interview with these Indians, on the Delaware River, is an interesting document to the antiquarian. Space forbids its insertion at length. I only indicate a few points. The same formalities were observed as in negotiations with the Five Nations. He addressed them as brethren, and presented a belt at the end of each proposition. In turn, they addressed him as Corlaer, as though they were speaking to the governor of New York.

"Brethren,

"The Governor was pleased to hear that you were come to make peace with the Indians under his government. He has sent me to conduct you to him, when he will send you to the Five Nations at Albany. [A belt.]

"Brethren,

"The Governor promises to protect you on your journey from all harm, and will use his best efforts to procure for you a lasting peace." [A belt.]

Matiset, supposed to be a Minisink sachem, replied:

"Father Corlaer,

"For three years I have been wandering, and at last came to the head of the lakes, where the French have a small fort commanded by Mons. Tonti. He inquired of me, what I was doing there; and whither I was going? I told him I was going to my country, and to my Father Corlaer. Do you not know, said he, your father Corlaer is dead? I have killed him, and burnt his country.[1] Therefore, Sachem Matiset, tarry with me; and as a token of my friendship, I give you my coat with silver lace. I answered, the coat will not make me a sachem here. I will rather go to my land, and see for myself, whether my

[1] Probably meaning the Seneca country, which Tonti assisted Denonville to invade in 1687.

father Corlaer and my brethren are dead. There will I again make my fire. Mons. Tonti again said, you have queer notions in your head. Certainly you have some new design. But let me tell you this, you and all the Shawanoes you take with you will be killed. Then said I, I fear you not, for to-morrow I will leave for New York. Then spoke the sachem of the Shawanoes: I will stop Mons. Tonti's ears. I will go with you; and where you lead I will follow. To him I answered; That is good. My land shall be your land. The Shawanoes replied; but I fear the Mohawks. Why fear? said I. Corlaer is my father, and the Dutch are my friends. But said he, where is your land? I have been everywhere, and have found no good land. Minisink, I replied, is my land. There shall we live. My brethren, the Dutch, live in New York, and they are good. When you see them, you will know they are good. He answered, if they are good, as you say, then surely we will go with you, and live in your land."

When these Indians arrived in New York, they had an interview with Ingoldesby and the Council. They rehearsed the story told to Captain Schuyler, Matiset being the chief speaker, the Shawanoes only saying, that they had come to see the country, and, if they liked it, to open the way for their nation. They were satisfied, and now desired that some Christians should be appointed to go back with them to their country, and conduct their whole nation hither with all their possessions. The next day Ingoldesby gave them another reception, and a cordial invitation to return with all their tribe, and settle permanently in the province, promising them a hearty welcome, and all the protection that they might require. After distributing suitable presents, they were dismissed, apparently pleased with Matiset's Dutch friends. A few days later it was determined in Council, that their request to

have some Christians accompany them home should be granted, and Captain Arent Schuyler was commissioned to raise a company of thirty men for this purpose.

Governor Benjamin Fletcher arrived on August 28th, and continued the negotiations with the stranger Indians. Their arrival and reception was soon made known to the Five Nations, who were suspicious of the object. Major Peter Schuyler wrote to the governor acquainting him with the suspicions of "our ancient allies," and warning him to proceed cautiously. A letter was immediately despatched, assuring the Five Nations that it was not intended to make any treaty, much less a peace, without their consent. Not long afterward some Indians, who had formerly lived on the Hudson River, probably at Esopus, called to see the governor. They had been long absent from their native country, living among the Shawanoes. They now announced their intentions of settling at the Minisink, where the fires of their relatives yet burned, and they asked the like privilege for the far Indians, whom they had brought with them, for they had been adopted by the Minisinks, their friends and relatives. The governor replied, that if they first made peace with the Five Nations, he would extend his protection over them. He therefore advised them to go, without delay, and arrange terms with the Five Nations, when all would be well. With the Minisinks there was already a chain of friendship, which he would firmly maintain.

The governor went to Albany, in the latter part of September, to confer with the Five Nations. On his return to New York, he informed the Council that the Iroquois and the Shawanoes had buried the hatchet.

Captain Schuyler organized a company of Dutchmen to accompany the Shawanoes back to their home far in the southwest, and placed it under the command of Arnout

Cornelise Viele, a brave man, and one acquainted with the Indian language. We shall learn something of this expedition hereafter.

Arent Schuyler commanded a company of militia in the campaign, February, 1693, when the French and Indians were driven from the Mohawk country by Major Peter Schuyler. In the pursuit, Captains Arent Schuyler and Mathews led the advance, and, having overtaken the enemy, would have attacked him, had they not been prevented by the Mohawk warriors, who feared that their women and children, then prisoners to the French, might be sacrificed. At the close of this campaign Arent Schuyler had been engaged in military affairs over three years, during which time his business had been neglected, and probably ruined. The war continued, and Albany, as a frontier town, was still exposed to the raids of the enemy, requiring the utmost vigilance of its citizens to protect themselves from impending danger. The old factions, quieted for a time, broke out afresh. Trade was destroyed, and the bonds of society were loosed. All things considered, his native city was no longer a desirable residence for an enterprising young man with a growing family, and he accordingly sought a more desirable locality. His brother Brandt and his sister Gertrude were married and settled in New York, as were also several members of his wife's family. He resolved to join them, and to begin life anew. He removed to New York before February, 1694, and resumed his business as a merchant.

Arent Schuyler was well acquainted with the Indian languages as spoken by the Five Nations, and other tribes along the Hudson, with whom the Dutch and English had frequent intercourse. He knew their habits and customs, and in other respects was well adapted to negotiations with them. These qualities commended him to the lieutenant-

governor and Council as a fit person to meet the Shawanoes on the Delaware River and conduct them to New York. He had accomplished the whole business relating to these Indians so well and satisfactorily to the authorities, that his services were again called into requisition in a similar capacity. The French, ever active and solicitous to extend their influence among the various native tribes, and thus gain positions at different points, declined no undertaking however hazardous to secure their objects. Wherever there was an apparent opening for a priest or fort, they sent their emissaries to explore the ground. Whenever the opportunity was presented, in war or peace, to damage their hereditary enemies, the English, they improved it.

At a Council held on February 3, 1694, Governor Fletcher presented a communication from Governor Hamilton, of New Jersey, announcing that there were one hundred Frenchmen and fifty French Indians in the Minisink country to debauch the Minisink Indians. The report did not seem credible, as the country of the Minisinks, lying on the Delaware and Minisink Rivers, was remote from Canada, with that of the Five Nations lying between. It was considered prudent, however, to send a trusty messenger for more certain intelligence, as there was no knowing what the Canadians might undertake. Arent Schuyler was selected for this delicate and somewhat hazardous mission.

He was instructed to proceed forthwith to the Minisink country, and learn whether there were any French or French Indians there ; if any, how many, and what their business. If he found any considerable numbers, he was to return, with all possible despatch, and report to the governor ; if only a few, then he was to induce the Minisink Indians to take them prisoners, and send them to New

York. He started on his journey at once, although it was late in the afternoon, stopping over night at Bergentown, where he hired two men and a guide. Thence to his destination the country was wild, and occupied by the native population. The next day he reached an Indian village, eight miles beyond the Hackensack. The third day he travelled northwest thirty-two miles through snow and sleet, and the next day crossed the Neversink, camping at night within half a day's journey of the Minisink village. He arrived at his destination on the fifth day in the morning, and learned that there were no French there, nor had there been. "But should any come," said the Indians, "we will report to the governor." He left on his return the same day, and arrived in New York on the 10th, having been absent about six days.

While at Minisink he learned some news of a gratifying character. A few days before his visit, three white men and two Shawanoes Indians had stopped there, on their way to Albany, to procure ammunition for Arnout Viele, who was on his return with seven hundred Shawanoes laden with beaver and peltries. Viele had been absent about fifteen months, and was not expected home until the next June. This was the first news from him since he left with the Shawanoes delegation. He did not arrive as soon as he was expected by the report of his messengers. It was not until August that he reached the Minisink village, and thence proceeded to Kingston, where Fletcher met him and gave audience to the Indians. The story they told was a sad one. They had been pursued by their enemies, who had interfered with their hunting, despoiled them of their furs, and killed some of them, as well as same of Viele's men. They had now arrived, not laden with the riches they had promised, but poor, unable even to purchase ammunition, much less to pay the money ad-

vanced to their sachems two years before. The governor answered them kindly, and encouraged them to hope for better times. Three months later he received them under the protection of the government, and supplied them with means to pursue their hunting. The Five Nations gave them lands on the Susquehanna River, on which they settled and remained until their lands were sold out to Pennsylvania. They then removed to the Ohio. A century later, their great warrior-chief, Tecumseh, repaid the debt of his ancestors to the Dutch of Albany by waging a barbarous war against their countrymen of the west. He finally fell in battle by the hand of a future vice-president of the United States.

Arent Schuyler's public career closed with his mission to the Minisinks, except that in 1709 he was requested by the governor of New Jersey to summon the Minisink sachems to a conference at Perth Amboy. He continued his residence in New York until 1701–2, when he removed to Pompton Plains, N. J. Like other prosperous men of the period, he gave attention to real estate as an investment of surplus capital. In 1685 he procured a license to purchase a tract of land not far from Kingston. In 1691, with his brother-in-law, Caspar Teller, and Samuel Bayard, he obtained leave to buy of the Indians fifteen hundred acres on the west side of Hudson River, at a place called Dan's Chamber (Danskamer, or Dance Chamber). Three years afterward, Caspar Teller being dead, he and Bayard petitioned to have the land surveyed, wishing to build saw-mills and prepare timber. In 1695 he, with Samuel Bayard and Anthony Brockholls, procured a patent for 5,500 acres of land at Pequannock (Pompton Plains). One can easily imagine, that on his journey to the Minisinks, the year before, he had seen the beautiful plains, surrounded by high hills and traversed in various

directions by small rivers, and had then formed the plan of making a portion of them his own. He doubtless believed it one of the most desirable localities in the neighborhood of New York, and induced his friends Bayard and Brockholls to join him in founding a new settlement. In 1696 an Indian sachem deeded to him a thousand acres of land on the Minisink River, for which Governor Fletcher granted him a patent in 1697.

The precise date of Schuyler's removal from New York to Pompton is not known. His son William was baptized in New York, on June 2, 1700, and, as a resident of New York, signed a petition of the Protestants to the king in December, 1701. He was living at Pompton when he made his second will, on October 18, 1706. Brockholls, one of his partners in the Pompton lands, may have preceded him a few years. Party politics were exceedingly bitter. Under the administration of Bellomont, the Leislerians made matters warm for their opponents, among whom were classed the adherents of the Roman Catholic faith. There were then only ten persons of that religion residents of New York, of whom Brockholls was one. They found their position so uncomfortable that several of them removed from the province, Brockholls seeking refuge in the wilds of New Jersey.

Schuyler's wife, Jenneke Teller, died in 1700, and in 1703 he married Swantie Dyckhuyse (marriage-license dated December 12, 1702). After the birth of their first son, John, he made his second will, in which he devised a house on Broadway, New York, to his wife Swantie for life, and after her death to his son John. To his eldest son, Philip, he gave £50. The remainder of his estate he divided equally among all his children—Philip, Margaret, Casparus, Johannes, "and such others as might be born to him." He continued his residence at Pompton

until 1710, when he moved to a large farm which he had purchased from Isaac Kingsland on New Barbadoes Neck, on the east side of the Passaic River, three miles above Newark. On this property a copper-mine was discovered by a negro slave, who, being offered as a reward anything he might ask, requested that he might have all the tobacco he could smoke, and nothing else, except "to live with massa till I die." The mine proved a source of much wealth. The ore was shipped to England for smelting, as there were no reduction works in this country.

Schuyler hitherto had been prosperous and independent, but now he was rich, and not unwilling that his friends and neighbors should know it by his outward display. He built a house, which for those days was palatial, situated on an elevation not far from the river. He purchased more lands, and surrounded his residence with drives and parks, in which were kept large numbers of deer. When he removed from Pompton, he gave his farm, and his undivided share of the lands he held with Bayard and Brockholls, to his eldest son, Philip. He now bought lands near Bordentown, on which he settled his second son, Casparus; lands on the Rahway at Elizabethtown, which he gave to his son Peter; lands at Elizabethtown Point, which he gave to his son Adoniah; houses and lots in New York City, gifts to his daughters Eve and Cornelia. He made loans on mortgages, which became the dowries of his widow and daughters. The homestead, with its lands and parks, he reserved for his favorite son, John.

His prosperity could not close his doors to sickness and death. The wife of his youth had died. Three of her six children had followed her, or gone before. And now his second wife, the mother of his five younger children, died at the age of thirty-eight years. After a time he soothed his grief, forgot his former political animosities, and mar-

ried his third wife, Maria, daughter of Robert Walter and granddaughter of Jacob Leisler. The date of this marriage is not known, but is supposed to have been not long before the date of his third will, December, 1724.

When he made his third and last will, he had a much larger estate than twenty years before, when the second was executed. In this he leaves to his son Philip one-third of twelve hundred acres of land at Pompton and Pequannock, held in common with Samuel Bayard and the heirs of Anthony Brockholls, with twenty-five pounds in cash; to his son Casparus, to whom he had made a deed of gift of five hundred acres of land at Wingworth Point, on the Delaware River within the township of Bordentown, *five shillings;* to his son John, the homestead farm, with all the personal thereon and in the house; to his son Peter, his large house and grounds in Elizabethtown, with seven hundred and eighty-seven acres of land near the Rahway River; to his son Adoniah, his "large house and tract and pieces of land, and the house and small pieces of land at Elizabethtown Point;" to his daughters Eve and Cornelia, the house and two lots on Broadway, New York, with an *Indian slave woman* to each; to each of the four children of his eldest daughter, Margaret Oliver, deceased, £250; to each of my sons "who may be born of my present wife, the same in amount as to each of my sons John, Peter, and Adoniah; and to daughters that may be born, the same as to my daughters Eve and Cornelia;" to his wife Mary, besides what was given her in the marriage-contract, the use of his carriages and horses, house and farm-slaves, until the marriage of John, when, if she wished to live apart, his executors were directed to provide for her "suitably and sufficiently;" lastly, to his sons John, Peter, and Adoniah, the profits of the mine, share and share alike.

His accumulations during the next six years were large, and on October 30, 1730, he made a codicil to his last will, in which there are some changes and other bequests. He gave to Casparus, in addition, £50 yearly for life; to his wife, £2,500, besides the £1,500 in the marriage-contract;[1] to Eve and Cornelia, each £3,000 and one-half of the house and lot in Smith's Fly, New York; to his grandson Arent, son of Philip Schuyler, £1,000, payable at his majority. He revoked the item devising to John all the slaves and other personal property on the homestead farm, and divided them equally between John, Peter, Adoniah, Eve, and Cornelia. The will and codicil were proved in New York on November 22, 1730, and in New Jersey on June 14, 1732.

He left no legacies outside of his family. Benevolent societies had no existence, the Church being the medium through which eleemosynary contributions were dispensed. Its benevolence was chiefly confined to the poor of its individual congregations. Whatever Arent Schuyler did in this direction was done while living. He was an officer in the Reformed Dutch Church, which, soon after his settlement on the Passaic, he had assisted in organizing at Belleville. To this church, in 1729, he gave £150 as the commencement of a fund for the pastor's salary, to which he added soon after another gift of £300. After his death, his widow and five children, in respect to his memory, each contributed to the fund £50. In 1739 John added £150, raising the total amount of the fund to £850. At the time of this last gift, an arrangement was made be-

[1] Maria, or Mary, Walter, widow of Arent Schuyler, married secondly, in December, 1736, Archibald Kennedy, the receiver-general and collector of customs of New York. She made her will on April 9, 1764, which was proved May 23, 1764. Kennedy was a connection by marriage of Governor Burnet, whose father, the Bishop, had married a daughter of the Earl of Cassillis.

tween the church and the donor, by which the right to vote on calling a minister, as also the right to sign the call, was given to Colonel John Schuyler and his successors forever. The consistory bound themselves and their successors not to invite a clergyman of another denomination to occupy the pulpit without his or their consent, provided always that they were members of the Dutch Church. In subsequent years differences arose about these arrangements, which resulted in Colonel Schuyler's withdrawal from the church, leaving the fund, however, as it was. He united with the Episcopalians, for whom he erected a house of worship in the same village.

It has been often said that Arent Schuyler was the ancestor of the New Jersey Schuylers. This is not true in fact. He was indeed the ancestor of many of them, but not of all. Dirck Schuyler, a son of Captain Abraham Schuyler, of Albany, was living in New Brunswick, N. J., in 1738, engaged in business as a merchant. Quite recently his father's Dutch Bible was discovered in possession of a descendant in the female line. It contained interesting records, which were published in the *New York Genealogical and Biographical Record.* Schuyler families are now living in New Jersey, others in Montgomery County and elsewhere in the State of New York, whose fathers or grandfathers emigrated from New Jersey, none of whom are Arent Schuyler's descendants. He had five sons, who married and settled in their father's adopted State. Their descendants are numerous, some living in their native State, others widely scattered through the United States, England, and Australia.

GENEALOGICAL TABLE.

ARENT SCHUYLER'S DESCENDANTS.

7. ARENT SCHUYLER, b. June 25, 1662, d. November, 1730.
m. November 26, 1684, *Jenneke Teller.*
160. MARGARETA, bp. September 27, 1685.
m. *Charles Oliver*, m. l. dated November 7, 1704.
161. PHILIP, bp. September 11, 1687.
m. *Hester Kingsland.*
162. MARIA, bp. October 6, 1689, d. y.
163. JUDIK, bp. March 11, 1692, d. y.
164. CASPARUS, bp. May 5, 1695, d. April 13, 1754.
m. 1, *Jane* ——.
m. 2, *Mary* ——, d. December, 1773.
165. WILLIAM, bp. June 2, 1700, d. y.

7. ARENT SCHUYLER, m. January, 1703, *Swantie Dyckhuyse.*
165. JOHN, m. *Anne Van Rensselaer.*[1]
166. PETER, m. 1, *Hester Walter.*
m. 2, *Mary* ——.
167. ADONIAH, m. *Gertrude Van Rensselaer.*[1]
168. EVE, m. *Peter Bayard.*
169. CORNELIA, m. *Pierre de Peyster.*

161. PHILIP SCHUYLER and *Hester Kingsland.*
170. JOHANNA, b. September 2, 1713.
m. *Isaac Kingsland.*
171. ARENT, b. February 23, 1715.
m. 1, *Helen Wagenen.*
m. 2, *Rachael* ——.
172. ISAAC, b. April 26, 1716, d. y.
173. PHILIP, b. December 23, 1717.
m. —— ——.
174. ISAAC, b. September 8, 1719.
m. —— ——.

[1] Daughters of Patroon Killian Van Rensselaer, of Albany.

175. ELIZABETH, b. February 22, 1721.
m. *Rev. Benjamin Van der Linde.*
176. PETER, b. June 7, 1723.
m. *Mary Ogden*, d. s. p.
177. HESTER, b. April 12, 1725.
m. *Teunis Dey.*
178. MARIA, b. September 11, 1727.
179. JENNEKE, b. October 6, 1728.
m. —— *Board.*
180. JOHANNES, b. June 4, 1730, d. y.
181. CASPARUS, b. December 10, 1735.
m. —— *Brocas.*

164. CASPARUS SCHUYLER and *Jane* ——.
182. ARENT, m. 1, *Jennette* ——.
m. 2, *Jane Praul.*

165. JOHN SCHUYLER and *Anne Van Rensselaer.*
183. ARENT, b. October, 1746.
m. November 2, 1772, *Swan Schuyler* (188).
184. MARY.

166. PETER SCHUYLER and *Hester Walter.*
185. CATHARINE, m. *Archibald Kennedy*,[1] she d. s. p.

167. ADONIAH SCHUYLER and *Gertrude Van Rensselaer.*
186. RENSSELAER, lieutenant in the English army, d. s. p. before 1768.
187. MARY, m. *Captain Henry St. John*,[2] of the British navy, d. 1780.
188. SWAN, m. *Arent Schuyler* (183).
189. JOHN, m. February 16, 1769, *Mary Hunter.*
190. PETER.
191. ADONIAH, m. *Susan Shields*, of England.
192. PHILIP, d. s. p.

171. ARENT SCHUYLER and *Helen Van Wagenen.*
193. PHILIP, m. —— ——.
194. ADONIAH, m. —— *Bogart.*

173. PHILIP SCHUYLER and —— ——.
195. PHILIP, m. 1, —— *Berry.*
m. 2, *Eve* ——.
196. GARRIT.
197. SALLY, m. —— *Mandeville.*
198. POLLY.

174. ISAAC SCHUYLER and —— ——.
199. PHILIP, m. —— *Duryea.*

---

[1] Son of the receiver-general and collector of the port of New York.
[2] Third son of John, tenth Baron St. John of Bletsho.

181. CASPARUS SCHUYLER and —— *Brocas.*
200. HETTY, m. *William Colfax.*[1]

182. ARENT SCHUYLER and *Jennette* ——.
201. AARON,[2] m. 1, *Ann Wright.*
m. 2, *Esther Dey.*
202. JOHN, d. s. p. 1796.
203. ANN.
204. PETER.
205. ABRAHAM, buried September 29, 1767.
206. CHARLES, d. y.

182. ARENT SCHUYLER and *Jane Praul.*
207. MARY, b. October 3, 1768, d. November 20, 1768.
208. CHARLES, b. May 19, 1770.
209. ABRAHAM, b. December 12, 1772.

183. ARENT SCHUYLER and *Swan Schuyler.*
210. ANN, d. July 20, 1783, aged seven years.
211. JOHN A., b. April, 1779.
m. 1, *Eliza Kip.*
m. 2, *Catherine Van Rensselaer.*[3]

189. JOHN SCHUYLER and *Mary Hunter.*
212. ADONIAH, b. December, 1, 1769.
213. MARY, b. November 7, 1770.
214. ANTHONY HUNTER, b. September 3, 1772.
215. JOHN RENSSELAER, b. March 7, 1774.
216. ARENT, b. February 10, 1776.
m. *Ann Miller.*
217. PHILIP HENRY, b. September 21, 1777.
218. PETER, b. March 12, 1780.
m. —— ——.
219. RENSSELAER, b. September 29, 1782.
220. GERTRUDE, b. March 24, 1784.
221. SWANTIE, b. December 17, 1786.
222. JAMES, b. February 12, 1789.

193. PHILIP SCHUYLER and —— ——.
223. PETER, m. and settled at Booneville, N. Y., where he died.
224. ARENT, m. —— *Garrison.*
225. LEONORA, m. —— *Post.*

---

[1] Captain of Washington's Life Guards and grandfather of Schuyler Colfax, late vice-president of the United States.

[2] Here we find Arent erroneously translated into English by Aaron. It really corresponds to Arnold.

[3] Daughter of General Robert Van Rensselaer, of Claverack, N. Y.

194. ADONIAH SCHUYLER and —— *Bogart.*
226. CORNELIUS, m. —— *Mersalis.*
227. LEONA, m. —— *Quackenbush.*
228. ARENT, d. y.
229. ELIZABETH, m. —— *Boyd.*

195. PHILIP SCHUYLER and 1, —— *Berry.*
2, *Eve* —— .
230. JACOB.
231. GERRIT.
232. SALLY.
233. SAMUEL, d. May 11, 1867.
m. 1, *Anna Schuyler.*
m. 2, *Lydia Hilts.*
234. PHILIP.
235. BETSY.
236. ANN.
237. POLLY.
238. PEGGY.

199. PHILIP SCHUYLER and —— *Duryea.*
239. ISAAC.
240. JOHN.

201. AARON SCHUYLER and *Ann Wright.*
241. ANN, b. August 20, 1774.
242. JENNET, b. June 20, 1776.
m. *Thomas Machin.*
243. SARAH, b. July 3, 1778.
m. *John Sutton.*
244. AARON, b. January 19, 1780.
245. JOHN, b. March 13, 1783.

201. AARON SCHUYLER and *Esther Dey.*
246. ANTHONY DEY, b. October 18, 1785.
m. October 25, 1810, *Susan Ridge.*
247. PETER, b. August 29, 1788.
m. *Caroline Brother.*

211. JOHN A. SCHUYLER and *Eliza Kip.*
248. ARENT SCHUYLER, b, November 25, 1801.
m. April 24, 1828, *Mary Caroline Kingsland.*
249. HARRIET ANN, bp. February 17, 1803.
m. *Smith W. Anderson.*

211. JOHN A. SCHUYLER and *Catherine Van Rensselaer.*
250. JOHN A., d. November 21, 1855, in his 44th year.
m. *Frances Elizabeth Bleecker.*

251. ROBERT V. R., d. February 19, 1855.
m. September 9, 1851, *Kate Manchini.*
252. JACOB R., m. November 18, 1847, *Susanna Edwards.*
253. CATHERINE GERTRUDE, m. October 4, 1838, *Henry S. Craig.*

216. ARENT SCHUYLER and *Ann Miller.*
254. MARY M., m. —— *Crowninghield,* of Massachusetts.
255. LETITIA C., bp. October 7, 1804.
m. *George Powit.*
256. JOHN RENSSELAER, m. —— ——.

218. PETER SCHUYLER and —— ——.
257. PETER, b. in New York, January 27, 1809.
258. ELIZA, b. New York, September 9, 1810.
259. JAMES, b. New York, May 31, 1812.
260. ROBERT H., b. New York, June 3, 1814, d. y.
261. ROBERT, b. New York, August 9, 1816.
262. MARY GERTRUDE, b. in New York, August 1, 1817.
263. RENSSELAER, b. New York, March 4, 1821.
264. AMOS S. M., b. New York, December 5, 1824.

223. PETER SCHUYLER and —— ——.
265. PHILIP, m. in Boonville, N. Y. He had one son and three daughters. Parents and children, except one daughter, *Mrs. Louisa Bamba,* of Lynn, Mass., were deceased before February, 1879.

224. ARENT SCHUYLER and —— *Garrison.*
266. ARENT.
267. PETER.
Names of three daughters not given.

226. CORNELIUS SCHUYLER and —— *Mersalis.*
268. MARY, m. —— *Voorhis.*
269. ELIZABETH, m. *Dr.* —— *Williams.*
270. HARRIET.

233. SAMUEL SCHUYLER and *Anna Schuyler.*
271. JOHN, b. May 5, 1806; residence, Ames, Montgomery County, N. Y.
272. PHILIP, b. June 15, 1808, d. August 12, 1848.

233. SAMUEL SCHUYLER and *Lydia Hilts.*
273. SAMUEL, b. July 25, 1814.
274. ANNA, b. October 4, 1816.
275. MARY, b. November 3, 1818.
276. ELIZA, b. November 2, 1820.
277. HARRIET, b. May 5, 1822.
278. HARMAN, b. June 31, 1824; residence, Sharon Springs, N. Y.

279. NORMAN, b. October 25, 1826; residence, Orange, Schuyler County, N. Y.
280. EFFY, b. March 24, 1879.
281. DORMAN, b. September 18, 1831; residence Orange, Schuyler County, N. Y.
282. DANIEL, b. February 6, 1834.
283. PETER, b. June 11, 1836.

239. ISAAC SCHUYLER and —— ——.
284. PHILIP.
285. NICHOLAS.

244. AARON SCHUYLER and —— ——.
286. AARON.
287. RANDALL, residence, Michigan.

245. JOHN SCHUYLER and —— ——.
289. JOSEPHUS.
290. MARCUS, residence, Ohio.
291. MARY, m. *William Hoyt.*
292. JANE, m. *Jared D. Turrel.*
293. ELIZA, m. *David Searles.*
294. SARAH, m. *Abel Vannatta.*
295. JOHN.
296. SUSAN, m. —— *Thompson.*
297. AARON, president of Baldwin University, Ohio.
298. PETER.

246. ANTHONY DEY SCHUYLER and *Susan Ridge.*
299. WILLIAM RIDG, b. July 22, 1811, d. February 18, 1882.
m. May 30, 1844, *Clara Eastman.*
300. MONTGOMERY, b. January 9, 1814.
m. 1, September 7, 1836, *Sarah Sandford*, d. September 18, 1841.
m. 2, October 10, 1843, *Lydia Eliza Roosevelt*, d. October 10, 1852.
m. 3, May 29, 1854, *Sophia Elizabeth Norton.*

247. PETER SCHUYLER and *Caroline Brother.*
301. ANTHONY, b. July 8, 1816.
m. 1, December 23, 1839, *Eleanor Johnson*, d. 1849.
m. 2, January 5, 1860, *Mary Hall Allen.*
302. MARY, d. 1860.
m. *Edgar H. Hurd.*
303. MARGARETA, m. *Edgar H. Hurd.*
304. CATHERINE.
305. PETER, m. *Harriet Bostwick.*
306. CAROLINE, m. Rev. *Duncan C. Mann.*

248. ARENT HENRY SCHUYLER and *Mary C. Kingsland.*
307. HENRY K., b. March 5, 1829.
m. *Ellen Valentine.*
308. JOHN ARENT, b. February 19, 1831, d. June 15, 1870.
m. January 14, 1863, *Kate Manchini*, widow of Robert V. R. Schuyler (251).
309. SMITH A., b. November 18, 1832, d. June 26, 1870.
m. *Bessie Kneeland.*
310. EDWIN N., d. y.
311. HARRIET A., b. August 29, 1836.
m. *Sidney E. Schieffelin.*
312. SARAH K., b. August 8, 1838.
m. *S. V. C. Van Rensselaer.*
313. ARENT H., b. August 8, 1840, d. September 20, 1863.
314. RICHARD K., b. June 24, 1842.
315. MARY C., d. y.
316. CATHERINE GERTRUDE, b. August 17, 1846, d. December 16, 1866.

251. ROBERT V. R. SCHUYLER and *Kate Manchini.*
317. VAN RENSSELAER, b. July 27, 1852.

252. JACOB R. SCHUYLER and *Susanna Edwards.*
318. SARAH E.
319. RUTSEN V. R., m. February 4, 1873, *Harriet A. Millick.*
320. CATHERINE V. R.
321. SUSANNA E.
322. EDWARDS O.
323. ANGELICA V. R.

256. JOHN RENSSELAER SCHUYLER and —— ——, Canoga, N. Y.
324. JAMES MUNROE, d. July 12, 1873, aged 33 years.
325. ANN A., b. 1844.
326. JOHN RENSSELAER, b. 1846.
327. JOSEPHINE, b. 1849.

259. JAMES SCHUYLER and —— ——, California.
328. JAMES WESLEY, b. March 25, 1840, in New York.
329. CHARLES RENSSELAER, b. July 10, 1842, in New York.
330. WILLIAM HENRY HARRISON, b. June 10, 1845, in New York.
331. MARY ELIZABETH, b. October 22. 1847, in New York.
332. MARIA, b. June 10, 1850, in New York.

263. RENSSELAER SCHUYLER and —— ——, Seneca Falls, N. Y.
333. ROBERT ARENT, b. November 3, 1848.
334. MARY ELIZABETH, b. December 19, 1852.
335. JUDITH GERTRUDE, b. July 18, 1856.

297. AARON SCHUYLER and —— ——.
336. CLARA, m. *J. T. Rowes.*
337. MARY, m. *E. E. Phillips.*
338. LELIA, professor in Baldwin University, Ohio.

299. WILLIAM RIDG SCHUYLER and *Clara Eastman.*
339. WILLIAM HENRY, b. August 27, 1845, Marshall, Michigan.
340. SANDFORD EASTMAN, b, August 14, 1850.
340*a*. ANTHONY DEY, b. June 22, 1853, d. August 24, 1871.

300. MONTGOMERY SCHUYLER and *Sarah Sandford.*
341. MARY LOUISA, b. September 15, 1837, d. March 25, 1840.
341*a*. SARAH, b. October 10, 1838, d. August 17, 1839.
341*b*. ANTHONY DEY, b. March 20, 1841, d. July 31, 1841.

300. MONTGOMERY SCHUYLER and *Lydia Eliza Roosevelt.*
342. MONTGOMERY ROOSEVELT, b. February 18, 1845.
m. February 21, 1870, *Lelia Roosevelt.*
343. FRANK HAMILTON, b. September 16, 1849, d. March 4, 1851.
344. LOUIS SANDFORD, b. March 2, 1852, d. September 17, 1878.

300. MONTGOMERY SCHUYLER and *Sophia Elizabeth Norton.*
345. WILLIAM RIDG, b. May 4, 1855.
m. December 24, 1881, *Sarah Ann Remington.*
346. ELLEN GLASGOW, b. July 29, 1857.
347. WALTER NORTON, b. February 9, 1859.
348. PHILIP, b. September 4, 1861.
348*a*. MARY BERTHA, b. October 15, 1864.
348*b*. GERTRUDE LINDELL, b. March 10, 1868.
348*c*. EUGENE PASCHAL, b. February 19, 1870.
348*d*. SOPHIA NORTON, b. October 3, 1872.

301. ANTHONY SCHUYLER and *Eleanor Johnson.*
349. CHARLES B., b. May 6, 1841.
350. ELENOR, d. y.
351. MONTGOMERY, m. September 16, 1876, *Katherine Beeckman Livingston.*
352. BEN, d. y.

301. ANTHONY SCHUYLER and *Mary Hall Allen.*
353. MARGARETA, b. January 24, 1861.
354. HAMILTON, b. April 3, 1862.
355. ANTHONY, b. May 20, 1868.

307. HENRY K. SCHUYLER and *Ellen Valentine.*
356. ARENT, b. September, 25. 1860.
357. CAMPBELL V., b. July 2, 1864.

345. WILLIAM RIDG SCHUYLER and *Sarah Ann Remington.*
  345*a.* MONTGOMERY, b. January 25, 1883.
  345*b.* REMINGTON, b. July 8, 1884.

351. MONTGOMERY SCHUYLER and *Katherine Beeckman Livingston.*
  351*a.* MONTGOMERY, b. September 2, 1877.
  351*b.* PHILIP LIVINGSTON, b. February 24, 1880, d. June 29, 1880.
  351*c.* ROBERT LIVINGSTON, b. February 26, 1883.

NOTES ON ARENT SCHUYLER'S DESCENDANTS.

SWANTIE DYCKHUYSE, the second wife of Arent Schuyler, must appear on these pages as an orphan. I have been unable to find any trace of her family, and only one of the name, among the records of New York or Albany. Among the marriage-licenses granted by Lord Cornbury, and bound up with other records in New York City, is one of date December 12, 1702, "Arent Schuyler and Swantie Dyckhuyse." I imagine that her family lived on Broadway, New York, and that she inherited the house on that street which her husband left to her for life, and then to their son John, in his will of 1706.[1]

PHILIP, Arent's eldest son, married Hester Kingsland, daughter of Isaac Kingsland, of New Barbadoes Neck, of whom his father bought the farm at Belleville. He occupied the homestead at Pompton, and cultivated the soil of his "native acres." He had considerable influence among his neighbors, and was their representative in the Legislature several terms. He had twelve children, three of whom died in infancy or childhood. Five sons and four daughters survived him, and had families. His descendants are very numerous, a few only of whom, a family of sisters, remain on the old place. Others are so widely scattered that it is difficult to find them, or to identify them when

[1] John Tunisse Van Dyckhuyse, a magistrate of Flatbush, was complained of by Gerardus Beeckman for abuse and defamation, March 27, 1693. Doc. Hist., ii., 414.

found. They were mostly farmers, and, when their own locality was occupied, they emigrated to other parts of the country as they were opened to settlement. Some returned to New York after the Revolution and settled in the Mohawk Valley, from which the Indians had removed to Canada, and others elsewhere in the State, while others followed the tide of emigration farther west. A granddaughter of Philip Schuyler, Hetty, the only child of Casparus (181), acquired some reputation as the wife of William Colfax, Captain of Washington's Life Guard, and the grandmother of a future vice-president of the United States.

CASPARUS SCHUYLER (164) had his home on the Delaware River, remote at the time from his father's family and relatives, and for a hundred years or more his descendants were little known by others of the name. In the churchyard of St. Mary's, Burlington, N. J., stands a simple stone, inscribed, "In memory of Gasperus Schuyler who Departed this life April 13, 1754 aged 59 years"; and in the parish register is entered, "Buried 1773 Decmr 30 Mary widow of Casparus Schuyler."

He appears to have had only one child, a son, named (182) Arent after his grandfather. Arent in his will, dated May 7, 1774, mentions five sons and one daughter, among them Aaron, the eldest, one of whose sons emigrated to Ohio and two to western New York. The descendants of these three brothers have vindicated their blood, and made their name respected in theology and literature. Two hold high positions in the Church, one is president of a college and author of several educational works, and another is editor of a metropolitan journal.

JOHN SCHUYLER (165) occupied the homestead at Belleville, and with his brothers Peter and Adoniah worked the copper-mine which his father's negro had discovered.

The produce of his large plantation and the output of the mine gave him a splendid income. The superintendence of his business gave him full employment congenial to his tastes. It was sought to engage him in public life by appointing him to the governor's Council, but this failed of its object, for after a brief term of service he resigned.

PETER SCHUYLER (166) was the best known of the family. The fine estate inherited from his father was largely increased by his marriage to Hester Walter, the daughter of a rich New York merchant residing on Hanover Square. His elder brother, John, superintended the mine, and he was left at leisure to turn his attention to other objects. Unlike many men in similar circumstances, he did not surrender his life to dissipation or genteel idleness, but improved his estate, and took upon himself a share of the public burdens. He was interested in military affairs, and qualified himself to assume command of troops, should the necessity occur. While the French were seated on the continent, no permanent peace could be expected, and it became the duty of every good citizen to be prepared to defend his country from their encroachments. New Jersey's geographical position rendered her comparatively secure, but in time of war she was required to render assistance to her sister colonies, especially to New York, on whom the chief burden of defence always rested.

When the European war of 1744–48 began, it was seen that the colonies could not escape its influence, and that they must be prepared to share in its fortunes. The subjugation of Canada was believed, as in former times, to be the only way to secure a permanent peace. Measures were accordingly concerted between the English Government and her provinces for another effort to conquer their troublesome neighbors. Canada was to be invaded by sea and land. Five hundred men were to be furnished by

New Jersey as her quota to the army. Peter Schuyler was authorized to recruit the men, and was then commissioned, on September 7, 1746, as their colonel commandant. He left Amboy on September 3d, and arrived at Albany on the 9th. England failed to keep her engagements, and the expedition was abandoned. Governor Clinton, however, declined to disband the forces which had been assembled, until he had received instructions from the king; neither did he pay them, nor furnish them with supplies. His reasons for this unfair treatment were frivolous—"if" said he, "they receive their pay they will desert." Colonel Schuyler's regiment suffered greatly for the want of a surgeon and medicines, as well as for clothing and rations. He wrote to the governor of New Jersey, that unless they were paid their dues and better provided for they would desert with arms and baggage. Governor Hamilton hastened to assure him that he had that day ordered "two speckled shirts and one pair of shoes for each man." Nothing was said about other necessary clothing, provisions, medical attendance, or pay. The men were not comforted, and arranged for an indignation meeting. The time had come when something more effectual had to be done for the honor of the service and for humanity. Colonel Schuyler could not be an indifferent spectator while his fellow-soldiers were suffering for want of means for their own support and that of their poor families at home—he paid his men in full out of his own resources. This drew from Governor Clinton a sharp rebuke, "for," so he wrote to Schuyler, "it was not proper, since, in the opinion of his majesty's Council of this province, the retaining the greatest part of the arrears due till his majesty's pleasure be known is the most effectual method to prevent desertion." Later Clinton wrote to his government, complaining that Schuyler, having paid his men in

full, had caused dissatisfaction and almost mutiny among the other "levies," so that he had been forced to pay them each forty shillings, and promise them twenty shillings a month thereafter.

Subsequently Schuyler was assigned with his regiment to Fort Clinton, at Saratoga, which he occupied until he was forced to abandon it for want of provisions in the fall of 1747. The peace of Aix-la-Chapelle, in 1748, terminated the war, when Schuyler returned to his home and to more congenial duties.

The peace was of short duration, and in 1754 the war was renewed. Schuyler at the head of his regiment again took the field, and was stationed at Oswego. After the defeat of Braddock, the western frontiers of New Jersey were exposed to Indian raids. Schuyler was recalled with half his men to occupy the block-houses erected along the Delaware River for the protection of his own province. In the following spring he returned to Oswego; and when that fort was captured by Montcalm, in 1756, he and half his regiment were surrendered prisoners to the French. He was taken to Montreal, and thence to Quebec, where he remained until October, 1757, when he was released on parole. With a Frenchman and two Indians he traversed the wilderness to Fort Edward, whence he proceeded to New York, arriving on November 19th. There was great joy expressed, and the city was illuminated in his honor. On his arrival home a salute of thirteen guns was fired; and the next evening, at Newark, the houses were illuminated, cannon were fired, and bonfires kindled. These unusual festivities terminated with a supper, toasts, and wine. A month later, when on his way to Trenton, the good people of Princeton tendered him a hearty welcome, and sang his praises in an original poem. Wherever he went he was greeted more as a conqueror than a prisoner

on parole. Why this general joy? As a soldier he had done his duty, but had gained no laurels in battle. He had been unfortunate in the only contest in which he had been engaged, not from any fault of his own, it is true, but from the fortune of war. He was beloved by those who knew him, and his assured safety was cause of rejoicing on the part of his friends. But this was not all. While in Canada he had shown himself to be a true philanthropist. He was surrounded by hundreds of poor prisoners, some taken, like himself, after a contest at arms, others torn from their New England homes by cruel savages; all, or nearly all, without money or means to procure the necessaries of life, while some were toiling in an ignoble bondage. His captors knew him to be rich, and did not hesitate to supply him on his drafts with all the funds that he required; the money thus procured he unselfishly distributed among his more unfortunate countrymen without regard to their places of birth. He knew no difference between Jerseymen and those from other provinces; they were all alike his countrymen and entitled to his sympathy. He befriended the New England mother and her helpless children, once in possession of a happy home, now the slaves of heartless savages, and bought their liberty. The soldier in rags he clothed in comfortable garments; he fed the hungry, some of them at his own table. His sympathizing nature and his unselfish charity gave him renown and a place in the hearts of his countrymen. It was for this, and not for martial prowess, that he was feasted and entertained.

His leave of absence on parole expired before he was able to make arrangements for his exchange. "The king," so wrote Secretary Pitt, "has a true sense of the active zeal of Colonel Schuyler, and saw with concern his disagreeable situation from the difficulties which have

arisen with regard to his exchange." The governor of Canada demanded his return, and he again surrendered himself to his captors. Colonel Bradstreet, in the August preceding, by a rapid march from Albany to Oswego, which the French had destroyed and abandoned, and thence by boats across the lake, had surprised and captured Fort Frontenac, taking over a hundred prisoners, who were released on parole. There was now a fair prospect of securing Schuyler's release, and he accordingly received from the English General Abercromby full authority to negotiate an exchange of prisoners, officer for officer, and man for man. He was successful, and effected the exchange of a number equal to Bradstreet's prisoners,—of himself for the commandant of Fort Frontenac. He immediately left for home, and arrived at Fort Edward on November 11, 1758, with eighty-nine men, women, and children, some of whom had been ransomed from captivity by himself at a "high price." Two years before, when first a prisoner in Canada, he had procured the liberty of several captives, among whom were Mrs. Jemima Howe and three of her children, of Hinsdale, N. H., for whom he paid twenty-seven hundred francs. The Indians who captured Mrs. Howe had sold her to a Frenchman. She was separated from her children, and held as a servant. Her position soon became exceedingly trying and uncomfortable, for both her master and his son were persistent in dishonorable proposals. When her situation came to the knowledge of Schuyler, he called on the governor, and through his intervention released her from servitude, and rescued her from her would-be lovers by the payment to the Frenchman of a handsome profit on his original investment.

Now again, while busy in his negotiations, he had another opportunity to exercise his benevolence. In a skir-

mish with the enemy north of Fort Edward, Major Putnam, the future Revolutionary general, was captured by the Indians, stripped of his clothing, and otherwise inhumanly treated, and in this sorry plight compelled to follow his captors to Montreal. There Schuyler met him, and saw his forlorn condition. He procured him clothing, and furnished him with means to make him comfortable. In time he procured his exchange and sent him home.

It is only just to say that the English Government repaid him in part for his expenses in behalf of the captives, and that the province of New Jersey refunded a portion of his advances for the pay of his regiment.

In the campaign of 1759, Schuyler and his "Jersey Blues" were again in the field. Toward the close of the year he returned to his home, and spent the winter with his family. In the spring he rejoined the army under General Amherst, and participated in the events which closed with the complete conquest of Canada. He entered the city of Montreal with the victorious armies, and appeared on the streets where he had so recently walked a prisoner in the martial bearing of a conqueror.

At the close of the war he returned to his beloved Peterboro', on the banks of the Passaic, but did not live long to enjoy the blessings of the peace which he had helped to secure. In less than two years he died, at the early age of fifty-two years.

Peter Schuyler's family was small. His daughter Catherine was his only child, to whom, by his will, he gave the bulk of his large estate. Her mother, Hester Walter, seems also to have been an only child, for Catherine was sole heiress of her grandfather, John Walter, a man of large property. She was also the heiress of Richard Jones, another relative, who left her, besides personal

property, some farms on the Raritan River. Her father, grandfather and Mr. Jones all died within a short time of each other, and she suddenly became possessed of an estate equalled by few in either province. Possessed of a comely person, with an education and accomplishments as good as the schools could give, she was considered a prize of no mean order among the marrying men of her acquaintance. Captain Archibald Kennedy, of the royal navy, commanding the ship Coventry, lying in the harbor of New York, was the successful suitor, and married her before June, 1765.

Her grandfather, John Walter, was a grandson of Jacob Leisler, portions of whose estate came finally into her possession. Her real estate at the time of her marriage with Kennedy consisted of a large house and lot on Hanover Square, lately occupied by John Walter, deceased; two other houses on Hanover Square; a dwelling-house and warehouse on a lot bounded on one side by Wall Street, and on another side by the East River; a lot 30 feet front on Crown (Liberty) Street; four houses and lots on Water Street; a lot 40 by 80 feet on Coenties Slip; three other dwellings and lots on Water Street; a dwelling and lot corner of Wall and Burnet Streets; a dwelling and lot on the east side of Broadway; thirty-three lots on Chatham, Frankfort, and other streets, "distinguished on a map of lots made by Jacob Leisler." All these houses and lots were in the city of New York. In New Jersey she owned the homestead farm, called Peterboro', now East Newark, containing over nine hundred acres; all the right and title of her late father "in two cedar swamps and meadows lying near the Island Succocus;" as also her father's share in the commons of Bergen Township; four hundred acres of farming land on the south side of the Raritan River; also a share in six hundred and forty acres adjoining the

last-mentioned land; her father's share in a tract of land called the Ash Swamp; several dwellings and lots in Elizabethtown; and, lastly, her father's third share in the copper mine at Belleville. The amount of her personal estate is not known, but it must have been considerable. It will be seen that Catherine Schuyler was rich.

After her marriage with Kennedy, she made a trust deed to James Duane, June 13, 1765, of all the above enumerated property, conditioned, that when called on he should convey it to Archibald Kennedy and Catherine Schuyler Kennedy, with a provision that the survivor of the two should possess the whole. Two days later James Duane made a deed of the property to Kennedy and his wife, containing the clause that it should belong to the longest liver, whether husband or wife. Before January 21, 1768, Catherine had died, leaving no children, and her husband was in possession of an estate which had been accumulating in different hands for several generations. Lieutenant-Governor Colden said, in 1765, that "Archibald Kennedy possessed more houses in New York than any other man." He owned the greater part of them by right of his wife.

A few years after the death of Catherine Schuyler, Kennedy married her cousin, Anne Watts, on April 27, 1769. He was in command of the ship Coventry, lying in New York Harbor, when the "stamps" were received from England, and was requested by Lieutenant-Governor Colden and the Council to take them on board his vessel for safety, until the excitement in the city subsided. He declined to receive them. For this, and other acts not considered strictly loyal, he was removed from command. After losing his ship, he retired to Peterboro,' resolved not to lose his estate, if it could be avoided. After the Revolution fairly began, the Committee of Safety, having reason

to suspect that he was inimical to the patriot cause, ordered him to retire to the county of Sussex and remain within a mile of the court-house. He obeyed without a murmur, and bore his banishment like a philosopher. He was quiet and well behaved, and after a few months was permitted to return to his home. Later he went to England, and succeeded his kinsman in the earldom of Cassilis. He saved his American property and transmitted it to his sons, who in 1803 appointed Robert Watts their agent to sell it.

In the colonial documents (X., 776) there is a foot-note by the editor, giving a short biographical sketch of Colonel Peter Schuyler, which is erroneous as regards his daughter Catherine. She is said to have married Archibald Kennedy, receiver-general and collector of customs. The latter gentleman came to New York in 1714, with letters from the Earl of Stair to Governor Hunter. He was soon after appointed to office, and held from that time to his death some of the most lucrative positions in the province. In 1761 he applied to Governor Monckton to be relieved from the Council, of which he was a member, on account of his age. Less than two years later Governor Colden announced his death as having occurred on June 14, 1763. It was Mary Walter, the widow of Arent Schuyler, whom this gentleman married. Their marriage-license is dated June 14, 1736. She survived him many years, and in her will she mentions the fact that when she married him she was the widow of Arent Schuyler.

Colonel Peter Schuyler was twice married—first to Hester Walter, second to Mary ———. In his will he made provision for his "wife Mary," but far from liberal considering his wealth. He left her "furniture for one room, two slaves, and fifteen hundred pounds in cash."

His daughter Catherine, in her deed to James Duane, mentioned "Hester Schuyler, her late mother."

ADONIAH SCHUYLER (167) left the copper mine to be managed by his brother, and established himself as a merchant in the city of New York. He soon became a man of large wealth, and enjoyed a high social position. He did not confine himself to merchandise, but was engaged in other enterprises. He added to the value of his large landed estate at Elizabethtown Point by the establishment of a ferry to Staten Island, the charter of which is a curious document, containing a tariff of charges carefully catalogued.

He died before May, 1762, leaving seven children. Two of his sons, Rensselaer (186) and Adoniah (191), entered the British service; the first as lieutenant in the army, the latter as midshipman in the navy. Rensselaer died young and unmarried; Adoniah was taken to England by his brother-in-law, the Honorable Captain Henry St. John (son of John, tenth Baron St. John of Bletsho), and put into the navy, where he rose to the rank of captain. He married Miss Susan Shields, of Plymouth. His descendants settled in Cornwall, and the tombs of many of them are to be seen at Falmouth. Several of them were captains of the once famous line of packets sailing between Falmouth and Lisbon. One of the daughters of Adoniah married into the Graham family, of Scotland, and one branch of the male descendants emigrated to Australia, where they are said to be still living. The only ones of the male line now living in England are Adoniah Graham Schuyler, captain in the Duke of Cambridge's Own (Middlesex) Regiment; and his brother Edward E. S. Schuyler, captain in the Prince of Wales' Own (West Yorkshire) Regiment, in the British army.

The American descendants of Adoniah Schuyler (167)

are numerous. His widow married Robert Livingston, the third proprietor of Livingston manor.

ARENT SCHUYLER (183) succeeded his father to the homestead at Belleville shortly before the Revolutionary War. I have a manuscript copy of parts of a journal kept by Isaac Bangs, a graduate of Harvard College and an officer in a Massachusetts regiment stationed in New York in 1776. He and two other officers were detailed, with eighty men, to go into New Jersey and cut timber with which to obstruct the harbor against the enemy's vessels. Work was begun in a cedar swamp a short distance west of the Hackensack River, belonging to Mr. Schuyler. The officers made him a visit on the day of their arrival, and found him friendly and courteous. On their way the guide conducted them to the celebrated copper mine, the works of which were in ruins, having been burned by a discharged workman four years before. They spent the night with him, and a day or two afterward dined with him by appointment. Schuyler returned their visits, spending some time on each occasion at their camp. As they were all young fellows and college graduates, they forgot the critical situation of the country, and gave themselves up to the enjoyment of the hour. One day Schuyler came directly after breakfast, and made "a day of it," not leaving until night; "during which time," says the journalist, "many decanters of wine suffered shipwreck, many bowles of grog were poured down our thirsty bellies, nor was eggpop forgot among our dainties. Spent the whole day very agreeably." The next morning Mr. Bangs enters on his journal, "Slept very ill."

On June 28th Lieutenant Bangs finished his business, and prepared to return to his regiment, but as it was after "sunset" he accepted Mr. Schuyler's invitation to spend the night with him. The next morning Schuyler lent him

a horse, and accompanied him in his chaise to New York, where they parted with expressions of mutual regard. The journal then proceeds:

"Since I have had occasion to speak frequently of Mr. Schuyler I must give a small Detail of his family, which consisted of Himself, Wife, one small Daughter, a Mother and Miss Polly, his Sister, about 13 or 14 years old, besides a Brother of his Wife and his Family, who fled from New York; What can be said of one may be justly applicable to all viz: considering all Circumstances they are as agreeable People as ever I had the Pleasure of being acquainted with. Mr. Schuyler (though a Gentleman of Liberal Education not more than 27 years of age, and one of the first Estates in the Province) yet he inspects every nook on his Farm which is vastly extensive. Mrs. Schuyler (his Wife) tho not beautiful in her outward Form, is possessed of such a beauteous Mind as must make her agreeable to every one that hath the pleasure of being acquainted with her. She as doth her Husband, taketh Pleasure in regulating the Affairs of their Family, which by her Diligence and Care, is kept in the neatest order; and the greatest Harmony and Decorum may be observed in every Department of the whole. Besides the Persons before mentioned which compose the Family are about 50 or 60 Blacks all of whom except those who are necessary for Domestic Service live in a large convenient House built for that Purpose without the Gate; in the House every servant hath their particular sphere to act in, I never saw more than 2 in the House otherwise than in the Kitchen, and those were waiters. Those who live in the Out House each have their particular Departments and regular hours to work in, their victuals is cooked at certain Hours by their own cookes, to which they are regularly called by a Bell which Rings in the Morning for the Servants to turn out to their work and for Breakfast—for Dinner at the proper Time for them to leave their Work and again at 8 in the evening for each to repair to their

House after which no Noise is heard. Notwithstanding they have so large a Family to regulate Mrs. Schuyler also seeth to the Manufacturing of suitable clothing for all the Servants, all of which is the Produce of their own plantation, in which she is helped by her mamma and Miss Polly, the whole is done with less combustion and Noise than many Families who have not more than 4 or 5 Persons in the whole Family; this whole Family seems ever to be still and quiet and serene, notwithstanding its magnitude and the multiplicity of Business which they have to transact. What added to my surprise after observing the regulations of this wonderful Family was to understand that Mrs. Schuyler was born of and brought up in a Rich and genteel Family in the City of York where her Education must have been so vastly different and noways connected with the Life she now leads nor does she cast off the Mien and Behaviour of the genteel bred woman—but the whole family live and dress in a very genteel manner so far as gentility is consistent with Reason. Mr. and Mrs. Schuyler seem always to be at leisure and never disturb company with being busied and hurried more than if they had nothing to do. It is not from any Parsimonius Views that Mr. Schuyler and his Wife employ themselves in many Matters which is uncommon in People of their Fortune, but they often told me when I expressed my surprise at it, that this was their greatest pleasure, and they would both in passionate Terms lament and pity the Fate of those People of Fortune who were blinded by their Education as not to discover some such Expedient to employ those many leisure Hours which they are daily racking their Inventions to kill and which nevertheless hang heavy on their Hands. Nor do either of them wholly slight the diversions of the Town, but frequently were they wont while the Town was in Peace, to spend a few days at a time in the City and sometimes they make small Excursions in the Country.

"Mr. Schuyler's Mansion House is a large, grand and magnificent building, built partly of stone and the rest

brick most beautifully situate upon an eminence on the east Bank of what is called Passaic River ; on the west side of the River by the Water is the Road which leads to Hackensack, Albany etc. by which are a considerable number of Buildings and two Churches, the one a Dutch and the other an English Church built by Mr. Schuyler's Father. These together with the Buildings standing by a straight and level road and the beautiful Groves on the Eminences on the West afford a most delightful Prospect from the Groves of Mr. Schuyler's House. On the back part of the House is a large neat Garden built partly for Ornament and partly for Convenience. At the back of the Garden is a prodigious high Hill covered with Woods—the House has a sufficiency of out Houses on the South and on the North, at a little distance are his Barns sufficient to accommodate his Farm which by accounts is three miles across, in fine the situation of this Gentleman's Dwelling both for Convenience and Please is the best I ever beheld. On the East of his House at the Distance of about ¾ of a Mile he hath two Parks in which are about 150 or 160 Deer but I could not get a sight of them as they never come out of the Woods except in the Night.

"Mr. Schuyler was descended from the Family of Schuylers which rendered so much good Service to N. England as mentioned in Hutchinson's History. there are many of the same Family at Albany now and at New York. This Gentleman's Grandfather in but tolerable Circumstances moved from Albany to the place above described. (The Township is called New Barbadoes) and here he accidentally discovered the Copper Mines now possessed by his Grandchild out of which he got great Wealth and the family carrying on the Works have made daily additions to the Estate till they have all the lands contiguous and are now immensely Rich. The whole Family have been noted for their Liberality to the Publick, but especially to the Poor and Indigent, and it is remarkable that of the great Number I daily while there

heard speak of the Family, none spoke otherwise than with respect and Love.

"What could hinder this Man from being happy, unless he had a most discontented mind? A Man that in Mr. Schuyler's Scituation could not be happy deserves no longer to continue on the Earth. I remember once to have asked him if he thought himself Happy, he replied 'Yes.' I then asked him if he thought any Man more happy than himself? he calmly answered that possibly some might be, for he had his gloomy Hours, but that the Man that was more Happy than himself was Happy indeed, but that he imagined and made no doubt that many were as happy. This last part I doubt of, for tho' some have to outward appearance sufficient to make them happy, yet few have that Temper and disposition and Temper of Mind which is the chief Blessing enjoyed by this Gentleman. Without making any more Remarks (for I cant do justice to what I have endeavoured) I must declare the few Days spent in this Family to be the most happy of any that I was ever sensible of enjoying in my Life. While I was with him we contracted a most intimate Friendship, and he on parting desired me to visit him as often as possible, and on his part engaged to do the same—he also made me a very generous offer with regard to being innoculated with the Small Pox which I believe I shall accept when I have served my Country through this Campaign. As I returned to New York I saw the Signals for the arrival of more than 20 Ships hoisted on Staten Island. July 29, 1776."

ARENT SCHUYLER (171) was arrested, on July 11, 1777, and locked up in the Morristown jail, as a disaffected person. After a month's detention he took the oath of loyalty to the patriot cause, and was released. He is the only one of Philip Schuyler's descendants bearing the name, so far as I have discovered at the present writing, who seemed to halt in loyalty to his country.

AARON SCHUYLER, LL.D. (297), is the author of several

educational works on logic and mathematics, which have a deserved popularity in the Western States.

REV. MONTGOMERY SCHUYLER, D.D. (300), is rector of a Protestant Episcopal Church in St. Louis, Mo.

REV. ANTHONY SCHUYLER, D.D. (301), is rector of the Protestant Episcopal Church of Orange, N. J.

REV. LOUIS SANDFORD SCHUYLER (344), was born on March 2, 1852. He graduated at Hobart College in 1871, was ordained a Deacon of the Protestant Episcopal Church, in St. Louis, Mo., on September 21, 1873, and a Priest on March 5, 1876. Earnestly and sincerely pious, he devoted himself to the service of his Church, for a time as an assistant to Bishop Doane at Albany, but chiefly in mission work at St. Louis. His piety was of the fervent and ascetic type, and in the autumn of 1877, he went to England for the purpose of joining the Brotherhood of St. John Evangelist at Cowley. His health proved too delicate to permit of his carrying out his purpose, and he soon returned. For a time he had charge of a parish in Newark, N. J., but on September 4, 1878, learning that there was a call for a clergyman at Memphis, where the yellow fever was then raging, he hastened to that city. He arrived on the evening of September 8th, threw himself at once into the work, and was soon attacked by the fever, of which he died on September 17th. Of such are the saints.

MONTGOMERY SCHUYLER (351) is a journalist well known by his contributions to monthly periodicals, and by his connection with the *New York World* and the *New York Times*. He is now managing editor of *Harper's Weekly*.

V.

JOHANNES SCHUYLER.

JOHANNES SCHUYLER, the sixth and youngest son of Philip Schuyler and Margarita Van Slichtenhorst,[1] was born on April 5, 1668, and was fifteen years old when his father died. He began at an early age to take an interest in public affairs. In 1689 he joined the convention which assumed the government of Albany and its dependencies in opposition to Leisler. In the next year he was a volunteer in the army of General Winthrop for the invasion of Canada. It was seen, when it was decided to abandon the enterprise, that the confidence of the Five Nations in the English to assist them in their long war with the French was shaken. To give them courage and to retain their alliance, some means had to be devised to prove that their English friends were not devoid of valor and were willing to join them in a raid against their enemies. Hitherto the Indians had fought their battles alone and unaided by the active co-operation of white men. Now it had to be made apparent that their English allies could fight as well as talk.

Johannes Schuyler, although young, was brave and en-

---

[1] Philip Schuyler, the fifth son of Philip Schuyler and Margarita Van Slichtenhorst, is the ancestor of my branch of the family, and is next in order for consideration; but, as it is my purpose to speak also of his female descendants to a limited extent, I shall conclude what I have to say in reference to the other branches, and leave Philip's history and genealogy for the last, giving to their descendants a new series of numbers.

terprising. He was acquainted with the Indian character, and knew their mode of fighting. When others of more age and experience held back, he volunteered to lead a company into the enemy's country and do all the damage possible. His service was accepted by the general, who conferred upon him the temporary commission of captain. Twenty-nine whites and one hundred and twenty Indians volunteered under his command. Winthrop, from his limited stores, supplied him with canoes, arms, and provisions. From his journal of the expedition, we learn that he left camp on August 13, 1690, and on his way down Wood Creek met Captain Glen returning from a scout, of whose men thirteen whites and five Indians joined his company. Two days afterward he was within three miles of Crown Point, and fast approaching that part of the lake supposed to be occupied by the enemy. As their success depended measurably on the secrecy of their movements, they now resolved to remain in camp during the day and march only by night. The point of attack was not yet settled, whether Fort Chambly, or La Prairie, or the farming settlements on the south bank of the St. Lawrence not far from Montreal. It was a question of some importance as to which of these places should be made the objective point. A council was called of the officers and chiefs, who determined by a majority to attack La Prairie. Belts were then passed between the Indians of different tribes to ratify the decision and to stand by each other, followed by a hand-shaking all around among Christians and Indians.

When they arrived at the River Chambly, their scouts reported that they had discovered on the west shore traces of the enemy, and the place where fourteen prisoners captured in New England had recently been bound to stakes, but had not seen anything more to indicate the

presence of enemies. They now concealed their canoes and some provisions, began their march across the country in the direction of La Prairie, and toward evening arrived in the vicinity of the fort. They camped in the forest, and early the next morning their scouts reported the people to be leaving the fort for their work in the fields. Captain Schuyler wished to capture this working party, and directed his forces to take up a position between the fort and fields before beginning the attack. He was disappointed, for his Indian allies no sooner saw the French at work than raising the war-whoop they rushed upon them. Instead of capturing the whole party, as was intended, he took prisoners only nineteen, after killing six, the others escaping into the fort. His loss was only one man, an Indian.

After the fight was over and the prisoners secured, everything outside the fort, including dwellings, barns, cattle, grain, and hay, was destroyed. The fort fired alarm-guns, which were answered from Montreal and Chambly. The prisoners informed him, that while an invasion was expected the French had eight hundred men in the fort, but, learning that Winthrop had retired, and their scouts reporting no enemy approaching, they had been withdrawn the day before.

Schuyler, unable to persuade his Indians to join in an attack on the fort, ordered a retreat. With no enemy in sight, and safe from immediate pursuit, on reaching the woods he halted, and the men sat down to rest. While eating their lunch they were amused with the music of the great guns fired from the several forts. They reached their canoes without being molested, and arrived at Albany on August 30th. He saved the first expedition against Canada from utter contempt. Leisler, in his report to the English Government, refers to Schuy-

ler's exploits with some satisfaction, but suppresses his name.

In the spring of 1691, Captain Schuyler and a party of Indians, with some whites, made another invasion into Canada. They were within a short distance of Montreal, when some Indian deserters gave notice of their approach, which enabled the farmers to take refuge in the forts. The French troops had been withdrawn to Quebec, and the country around Montreal was stripped of its defenders. Outside of the walls of the fort the invaders found no opposition, and destroyed everything within their reach. These raiding parties continued their depredations until midsummer, inflicting an immense amount of damage and reducing Canada to a state of famine.

Johannes Schuyler, having been appointed a lieutenant of a cavalry company, actively participated in the campaign against the French, who invaded the Mohawk country in January, 1693, and rendered, with his company, material assistance in driving them across the Hudson. By his marriage, in 1695, with a sister of Dr. Samuel Staats, a prominent member of the Leislerian party, he won the confidence of that faction, and lost, for a time, that of their opponents, with whom he had hitherto affiliated. Soon after his marriage he was elected an alderman, and by successive elections held the office several years. The Earl of Bellomont took him into favor, and employed him on several occasions for delicate and important business. When the Five Nations were agitated over the question of their countrymen still held as prisoners in Canada, notwithstanding the peace of 1697, Bellomont saw the necessity of making some demonstration in their favor. He ordered Major Wessels to attend their conference at Onondaga, and despatched Schuyler with letters to Count de Frontenac. Schuyler was in-

structed to urge upon the count a surrender of the Indian prisoners, in accordance with the terms of the treaty ; and also to learn, if possible, the intentions of the French as to their threatened invasion of the Indian country, as well as their strength and the state of their preparations. Immediately on his arrival at Quebec he called and delivered his despatches to the governor, who on reading them "seemed much displeased," but said, "I am not afraid." A day or two afterward they had another interview, when Frontenac asked him about the strength of Bellomont's government. Schuyler's reply, that he could raise a hundred thousand men, at first may seem grossly exaggerated. But as all New England, New Jersey, and New York were under Bellomont's control for military purposes, and as he had declared that he would arm every man, if need be, it seems less unreasonable. In all their subsequent discussions, Schuyler maintained his positions with dignity and ability. The count treated him with politeness, and gave him a dinner, at which were present the chief officers and dignitaries of Canada.

On his return Schuyler made his report to the governor and Council, on October 6th, and was warmly congratulated on his success. At the suggestion of Bellomont a gratuity was voted to him, "in consideration of his extraordinary diligence and his wise observations while in Canada."

Frontenac, however, was not diverted from his previous views and measures as to his treatment of the Iroquois. He sent a courteous letter to Bellomont, but said that he was determined to pursue unflinchingly the course he had marked out for himself, and that all attempts to thwart him would prove useless. He was then seventy-eight years old, and did not live to carry out his policy. The shadow of death was then upon him, and three months afterward he died.

In the following winter, 1699, the eloquent Dekanissora and another sachem came to Albany on business of importance. They informed the commissioners for Indian affairs that they had resolved to send a deputation to Canada to procure the release of their countrymen from their long imprisonment, despairing of anything effectual being done in this regard by the English. More than this, they had been informed by M. Maricour that Johannes Schuyler on his late visit in Canada had secured them faster than ever; yea, he had "clinched them with silver nails," and had insulted their whole nation by comparing them to negro slaves. This report of what Schuyler had said and done in his official capacity created excitement. A special meeting of the commissioners was held, at Schuyler's request, which was attended by six French gentlemen then in Albany. Schuyler appeared before them, and most emphatically denied the words and acts attributed to him. He pronounced the story a most malicious falsehood. If Maricour was the author of it, he was neither a gentleman nor an honest man. The French gentlemen admitted that the story was false, and said that M. Maricour was not its author, but that it was rather the invention of the Indians. There were some French Indians at the meeting, who expressed the opinion that the scandal had been put into circulation by the Iroquois themselves for their own sinister purposes. Confronted by such testimony, Dekanissora said that he was satisfied that the story was false, and that Schuyler should be exonerated from all blame.

Bellomont's visit to New England made him acquainted with the Indian question as affecting that portion of his master's dominions. The powerful Indian nations occupying Massachusetts, Connecticut, and Rhode Island had been annihilated, or brought into subjection, but the Abenakis, or eastern Indians, under the influence of the

French, still kept up a desolating war on the settlements of Maine and New Hampshire. Bellomont conceived the project of detaching them from French influence, and thus giving peace to the borders. In a letter to the Lords of Trade, September 30, 1698, he says:

"I have in view to make a peace with the Eastern Indians, who during all the late war, have been such a scourge to the New England colonies, and that by means of one Schuyler, a Dutchman, a man very popular with the Schaghticoke Indians, who were driven out of New England some years since, and being related to the Eastern Indians, are held in much esteem by them. This Schuyler will soon visit the East, and take with him some Schaghticoke sachems, by whose means he is confident he can prevail on those Eastern hostiles to make a perpetual peace. And further he hopes to induce them to come and make a settlement in this province among their kindred."

The Schaghticokes were the remnant of a New England tribe who, in the war of 1675, made their way west, and procured a small territory from their kindred, the Mohegans, or River Indians, situate on the east side of the Hudson above Albany. They were never numerous; so few, indeed, that they had more land than they needed, and had sold portions of it to the city of Albany, to Hendrick Van Rensselaer, and others. They professed to be subject to the English, and had often met them in council, professedly to "brighten the covenant-chain," but really to receive the presents distributed on such occasions. They were never considered efficient or trustworthy allies. From time to time some of them would emigrate to Canada, until in 1754 the few remaining were carried off by a war-party of their friends. Had Bellomont succeeded in removing any considerable number of the Abenakis to Schaghticoke, it is doubtful whether they would have

proved a source of strength—more likely of weakness. They were thoroughly under French influence, many of them being proselytes of the Jesuits having a settlement in Canada. It is more than probable that they would have proved a scourge rather than a blessing.

It is not known whether Schuyler visited the eastern Indians, as he proposed, but it is fair to infer that negotiations had been opened with them, and some influence had been used to induce them to consider the subject; for in August, 1700, ten or twelve of their sachems, one of whom spoke good English, were in Albany at a conference with the Five Nations, whence they proceeded to the Mohawk country and made their submission, wishing to be received as allies, and pledging themselves to abandon the French and be at peace with the English. Bellomont assumed much credit to himself for this apparent success in his plans. He wrote to the Board of Trade:

"This submission proceeds from my management. It is a lucky thing; and the people of New England have reason to bless God that they are forever hereafter secure from Savages who have been a cruel thorn in their sides."

How mistaken in his forecast of the future! for a little later they renewed the barbarous war, which lasted, with short intervals of peace, more than forty years.

In October following news was brought to Albany that the French, notwithstanding the peace, had treacherously attacked a hunting party of the Five Nations, and killed or captured the whole number. Johannes Schuyler was despatched to New York to report the news of the outrage to the governor. On this visit the Abenaki business was again discussed, and some definite plan of operation was agreed on. The governor wrote to him on November 7, 1700:

"I promised you when we parted, I would send you my instructions, as to what you were to do in relation to our Indians, and as to the Eastern Indians, and also as to the French Bushlopers. But I consider a letter from me is to the full as good as any instructions I can send you."

In January, 1701, Bellomont again wrote to the Lords of Trade:

"I design to invite the Eastern Indians to settle at Schaghticoke, and make a perpetual league between them and our Five Nations. For this purpose I make use of Colonel Schuyler's brother."

The governor now proposed to employ him as his confidential agent, in his negotiations with the eastern Indians and in other affairs, but did not wish his correspondence to go on the records of the Council, that publicity might be avoided. His letter, before referred to, continues:

"Try by all means by your messengers chosen from the Schaghticoke Indians to bring the Eastern Indians, and settle them at Schaghticoke. Try to have some of their sachems visit me in New York and meet some of the Five Nations. All your expenses shall be repaid with thanks. Should you succeed, I shall not consider the best service I can do you misbestowed. I desire you will encourage the Frenchmen who come to us from Canada. It will be a great service to the King and country. Assure the Eastern Indians, I will give them good presents, when they come to see me."

Schuyler replied on January 7th:

"Since the receipt of your Lordship's letter, I have been trying to procure the Indian messengers, but could not till now, as they were off hunting. On the 17. December last, I learned some had returned home, when I visited them, and arranged for a meeting at my house in Albany. They

met me according to appointment. When I made known to them your Lordship's wishes, they were delighted that your Excellency took so much interest in them. With your patronage they expect to become a great nation. Instead of three, they propose to send four messengers, but desire a few days time in order to select the proper men."

A month later he wrote:

"The messengers were selected according to promise, and being supplied with every thing requisite for the journey, they left on the 12. January last, bearing your belt and message to the Eastern Indians. The deep snow prevented my journey to Canada, as I had intended. That business waits for a more favorable opportunity."

Bellomont replied on February 29th.

"I am mightily satisfied with your proceedings in the Eastern question. If you succeed, you will do the King a valuable service, for which I will take care that you are suitably rewarded. Take good care of Louis Goselyn, the Frenchman, and pay him twenty pieces of ⅝, all in one sum on my account."

Schuyler answered on March 14th:

"Nothing has been heard from the Indian messengers since they left. I trust on their return, they will bring satisfactory information. As for Louis Goselyn, I find him to be a civil young man. He intends to visit your Excellency soon, and for that reason have given him no money, only some clothing."

Nine days before this letter was written Bellomont had died. The intercourse between Albany and New York in the winter season was infrequent and uncertain, Indian couriers being chiefly employed as mail-carriers. The death of the governor interrupted, if it did not terminate, the negotiations with the eastern Indians. When Schuy-

ler received the intelligence of Bellomont's death, he addressed a letter to the Council, with which he enclosed the correspondence and other papers relating to that business. After due consideration, the Council directed him to proceed in accordance with the instructions which he had received.

The Indian messengers returned after a prolonged absence, and reported to Schuyler: That at the end of sixty-three days from the time they left Albany they reached the first castle of the eastern Indians, and found only one sachem at home, the others being absent hunting; that they delivered their message with the belt to him, and it was kindly received, but he could give no definite answer until the absent sachems returned from the woods; that he engaged to forward the belt and message to the other villages of his nation, and assured the delegates they might expect an answer by the next new moon. What that answer was, if ever sent, is not known. Domestic affairs occupied the attention of the acting governor, Nanfan, to the exclusion of other business, and negotiations with the eastern Indians were suffered to sleep and be forgotten. They had been undertaken to secure quiet and safety to the border settlements of New England, and although they were apparently fruitless, Schuyler did not lose his interest in behalf of the people he had sought to protect.

Hutchinson, the historian of Massachusetts, while accusing the Albanians of trading on the sufferings inflicted by the French and Indian scalping parties, also said:

"Some of the best people of Albany detested the infamous traffic, particularly Col. John Schuyler, who, by means of Indians in the English interests, informed himself of the intended expeditions, and gave frequent notice to our people on the frontiers. But many inroads he had it not in his power to discover."

He gave timely notice of the intended attack on Deerfield by a party of 300 French and Indians; but the people neglected their watch, and were destroyed to the number of 47 killed and 147 taken prisoners. Two years later he warned the people of New England that 270 men had left Canada for some unknown destination. They appeared at Dunstable, on the Merrimack, where they burned a fort in which were twenty soldiers; and at Reading, only eighteen miles from Boston, where they surprised a woman and eight children, killing the woman and three children and carrying off the others. These efforts to shield the settlers of New England from the tomahawk and scalping-knife were not limited to a few years, but were continued until age and infirmities compelled him to desist. In 1724 the governor of Massachusetts proposed to hold a conference at Albany with the sachems of the Mohawk proselytes residing in Canada, deputies of the Five Nations being present and assisting, for the purpose of conciliating them and cementing a friendship with the English. This conference could be held only by the consent of the governor of New York, which was readily given by Governor Burnet. Massachusetts appointed as commissioners to manage the negotiations John Stoddard, of Boston, member of the Council, and Colonel John Schuyler, of Albany. His services must have been appreciated, and his ability recognized, to have obtained for him this honorable and responsible position.

The negotiations were managed by the deputies of Massachusetts assisted by the commissioners of New York, and were in some respects successful. The Canada Indians promised "not to make war on Boston any longer," and the Five Nations undertook to restrain the eastern Indians from further hostilities. It was a time of peace between the English and French crowns, but the Cana-

dians, regardless alike of the peace and of humanity, stimulated the Abenakis to war, and furnished them with supplies and volunteers. Jealous lest the English should approach too near their frontiers, they hoped by means of these savages to expel them from the country east of the Kennebeck River. In this they had the approval of their king and government.

In the following September Commissioner Stoddard again came to Albany, to receive the report of the sachems of the Five Nations who had been on a mission to a section of the Abenakis domiciled in Canada. They reported that they had had an interview with the Abenaki sachems at Montreal in presence of Vaudreuil, the governor, and that they flatly refused to cease their war on New England, until the English abandoned all claim to their lands and restored to liberty their countrymen, who they alleged were unjustly detained as prisoners; nor would they come to treat with them, either at Boston or Albany, but if they wanted peace they must come to Montreal, and treat in presence of "Father Onontio" (the French governor). These forest warriors, under the eyes of Onontio, assumed a lofty carriage, but, like all the native races, after years of bloodshed they were at last obliged to submit.

After the sachems had delivered their report, Governor Burnet and Mr. Stoddard urged the Five Nations to make war on these haughty and unrelenting Indians, and oblige them to accept terms of peace. But no argument, no persuasions could induce them to take up the hatchet. They said that England and France were at peace; that there was now an open path from Canada to Albany on the one hand, and to the Five Nations on the other. Should they strike the Abenakis, they would be embroiled in war with the Canadians. They did not want war with the French,

for, said they, "We know what whipping and scourging is from the governor of Canada. We have tried three times to have them make peace with you, and have failed. We would have you try it now yourselves, and see what you can do."

Massachusetts acted on their advice, and did "try it." The next spring, in March, 1725, Mr. Dudley, son of the governor, and two other deputies from Massachusetts, arrived in Montreal. On their journey they had been joined at Albany by Colonel John Schuyler, whose presence in Canada with the deputies was considered of great importance. Many of the Schaghticoke Indians had emigrated to Canada, and were living in the Abenaki villages on the St. Lawrence. They still retained a great affection for their old friend and patron. It was supposed that through them he might exert a good influence over their hostile relatives. The deputies, in their interviews with Vaudreuil, demanded that he should deliver up the prisoners taken by the Indians from New England; and that he should render no further assistance to those savages, but compel them to stop the war.

Vaudreuil hypocritically replied that the war was not his; nor did he hold the prisoners, except such as had been purchased from their captors by the French; that they themselves must treat with the Abenakis. For this purpose he sent for their sachems, that the negotiations might be conducted in his presence. The sachems were proud and defiant as usual, and would not listen to any terms, except those proposed by themselves. Schuyler had visited them privately the night before, but had been unable to impress them favorably toward a peace. They were too near the person of Onontio to be open to argument or conviction.

In 1709, when a second expedition for the invasion of

Canada was being arranged, Schuyler was sent to Onondaga to enlist the Five Nations in the project. He found there some Frenchmen, who became nervous about their own safety and fled in various directions. A Jesuit priest put himself under his protection, and with his servant accompanied him to Albany. His mission was successful, and the Indians participated in the operations of the campaign, such as it was. Subsequently Schuyler had command of some forces which were sent down on the east side of Lake Champlain to observe the enemy, and intercept a war-party supposed to be on its march toward the Connecticut River. His command did not come into contact with the French, but did efficient service in deterring them from a march on the headquarters of the English at Fort Ann, where they might have inflicted serious damage by superior numbers. Toward the close of operations, Lieutenant Barent Staats, a nephew of Schuyler's wife, was taken prisoner by an Indian scout and carried to Montreal. The Jesuit and his servant being yet in Albany, Schuyler proposed to go to Canada and exchange them for Staats. The arrangement was consummated, and Staats after a short captivity returned to his friends.

Johannes Schuyler, whatever may have been his politics, was held in much estimation by his fellow-citizens. He was elected to the Common Council for several successive years, and was mayor of the city from 1703 to 1706. He was elected to the Thirteenth and Fourteenth Assemblies, serving from September 1, 1710, to March 3, 1713. While mayor and alderman he was ex-officio member of the Board for Indian Affairs, and at other times held the position by appointment, serving in such capacity altogether eighteen years.

The land transactions of Johannes Schuyler were considerable, but not as extensive as those of his brother

Peter, and were small compared to those of his brothers-in-law, Stephanus Van Cortlandt and Robert Livingston. He purchased about two thousand acres on the south side of the Mohawk River east of Schenectady, which was named Rosendale. He was one of the company which procured a patent for land in the Schoharie Valley, named Huntersfield for the governor, Robert Hunter. He also owned the half of a tract of land of two thousand acres on the east side of the Hudson River, "on both sides of a brook called Tomlinack," and was interested more or less in some minor tracts. His most important purchase was made in 1702 of Abraham Wendel, to whom it had been devised by his father—a seventh share in the historical Saratoga Patent.

The outlet of Saratoga Lake, the northern boundary of this purchase, afforded a fine water-power, which Schuyler improved by the erection of mills. The hills near by were covered with forests of pine, and the rich soil of the intervals along the river was well adapted to agricultural purposes. Lying remote from the settlements in the vicinity of Albany, the mill operatives and their families required supplies at a price only to be afforded by production in their neighborhood. Hence, with the artisan came the farmer, and a little village soon sprang up on the bluff near the Hudson and south of Fish Creek, or outlet of Saratoga Lake. It was protected against the attacks of enemies by a small fort built of earth and wood, but large and strong enough for the safety of the inhabitants when threatened by an enemy armed with bows and arrows or shot-guns. The settlement had been begun and the fort built before Schuyler became the owner of the land; he only pushed the work more vigorously and successfully. On the bluff a short distance south of Fish Creek he erected a strong brick house, with loop-holes, to supple-

ment the fort for the protection of his superintendents and laborers. When age unfitted him for active employments, he gave the improved property to his sons, excepting the grist-mill, which he reserved to himself. Here Philip, his eldest son, took up his residence, and personally superintended the farm and mills; he remained at his post in the fall of 1745 after many of his neighbors had retired to Albany for the winter. Here he was killed, while bravely defending his little garrison from the assaults of the French, and his body consumed in the fire of his own dwelling. His fate and the manner of his death were unknown to his friends, until the discovery of the French officer's journal, before quoted, revealed them.[1]

Johannes Schuyler had four children, two sons and two daughters. He buried his wife in the church at Albany, June, 1737. Four years later his youngest son, John, Jr., was buried at the Flatts, where his grave, covered with a sandstone slab, is yet seen. It once contained a metal tablet, which has disappeared long since, leaving to strangers no evidence as to whose remains are buried beneath. His eldest son, Philip, as we have seen, was killed at Saratoga, November, 1745. His eldest daughter, Margarita, married her cousin Philip, eldest son of Colonel Peter Schuyler. She is known as the "American Lady." She lived until the close of the American Revolution, and was buried beside her husband, but no stone marks her grave. His youngest daughter, Catalyntje, married Cornelis Cuyler, a prominent citizen of Albany.

Johannes Schuyler survived all his brothers and his own sons. He died in 1747, and was buried in the church on March 2d. His will was dated February 25, 1742, in which he gave to his son Philip the grist-mill at Saratoga for his

---

[1] See pages 114–119.

right of primogeniture, reserving to the children of his son John the right to grind, for their own use only, "toll free." He also gave to Philip the farm at Saratoga, then in his possession, one-half of the saw-mill, and all the "negroes and wenches on the farm, except my negro boy Mink." He also to gave to Philip the dwelling-house in Albany he then occupied, and half of his undivided seventh part of the lands in the Saratoga Patent, out of which legacies he must pay to his two sisters £50 each. He had given to his son John one hundred and sixty acres of the Saratoga Patent, to which he adds ten acres of woodland. To his daughter Margarita, wife of Colonel Philip Schuyler, he gave a picture of himself and wife in one frame; and to his daughter Catalyntje, wife of Cornelis Cuyler, a large linen-press, for "keepsakes." The remainder of his household effects he directed to be divided into five parts, one each for his four children and one for his stepdaughter, Sara Wendel, wife of Jacob Glen. To his daughters he gave each £475 in cash. The remainder of his estate was to be equally divided between his four children.

His son Philip having died at the hands of the French, without children, his gifts to him reverted to his estate. He must have become satisfied of his fate, for three months after his death, February 25, 1746, he added a codicil to the will, giving his daughter Margarita a life interest in his dwelling-house, and after her death to his daughter Catalyntje in fee. He makes no other changes, and his seventh of the Saratoga Patent remained intact, except the small farms he had given to Philip and John, Jr.

The estate of Johannes Schuyler was large for the times. He had been a prosperous merchant, and besides his real estate had accumulated much personal property. He owned a seventh of the Saratoga Patent, estimated to

contain about 18,000 acres, as Mr. Bullard says, "of the fairest land on the continent," less the farms he had given to his sons; a tract of land of nearly two thousand acres on the Mohawk River below Schenectady, less a small farm that he had sold; twenty-five hundred acres in the Schoharie Valley; two thousand acres in the Mohawk Valley, not far from Amsterdam; and one thousand acres on the east side of the Hudson, not far from the Van Rensselaer manor, besides his dwelling and other real estate in the city.

His residence was on the south side of State Street, opposite North Pearl Street, Albany; and adjoining to the east was the residence of his son John. When South Pearl Street was opened his own house was removed, but the other is still standing, situate on the southeast corner of State and South Pearl Streets. It is one of the few old structures left in the city; the most have fallen before the march of improvements. It is a fact worth noting, that the house where General Philip Schuyler was born and lived in his youth, and the house where he spent his married life and in which he died, are still well preserved; the former occupied for business purposes, the latter as a dwelling.

GENEALOGICAL TABLE.

Descendants of Johannes Schuyler.

10. JOHANNES SCHUYLER and *Elizabeth Staats.*
    - 358. Philip, bp. December 25, 1695, d. s. p. November 17, 1745, O. S.
    - 359. Johannes, bp. October 31, 1697.
      m. *Cornelia Van Cortlandt.*
    - 360. Margarita, bp. January 12, 1701.
      m. *Philip Schuyler* (17).
    - 361. Catalyntje, bp. March 5, 1704.
      m. *Cornelius Cuyler.*

359. JOHANNES SCHUYLER and *Cornelia Van Cortlandt.*
    - 362. Gertrude, b. August 18, 1724.
      m. 1, *Peter Schuyler* (20).
      m. 2, December 4, 1760, *Dr. John Cochran.*
    - 363. Johannes, b. December 30, 1725, d. s. p. November, 1746.
    - 364. Stephanus, b. September 30, 1727, d. y.
    - 365. Catherine, bp. July 14, 1728, d. y.
    - 366. Stephanus, b. December 20, 1729, d. y.
    - 367. Philip, bp. October 17, 1731, d. y.
    - 368. Philip, bp. November 11, 1733.
      m. *Catherine Van Rensselaer.*
    - 369. Cortlandt, bp. July 9, 1735.
      m. *Barbara* ———.
    - 370. Stephanus, bp. August 14, 1737.
      m. *Lena Ten Eyck.*
    - 371. Elizabeth, bp. October 8, 1738, d. y.
    - 372. Oliver, bp. February 22, 1741, d. y.

368. PHILIP SCHUYLER and *Catherine Van Rensselaer.*
    - 373. Angelica, bp. February 22, 1756.
      m. *John Barker Church.*
    - 374. Elizabeth, b. August 7, 1757.
      m. *Alexander Hamilton.*
    - 375. Margarita, bp. September 24, 1758.
      m. *Stephen Van Rensselaer.*

376. CORNELIA, bp. August 1, 1761, d. y.
377. JOHN BRADSTREET, bp. October 8, 1763, d. y.
378. JOHN BRADSTREET, bp. at home, July 23, 1765.
m. *Elizabeth Van Rensselaer.*
379. PHILIP JEREMIAH, b. January 20, 1768.
m. 1, *Sarah Rutsen.*
m. 2, *Mary A. Sawyer*, of Newburyport, Mass.
380. RENSSELAER, b. January 29, 1773.
m. *Eliza Ten Broeck.*
381. CORNELIA, b. December 22, 1776.
m. *Washington Morton.*
382. CORTLANDT, b. May 15, 1778, d. y.
383. CATHERINE VAN RENSSELAER, b. February 20, 1781.
m. 1, *Samuel Malcolm.*
m. 2, *James Cochran.*

369. CORTLANDT SCHUYLER and *Barbara* ———.
384. JOHN CORTLANDT, d. s. p. last of December, 1793.
m. *Angelica Van Rensselaer.*
Other children who returned to Ireland with their mother.
370. STEPHANUS SCHUYLER and *Lena Ten Eyck.*
385. JOHANNES, b. January 5, 1764.
m. *Catharine Cuyler*, d. 1853, at Whitesboro', N. Y., aged 81.
386. TOBIAS, b. November 27, 1766, d. y.
387. PHILIP, b. January 24, 1768, d. y.
388. TOBIAS, b. May 20, 1770, d. s. p. July 2, 1804.
389. HENRY TEN EYCK, b. December 30, 1772.
m. *Sarah Visscher.*
390. PHILIP VAN CORTLANDT, b. July 30, 1775.
m. *Cynthia Carpenter.*
391. CORNELIA, b. November 30, 1777, d. y.
392. BARENT, b. April 12, 1780, d. s. p. February 11, 1833.
393. STEPHEN VAN RENSSELAER, b. October 3, 1784.
m. ———.
394. CORTLANDT, d. s. p. July 31, 1858. He was buried from his residence in Tivoli Hollow.

378. JOHN BRADSTREET SCHUYLER and *Elizabeth Van Rensselaer.*
395. PHILIP, b. October 26, 1788.
m. *Grace Hunter.*
396. STEPHEN VAN RENSSELAER, b. May 4, 1790, d. y.

379. PHILIP JEREMIAH SCHUYLER and *Sara Rutsen.*
397. PHILIP P., m. *Rosanna Livingston.*
398. CATHERINE, m. *Samuel Jones.*

399. JOHN R., d. y.
400. ROBERT, m. *Lucinda Wood.*
401. STEPHEN V. R., m. *Catherine Morris.*

379. PHILIP JEREMIAH SCHUYLER and *Anne Sawyer.*
402. WILLIAM, d. aged 22 years, unmarried.
403. SYBILL, d. y.
404. GEORGE L., b. June 9, 1811.
m. 1, *Eliza Hamilton.*
m. 2, *Mary Morris Hamilton.*

385. JOHN S. SCHUYLER and *Catharine Cuyler.*
405. STEPHEN, d. y.
406. STEPHEN, d. s. p. at Schenectady, N. Y.
407. ABRAHAM, d. s. p. at Whitesboro', N. Y.
408. CUYLER NICHOLAS, d. s. p. at Whitesboro', N. Y.
409. HELEN.
410. BARENT, m. *Mercy Kurney.*
411. MARGARET, m. *William Palmer.*
412. JOHN, m. *Elizabeth Edick.*
413. HENRY, d. s. p. at New Hartford, N. Y.
414. CORNELIA VAN RENSSELAER; resides at Whitestown, N. Y.

389. HENRY TEN EYCK SCHUYLER and *Sarah Visscher.*
415. CORNELIA, d. y.
416. AGNES, d. y.
417. SARAH, d. y.
418. JOHN, d. January 1, 1816, aged 12 years.
419. STEPHEN; resides near Montreal in Canada.
420. HELEN, d. y.

390. PHILIP VAN CORTLANDT SCHUYLER and *Cynthia Carpenter.*
421. JOHN C., m. ———.
422. HELEN, m. *Ransom Stone,* Oneida, N. Y.
423. ANN, m. —— *Smith;* resides in Wisconsin.
424. STEPHEN V. R.; resides in Oneida, N. Y.
425. PHILIP CORTLANDT; resides in Rice County, Minn.
426. ABIGAIL, m. *Ira Hitchcock.*

393. STEPHEN V. R. SCHUYLER and ———.
427. CORTLANDT, d. s. p.
428. HELEN, d. y.
429. ADELA.

395. PHILIP SCHUYLER and *Grace Hunter.*
430. RUTH, m. *T. W. Ogden.*
431. ELIZABETH, m. *R. H. Ogden.*
432. GRACE.
433. CATHERINE, m. *Rev. John Bolton.*

434. HARRIET.
435. LETITIA, m. *C. H. de Luze.*
436. FANNY.
437. JOHN.
438. MARY.

400. ROBERT SCHUYLER and *Lucinda Wood.*
439. JULIA W., m. *Rev. W. O. Lamson.*
440. ROBERT, m. ——— .
441. LOUISA F., m. —— *Mars.*
442. KATHARINE, m. —— *Grosvenor.*
443. GEORGE W., m. *Magdalina Coster.*
444. WILLIAM S. ; killed in the civil war, at Cold Spring, Va.

401. STEPHEN V. R. SCHUYLER and *Catherine Morris.*
445. STEPHEN, d. y.
446. SARAH R., d. y.
447. GEORGIANA, d. y.

404. GEORGE L. SCHUYLER and *Eliza Hamilton.*
448. PHILIP, m. *Harriet Lowndes*, wid. of *Eugene Langdon.*
449. LOUISA LEE.
450. GEORGINA.

410. BARENT SCHUYLER and *Mercy Kurney.*
451. JOSEPH, m. and resides at Hamilton, N. Y.
452. NANCY ; resides in Utica, N. Y.

412. JOHN SCHUYLER and *Elizabeth Edick.*
453. ROBERT ; killed in the civil war, at the battle of the Wilderness.
454. JOHN ; resides in Geauga County, Ohio.
455. HENRY ; resides in Geauga County, Ohio.

421. JOHN C. SCHUYLER and ——— ; removed to Wisconsin.
456. PHILIP ; resides in Rice County, Minn.
457. JOHN, m. ———.

457. JOHN SCHUYLER and ——— ; resides in Rice County, Minn.
458. PHILIP.
459. ADELA.

NOTES ON JOHANNES SCHUYLER'S DESCENDANTS.

JOHANNES SCHUYLER'S wife, *Elizabeth Staats*, was the daughter of Doctor Abraham Staats, who came to Beverwyck, in 1642, with Dominie Megapolensis, sent out by Killian Van Rensselaer to his colony. Besides practising at his profession, Dr. Staats engaged in the Indian trade, and shipped large quantities of furs to Holland. He took up a tract of land on the east side of the Hudson River, lying along the Kinderhook Creek, which was long known as Captain Abrahamse's (Staats) Kill. He also engaged in the transportation business, commanding his own sloop plying between Beverwyck and Manhattan, and in this way was better known as captain than as doctor. He had four sons and one daughter. Two of his sons were physicians, one of whom was the well-known Doctor Samuel Staats, of New York. Elizabeth Staats, when Schuyler married her, was the widow of Captain Johannes Wendell and the mother of eleven children. Her youngest son, Jacob, by her first husband, removed to Boston, and surprised the Yankees that a Dutchman could become a leading merchant and politician in that town.

JOHN SCHUYLER, Jr. (359), died too early in life for the full development of his abilities, just as he had begun a career which gave promise of great usefulness, wealth, and high social and political position. He succeeded his

father, with whom he had been in partnership, in the mercantile business about 1733, and the same year was appointed, with J. De Peyster, a commissioner to furnish supplies to the forts at Oswego, which position he held several successive years. He was elected an alderman of the first ward in September, 1738, and again in 1739. He took a seat at the Board for Indian Affairs in December of the latter year. President Clarke appointed him mayor of Albany, and he "took the oaths appointed by law" on October 31, 1740. He died a year later, and was buried at the Flatts on November 6, 1741.

Schuyler began to make investments in lands as soon as he acquired surplus capital. In December, 1722, he bought of Philip Livingston, trustee, a portion of the Saratoga Patent, lying on the east side of the Hudson and bounded north by the Batten Kill. On August 10, 1738, the land commissioners issued to him, Jacob Glen, and Arent Bratt a certificate of survey of a tract of land which they had purchased by license of the Indians, situated on the north side of the Mohawk River, beginning below the Little Falls, extending west to Canada Creek, and thence north along the creek thirty miles, thence east twelve miles, and thence south to the place of beginning. It was a large tract, too large for three men, for it exceeded the limits prescribed by law. When the patent was issued, a year later, two thousand acres were granted to each of the parties. In 1740 Schuyler and five others procured a title from the province for twelve thousand acres, lying on the east side of the Hudson above the Saratoga Patent, of which he had an equal share.

If John Schuyler, Jr., left a will, I have been unable to find it. Although he died before his father, and could not, therefore, add his paternal patrimony to his own property, he left a very respectable estate to his own family.

Cornelia Van Cortlandt, the wife of John Schuyler, Jr., was the youngest daughter of Stephanus Van Cortlandt and Gertrude Schuyler (3). By the terms of her father's will, she shared equally with her ten brothers and sisters in his large estate. One of the brothers dying unmarried, he devised by will his share to the other ten heirs. Van Cortlandt was one of the richest men in the province; besides his manor, which was found by accurate survey to contain over 86,000 acres, he possessed lands on the Wappinger Creek, lands in New Jersey, lands and houses in New York City, and much personal property. Cornelia Schuyler, after her husband's death, procured a patent, on July 16, 1742, for thirteen hundred acres of land on the east side of the Hudson, near Fort Miller. Thus it will be seen that in her own right she possessed a considerable estate. She made her will on November 29, 1758, to which she added a codicil on August 26, 1760, giving to her son Philip £30 in satisfaction of his birthright as eldest son; to her sons Philip and Stephen, a farm on the east side of the Hudson, next to Philip Verplanck's, to be equally divided between them; to her daughter Gertrude, widow of Peter Schuyler, two houses and lots on Queen (Pearl) Street, New York, to which she added in the codicil £700 for her use during life, and therewith £1,000 additional to be divided between her two children, Peter and Cornelia; and to her son Cortlandt, then an officer in the army, stationed at Cork, Ireland, £1,800, which she considered equivalent to each of the farms devised to the other sons. The residue of the estate was to be divided equally between the four children. The will was proved on November 24, 1762.

MARGARITA SCHUYLER (360), like her grandmother, Margarita Van Slichtenhorst, for whom she was named, was a very remarkable woman. She had no children,

and her well-trained servants relieved her from the cares of the household. She was fond of reading, and had leisure to indulge her taste ; as there were few novels and no popular magazines, her studies were confined to history, religion, and politics, in which she made great proficiency. She had numerous relatives residing in New York, and, as her husband was a member of the Assembly for several years, she frequently accompanied him to the capital, where she enjoyed the best society of the province. At home she entertained often and liberally. The best citizens of Albany, and English officers stationed on the frontier, considered it a privilege to attend her receptions. Many of the officers sought her society for the knowledge she could impart on the situation of the country past and present, and because of her general information. She was on intimate terms with Lord Howe, who fell at Lake George in Abercromby's campaign, and with other officers of a like character, who were often at her table. In her early years she possessed a graceful form and figure, but after middle life she became large—unusually so ; her conversation, however, lost none of its charm and vivacity. When, in the summer of 1763, Colonel Bradstreet announced to her that her house was on fire, she did not lose her self-possession, but ordered her servants to remove her in her chair to the lawn, where she sat with perfect composure while directing the removal of the furniture.

Having no children of her own, she took an unusual interest in those of her relatives. Her husband's brothers, Peter and Jeremiah, lived not far from her residence at the Flatts, and their children she regarded as her own, as she did those of her brother and sister. The future general was one of her favorite nephews, and her frequent guest. Her interest in the young people was unfailing, assuming the tenderness of a mother ; but when she came

to make her will she showed that there was a difference in her love for the one and the other. She directed her estate to be divided into ten parts, one each for the four children of her brother and the six children of her sister, Mrs. Cuyler. Not one of her husband's nephews or nieces received anything by which to bear her in remembrance.

She had associated so much with English officers, civil and military, that when the revolutionary agitations began her sympathies were found to be with the crown, but she was not a Tory in the broad sense of the word. She took middle ground, and hoped that a way might be found for reconciliation. She loved her country and her relatives, and did not wish to see them involved in civil war. She lived long enough, however, to know that the American cause had been successful, and that the war was virtually at an end.

She died, on August 22, 1782, in the eighty-second year of her age, and was buried in the private cemetery at the Flatts between the graves of her long-loved husband and her brother John. No stone or other memorial marks her resting-place. But Mrs. Grant, of Laggan, a Scotch lady, has erected a monument to her memory more enduring than brass or marble, in "The Memoirs of an American Lady." [1]

CATALYNTJE SCHUYLER (361) married Cornelius Cuyler. The Cuyler family was of German origin. Hendrick Cuyler, a tailor, came to Albany about 1664. His son Johannes was a merchant, and a man of much prominence in business and political circles; he was an alderman, commissioner of Indian affairs, and mayor of the city. His wife was a daughter of Dirck Wesselse Ten Broeck. His

[1] When this book is reprinted its errors of genealogy should be corrected in foot-notes. It could be done quite easily.

son Cornelius was also a merchant, and for many years held a leading position in the city of his birth. He was mayor for four years by successive appointments, and a member of the Board of Indian Affairs for fourteen years. His children intermarried with the Van Cortlandts and other highly respectable families.

One son of Cornelius Cuyler and Catalyntje Schuyler, also Cornelius, born at Albany in 1741, became a general officer in the British army, colonel of the Sixty-ninth Foot, and governor of Kinsale. He distinguished himself by the capture of Tobago, and on October 29, 1814, was created a baronet. His eldest son, Charles, the second baronet, was also in the Sixty-ninth Foot and a major-general. He was succeeded by his eldest son, Charles Henry Johnes, who had served in important colonial offices in Trinidad and Honduras. Another son is a clergyman; and another, George Augustus, a colonel of the Bengal Staff Corps.

GERTRUDE SCHUYLER (362) married, first, Peter (20) the eldest son of Peter Schuyler, Jr., [Pedrom] (18), and subsequently Dr. John Cochran.

The remote ancestors of Dr. John Cochran were Scotch. The branch from which he derived descent removed to the north of Ireland in 1570. His father, James, and two brothers emigrated, and settled in Chester, Pa. He studied medicine at Lancaster, and, after being admitted to practice, volunteered as surgeon's mate in the northern army in the last French and Indian war, and accompanied Colonel Bradstreet on his march against Fort Frontenac in 1758. In this expedition he became acquainted with Philip Schuyler (368), and on his return to Albany with his sister Gertrude (362), then a young widow. After his marriage, on December 4, 1760, he removed to New Brunswick, N. J., and engaged in the practice of his pro-

fession. In the winter of 1776 he offered his services to Congress in the hospital department. In April, 1777, on the recommendation of General Washington, he was appointed surgeon-general, and assigned to duty in the northern department. In June, 1781, he was promoted to the position of director-general of the hospitals of the United Colonies. After the war he resided at Albany, and some years before his death removed to Palatine, N. Y., where, in April, 1807, he died. He was buried at Albany, but in 1875 his remains, with those of his wife, were removed to the Forest Hill Cemetery, Utica.

GENERAL PHILIP SCHUYLER.

PHILIP SCHUYLER (368) married Catherine, daughter of John Van Rensselaer, of Claverack, who was a son of Hendrick, himself a grandson of Killian, the first patroon of Rensselaerwyck.

Philip Schuyler's family group is one which will attract the attention of every intelligent reader. It includes one of the first four major-generals appointed by the Congress of the confederated colonies when the War of Independence began; a member of the British Parliament; the first Secretary of the Treasury of the United States; the first major-general commanding the Union armies on the northern frontiers in the War of 1812, who was also the last patroon of Rensselaerwyck; one of the first men who received the name of Washington at the baptismal font; a son of a Revolutionary general; the son of one of the first surgeon-generals appointed by Congress; and a member of the Fifteenth Congress.

Philip Schuyler's biography has been written by a prominent historian, and has been often sketched in essays and public addresses. His eminent services to his country are well known; his fame is established, and becomes brighter as years roll by. It is not my purpose, therefore, to give an extended account of his life, which would be superfluous. I shall only indicate some points which will serve to clear up several matters of doubt, and perhaps be of service to future writers. From my earliest recollections, I have heard him referred to, by one who knew him well, as

a man of wonderful executive ability, of broad philanthropy, of ardent patriotism, and of great confidence in the future greatness of his country. Since the time when I have been able to form an estimate of my own in the light of history, my early impressions have been confirmed and strengthened.

The genealogical table will clear away the confusion which has existed as to his family. He was neither a son nor a brother of the celebrated Colonel Peter Schuyler, the Quidor of the Indians, as some writers have stated, but his nephew in the second degree. Hereafter, writers like Chancellor Kent and Mr. Lossing need have no doubt as to his American parentage.

As to his fortune, and how it was acquired, there seems to be still less knowledge, although in certain quarters there is some importance attached to the question. Mr. Lossing, in his "Life of General Philip Schuyler," says that "he inherited his fine estate at Saratoga" from his uncle Philip, killed by the French in 1745.[1]

Judge Jones, in his "History of New York during the

---

[1] In this connection he makes other mistakes, which it may be well to correct. Referring to the destruction of Saratoga and the death of General Schuyler's uncle, 1745, he says that "his brother, Colonel Peter Schuyler, who had been Indian commissioner for many years, importuned Governor Clinton for three hundred men to defend the frontier, and also to have the fort rebuilt and garrisoned." Colonel Peter Schuyler, long an Indian commissioner, had been dead more than twenty years, and was not his brother, as seen by the table. Colonel Peter Schuyler, of New Jersey, had occupied the old fort with his Jersey Blues, and had abandoned it as untenable. He was not an Indian commissioner, nor a brother of Philip Schuyler. Perhaps he meant Colonel Philip Schuyler of the Flatts. But he was not a brother, only a cousin. In a foot-note, Mr. Lossing says that "Fort Saratoga stood upon a hill upon the east side of the Hudson opposite Schuylerville." Not so; the fort which the French destroyed stood on the west side of the Hudson, south of Schuylerville. The new fort, which Governor Clinton caused to be built in 1746, stood on the east side of the river, and was destroyed by Clinton's orders in the next year, 1747.

Revolutionary War," says that "Colonel Bradstreet, then quartermaster and commissary in that part of the province, appointed Schuyler his deputy, and as such he was constantly employed. By this means, from moderate circumstances, he became rich. His father, having little personal estate, sold provisions." Now, Judge Jones is not good authority, but, as the New York Historical Society has given his history a *quasi* endorsement by its publication, his insinuations as to Schuyler's integrity in the use of public money should be shown to be false. It is true that he was appointed commissary under Bradstreet to supply the garrison at Oswego, on the recommendation of the general commanding, but he resigned the next year. A year later he again entered the army, and accepted the position of deputy commissary. He continued in the service to the end of the campaign, which resulted in the conquest of Canada. Colonel Bradstreet had been quartermaster and commissary for several years. It was now necessary to settle with the government and account for the large sums of money which had passed through his hands. This accounting could be done better in England than in the colony, but as his own health was broken he delegated Schuyler to transact the business. He reposed implicit confidence in his ability and integrity, having known "his zeal, punctuality, and strict honesty in his majesty's service." He sailed from New York on this business in the spring of 1761, and accomplished his task to the satisfaction of his principal and of the government. It appears that he was in the commissary department only about three years—too short a time to have made much money from the position, even had he been disposed to abuse his trust. The testimony of Bradstreet as to his integrity, and the satisfactory adjustment of the accounts, effectually dispose of Judge Jones' insinuations. His fort-

une was acquired by legitimate means, as I shall now proceed to show.

When Philip Schuyler reached his majority, he renounced his right of primogeniture, and decided to have the landed estate to which he was entitled by law, as well as the personal estate of his parents, divided equally between himself, his brothers, and his sister. Nevertheless, his share of the estate, when it was divided, constituted a respectable property, as must appear from the history of his family for three generations. He belonged to an industrious and saving race, who, by their business abilities and economy in expenditures, had laid the foundations of large estates. Philip Schuyler inherited the wisdom and the ability to increase his patrimony without resorting to questionable methods.

His uncle Philip (358), from whom Mr. Lossing says he inherited the fine estate at Saratoga, possessed only a modest property, which he devised by will to his sister Margarita (360) and to four nephews—John (363) and Philip (368) Schuyler, John and Philip Cuyler. The estate of his father, after 1747, included a one-third share of his grandfather's property, and remained undivided more than twenty years. On July 20, 1762, his brother Cortlandt, residing in Cork, Ireland, gave a power of attorney to some friends in Albany for the purpose of making a partition among the heirs ; and also authorized them, in case of his mother's death, to make a like division of her estate. This paper was proved in Albany, on February 8, 1763, by "Archibald McElroy, peruke-maker, late of Coleraine, Ireland." His mother meantime had died, and her will had been proved. The attorneys, therefore, made division of both estates, and the heirs, Philip (368), Cortlandt (369), Stephen (370), and Gertrude (362), came into possession of their respective shares. In what property these shares

were constituted, I have been unable to learn. From the fact that Philip Schuyler about this time controlled the Saratoga lands, I infer they were assigned to him as his portion in part.

A few years later, in 1768, the heirs of Robert Livingston, Jr., whose wife was the eldest daughter of Colonel Peter Schuyler, to whom her father had given his three-fourteenths of the Saratoga Patent, made division of their lands. Philip Schuyler, by right of purchase, came in for nearly four thousand acres, and in July of the same year bought another share of nearly four thousand acres. A little later the heirs of Jacob Glen transferred to him another lot lying within the bounds of the patent. Philip Schuyler (17), his uncle by marriage, left him by his will (proved in 1766) a part of the old Schuyler homestead, near the present village of West Troy, and his aunt, Margarita (360), Philip Schuyler's widow, by will made him one of her ten legatees in 1782. By his wife, Catherine Van Rensselaer, he came into possession of a part of the large estate of her father—how much I do not know. Thus far I have been able to trace a large amount of property which came into his hands by inheritance, and some by purchase. There may have been more, but I have failed to discover it. Enough has been shown to prove that he was by no means a poor man, when, in 1763, having retired from all other employments, he began to develop his Saratoga lands. These were the most valuable of his possessions. On the premises was an unfailing water-power of capacity sufficient for the operation of various kinds of mills. The country abounded in pine and hard-woods of the best quality, and the soil of the intervales along the river and water-courses was rich. There was a ready market at New York and in the West Indies for all his productions at highly remunerative prices. He now increased his

facilities for the manufacture of flour and lumber, and brought a larger acreage under cultivation. He built a flax-mill, the first of the kind in America, for which he received a medal from the Society for Promoting Arts, and put up a summer mansion near the site of the one destroyed in 1745, on the bluff overlooking the valley of the Hudson. So large were the productions from his mills and plantations, that to send them to market economically he established a transportation line between Albany and New York, consisting of a schooner and three sloops. The freight was brought from Saratoga to Albany in boats and rafts, and then shipped in the larger vessels. He lived more than half the year on his estate, giving his personal attention to his extensive and lucrative business. Such were the means and methods by which he acquired his fortune.

Philip Schuyler occupies a position so prominent in the history of his country, that any sketch of his life, however brief, would be imperfect, did it not trace the steps by which he reached his eminence. The history of his family is contained in the preceding pages, as well as that of the means by which he acquired his estate. It remains to outline his public career.

His education was obtained in the schools of his native city, supplemented by an attendance of not more than two years at a select school at New Rochelle, taught by a Huguenot minister, where he studied French and the higher mathematics. Although interrupted by a prolonged attack of an hereditary disease, the gout, he acquired a fair amount of book-learning, comparing favorably with that procured in the colleges of the time. After leaving school he spent a few years in the acquisition of that kind of knowledge which best fitted him for a business life, partly in a mercantile establishment, and partly on trading ex-

cursions into the interior among the Indians. His personal appearance was striking, and his manners pleasant and attractive. His family position and his own accomplishments gave him access to the best society of the province, while the entire absence of affected superiority made him popular with all classes of men.

At the beginning of the last French and Indian war, when he was twenty-two years old, he was authorized by Lieutenant-Governor De Lancey to recruit a company of men for the army. The ranks were soon filled, and Schuyler was commissioned their captain. He joined the army of Sir William Johnson, destined to operate against Crown Point; and was in the battle of Lake George, September 8, 1755, in which the French were defeated and their wounded general made a prisoner. A few days after the battle he returned to Albany to get married. The next winter he was in Fort Edward, where his fidelity and efficiency commended him to the notice of the commanding general. In the following spring he accompanied Colonel Bradstreet with supplies to Oswego. On their return they were attacked by a superior force, which they repulsed with loss. On this occasion he showed unusual courage and humanity in rescuing a wounded Frenchman from abandonment and consequent starvation. He and Bradstreet, with eight men, reached an island in the Oswego River, from which they drove thirty of the enemy. They held their position until they were about to be cut off, when they retreated to their boats. The wounded Frenchman begged to be taken with them, but the boat being too small to accommodate him, Schuyler took him on his back, swam across the stream to the shore, and placed him in the hands of the surgeon. The wounded man recovered, and was allowed to return home. More than twenty years afterward, when General Schuyler was in command of the

Northern Department, the Frenchman managed to procure an interview, and thanked him as the preserver of his life.

The military operations of the year were not favorable to the English, owing chiefly to the incapacity and slowness of their generals, and Schuyler, becoming dissatisfied, resigned from the army. In the spring of 1758 he again accepted service under Colonel Bradstreet, to whom he was warmly attached, as deputy commissary, with the rank of major; but at the close of the war he again resigned, and for a few years gave his undivided attention to his private business. His affairs frequently called him to New York, where he met the governor and other provincial officials on business or in society.

The French and Indian wars had taught the colonists the use of arms, and inspired them with courage to defend their rights by whomsoever assailed. They had learned that English officers were frequently incompetent, and English soldiers not invincible. The wars, until the last, had been maintained largely at their own expense in men and money; and whatever successes had attended the English arms had been mainly achieved by themselves. The last war, culminating in the fall of the French power on the continent, had been sustained in a great measure by the British crown. The English Government had furnished troops and money to prosecute it to a successful issue, and now resolved to replenish its treasury by taxing the colonies. The colonists claimed the rights of Englishmen, and resisted the execution of laws which they had had no voice in framing. These views and the measures of resistance had the hearty sympathies of Major Schuyler.

In 1767, a new regiment of militia was organized in the territory lying north of Albany, of which Philip Schuyler was appointed the colonel, not on account of his "social position," but on account of his fitness. He was on inti-

mate terms with Sir Henry Moore, the governor, who knew quite well Colonel Schuyler's political sentiments, and by this appointment may have sought to detach him from the patriots then fast rising into prominence. Were this the motive of the appointment, the governor soon saw its futility. Early the next year the Assembly was dissolved, because it would not legislate according to the wishes and recommendations of the governor, and writs were issued for a new election. At the solicitation of friends, Colonel Schuyler consented to be one of the candidates of the city and county of Albany. Of the twenty-seven members composing the Assembly, Albany was entitled to two, chosen by the freeholders. The election resulted in favor of his ticket; and, with Jacob H. Ten Eyck, the other member, he took his seat at the first session, in October, 1768.

The country was now on the verge of revolution. England insisted on taxing the colonies in various forms for the purposes of revenue, and the colonists persisted in their determination to resist the laws made by a parliament in which they were not represented. The governing classes readily submitted to the unjust enactments so long as their salaries were paid, but a large majority of the people was opposed to their enforcement. Notwithstanding Colonel Schuyler's social position with the former, being connected by blood with several of them, his political convictions and sympathies were with the latter. In the Legislature he joined the opposition, and steadily acted with the people's representatives. One of his earliest acts, outside of politics, was the introduction of a bill for the preservation and translation of the Dutch records of the city and county of Albany. It passed both houses, and was signed by the governor on December 31, 1768.[1]

[1] The law was never enforced as to the translation. A century later, many of the records were translated by Professor Pearson, of Union Col-

The Assembly did not meet the expectations of the royal governor, and he dissolved it on January 2, 1769. A new election was ordered, when Colonel Schuyler and his colleague were again returned, but the new house contained some new men, who strengthened the party of the administration. Two or three years later, two new counties were organized, whose members adhered to the royal cause and swelled the loyalist majority. The opposition, however, under the leadership of Colonel Schuyler and George Clinton, the future governor of the State, undismayed by the number of their opponents, assumed a firmer stand in favor of human rights, and by thus doing inspired courage and hope among their constituents. Agitation against the acts of Parliament gathered strength, until it was proposed to hold a Congress, composed of delegates from all the colonies, for consultation on the state of the country. Colonel Schuyler was solicited to represent the city and county of Albany, but his health was such that he could not attend. Twelve colonies sent deputies, and their proceedings, though careful and conservative, were satisfactory to the friends of liberty.

The next year it was proposed to hold another Continental Congress, and since the New York Assembly refused to appoint delegates, as had been done by other colonies, the people, determined to have a representation, called a provincial convention to take this and other matters relating to their welfare into consideration. The convention met in New York on April 20th, and was attended by forty-two delegates chosen from the several counties of the province. Colonel Schuyler was one of the deputies from Albany. The session lasted only three days.

---

lege, and published by Joel Munsell, as a private enterprise. Nearly three thousand pages are yet in the original. It seems a pity that the city of Albany cannot spend a few hundred dollars to complete the work.

Twelve delegates, among them Colonel Schuyler, were appointed to the Congress, any five of whom could represent the colony. Meanwhile the country was rapidly drifting toward war. The convention had adjourned, and the country members were on their way home, when the news of the skirmish at Lexington was received in New York. It was quickly sent to all parts of the province, and created intense excitement. The Legislature being subservient to the royal cause, the patriots could not look to them for leadership in this alarming crisis, nor could they trust them for future legislation. They resorted to the revolutionary measure of calling a Provincial Congress, which should assume the functions of government. After its meeting in New York, on May 23, 1775, the Colonial Legislature did not hold another session.

Colonel Schuyler took his seat in the Continental Congress on May 15th. That body proceeded cautiously, but effectively, in its measures of preparation for the impending conflict. They saw the need of an army, and resolved to call twenty thousand men to the field. They appointed Colonel George Washington commander-in-chief, four major-generals, and several brigadiers. The major-generals were Artemas Ward, of Massachusetts; Charles Lee, an Englishman and a soldier of fortune; Philip Schuyler, of New York; and Israel Putnam, of Connecticut. With the exception of Lee, none of these generals had any experience in what may be termed civilized warfare. They were militia officers, and whatever they knew of military science they had learned in the French and Indian wars, under incompetent English generals. But they were the best that the country could produce. They possessed bravery and discretion—qualities which, judging by the past, did not exist to any considerable extent in the English commanders to whom they would be opposed. In time they would

learn the art of war, when they would become more than a match for their opponents.

Major-General Schuyler was put in command of the Northern Department, or rather of the province of New York. Owing to the fact that New York had always been a royal province, whose governor and other civil officers were appointed by the crown, it contained more loyalists, or Toriés, in proportion to its population, than any of the other colonies. The bulk of the inhabitants were on Long Island and in the immediate vicinity of the capital, where the influence of the crown officers was strongest and the Tories most numerous. They enjoyed the highest social position, and, with the exception of the four powerful families, the Van Cortlandts, the Livingstons, the Van Rensselaers, and the Schuylers, they possessed the largest amount of wealth. The Six Nations of Indians lived within the borders of New York, in war a power to be dreaded. For thirty years or more Sir William Johnson had been their superintendent. He was a loyalist of the most pronounced type. With large amounts of money placed at his disposal, he had secured their steady attachment to the English interests. He was now dead, but his son and nephew had succeeded to his place in the affections of those wild warriors. The Johnsons also had a large tenantry of Scotch and Irish, who were more subservient than the Indians. The position of the province in reference to Canada was the same as in the wars with the French. It might be invaded by the enemy from two directions—from the north through Lake Champlain to the valley of the Hudson, from the northwest through the country of the Six Nations to the Mohawk River. On both routes the country was sparsely settled, and between them intervened a savage wilderness. Albany, as a century before, was the base of supplies, and the forts, which were relied upon to obstruct the march of

an enemy, were each over a hundred miles distant. Supplies and ammunition were conveyed in small boats up the rivers, and in wagons around the falls and rapids. It will be seen that the work of supplying the garrisons was one of great labor and expense. The army before Boston, under General Ward, was adopted by Congress, and Washington, the commander-in-chief, was directed to assume the command. General Schuyler was left to his own resources. It has been said by an eminent historian, that "Schuyler owed his place to his social position, not to his military talents." It might be asked, which of the generals appointed by Congress, except Lee, owed his place to military talents? Were they not all appointed rather for their fitness than for any other reason? If social positions controlled the appointments, why was not a Jay, or a Van Cortlandt, a Livingston, or a Van Rensselaer, named instead of Schuyler? Those families had social position equal to the Schuylers, and greater wealth. No; Mr. Bancroft is mistaken. Schuyler was chosen because of his eminent fitness. True, he had little experience as a soldier, but he had unquestioned capacity as an organizer, much experience in business requiring executive ability of the highest order, the unquestioned confidence of the public, and ardent love of his country. There was a great work to do, more important than fighting—the preparation for fighting. Congress was wiser than Bancroft, and appointed almost the only man in New York, or New England, who could successfully perform the work assigned to him. There was no army in the Northern Department; Schuyler had to raise one. There were no military supplies; he had to provide them. Little money was given him; he had to procure what was lacking. Forts Ticonderoga and Crown Point had been seized by Ethan Allen and his Green Mountain Boys; he had to garrison and de-

fend them. Fort Stanwix was small and inadequate; he had to enlarge and rebuild it. The Five Nations were in alliance with the English; he had to conciliate them with presents, and oblige them to remain neutral. Sir John Johnson and his bands of Tories, unless watched and dispersed, would prove a serious embarrassment; he had to watch and disperse them. Who other than General Schuyler could have performed this great amount of work as well as he? None other. Congress knew their man, and "social position" had little or nothing to do with his appointment.

The invasion and conquest of Canada had been a favorite project with New England and New York for seventy years before it was finally subdued. The project was now revived. It was thought to be a favorable opportunity, because the Canadian French were restive under English rule, and were supposed to be ready to throw off the yoke of their conquerors. The English forces were not strong, and were poorly prepared to defend their extensive frontiers. It was believed that an American army could march on Montreal with little opposition, and, after taking that city, capture Quebec, before re-enforcements could arrive from England. To make sure of this stronghold, another army could march through the wilderness of Maine and co-operate with the first. The project commended itself to Congress, and they determined to make the effort. It devolved on General Schuyler to organize the army of invasion by way of Lake Champlain, and on the commander-in-chief that by way of Maine. The first was placed under the command of General Montgomery, and the latter under that of General Arnold. Montgomery, laboring under much embarrassment for want of men and from bad discipline among the troops, captured the outlying forts, and entered Montreal in triumph. He appeared be-

fore Quebec early in December, some three weeks after Arnold, emerging from the wilderness, had taken possession of the "Plains of Abraham," where General Wolfe, sixteen years before, had fought and fallen. The two wings, when united, formed an army much too small and too poorly equipped for the capture of the strongly fortified city. If taken, it must be taken by assault; the attempt was made, but failed. Montgomery was killed and Arnold wounded. The next spring the Americans retreated, and were slowly driven out of Canada, notwithstanding the extraordinary efforts made by Schuyler to re-enforce them; they had to recede before superior numbers. He was seriously embarrassed for the want of hard money, which Congress did not supply, and without which it was impossible to subsist an army in an enemy's country. When it was seen that Canada must be evacuated, Schuyler undertook to keep possession of Lake Champlain, and thus prevent an invasion of New York. During the spring and summer of 1776, he employed a large force of workmen in building batteaux at Lake George, and at Whitehall in the construction of sloops and gondolas, which were armed and equipped as vessels of war. The fleet was put under the command of General Arnold. In a battle on the lake he was outnumbered and beaten, with the loss of his fleet—taken by the enemy or destroyed by himself. Forts Ticonderoga and Crown Point were now the only obstacles in the way of the victors; but the English retired into Canada, and gave the Americans time to strengthen these defences.

General Schuyler had enemies and rivals. He was a man of pronounced convictions, and tenacious of military order and discipline; he had offended the officers and men of the New England contingents by insisting on these cardinal virtues of a well-regulated army. Others were

envious of his reputation, and some aspired to his position. They made their influence felt in Congress, which became dissatisfied with his conduct of the war, and virtually superseded him by the appointment of General Gates to the command of the army in Canada, in March, 1777. There was no army in Canada, but Gates and his friends assumed that he was in command of the northern army, now in the forts on Lake Champlain. General Schuyler was in Kingston, whither he had gone to consult the provincial convention on matters relating to his department, when the news of Gates' appointment was received. The convention, resenting the indignity, immediately appointed him a delegate to Congress, in which he took his seat shortly afterward. At his request, a court of inquiry into his conduct was appointed. While they were preparing to investigate, he assumed command of the Pennsylvania militia, and performed much useful work.

The committee made their investigations, and their report was so favorable that Congress was satisfied that it had made a mistake. It defined the Northern Department to include within its limits the forts on Lake Champlain, of which General Schuyler was in command. On his return to Albany he found that Gates had lingered in Albany, and that nothing had been done to render the defences more secure. Valuable time had been lost. It was known that the English were preparing for the invasion of New York on both the routes heretofore indicated, and Schuyler set to work to render the attempt abortive. Meanwhile a State constitution had been adopted, and a State government organized. Schuyler was put in nomination for governor, but, believing that the office would interfere with his military duties, he declined to be a candidate. He devoted his time and energies, as well as much of his personal estate and resources, to protecting the

newly organized State from a successful invasion. As Fort Ticonderoga was believed to be the key to the situation, he sought to make it impregnable. His efforts were useless. It was evacuated by General St. Clair on July 6th, greatly to the surprise of Congress and of the country. But Schuyler did not despair. With only fifteen hundred men at Fort Edward, and with a small supply of warlike material, he believed that he could effectually prevent the enemy from reaching his objective point, provided he were furnished with re-enforcements and supplies. He removed the cannon from the fort on Lake George, broke up the roads, obstructed Wood Creek with fallen trees, compelling Burgoyne to move so slowly that the Americans had time to recover from the depression consequent upon the loss of Ticonderoga. He earnestly entreated Congress, the commander-in-chief, and the New England colonies to hasten forward detachments of regular troops and militia. With these on the ground, he predicted that Burgoyne would not see Albany in this campaign. Congress was slow to act. Washington could not weaken his own army by detachments, and New England was dissatisfied. Re-enforcements in sufficient numbers did not arrive, and Schuyler was obliged to retire before the advancing foe. Fort Edward, owing to its situation, could not be defended, nor was there another point short of Stillwater where he could make a stand and maintain his position. For want of men that position could not be retained, and he retired to the mouth of the Mohawk River, where a small army could hold a much larger one in check. Schuyler's choice of the place where to make a final stand was a wise one, showing him to be a skilful strategist. Nearly a century later, General Winfield Scott, reviewing the ground, said that it was "the true strategic point for the defence of Albany and the lower Hudson."

Here troops began to arrive, and Schuyler soon found himself strong enough to advance to his former position at Stillwater. Meantime the tongue of slander and detraction was doing its work. The New England delegates in Congress took up the voice, and insisted on a change of generals for the Northern Department. They were the friends of Gates, and had been instrumental in securing his former appointment to the army in Canada. They now declared that the New England militia would not serve under Schuyler, thus betraying their want of patriotism. They finally accomplished their purpose, and Schuyler was superseded by Gates, not, however, before the battle of Bennington had been fought, and the siege of Fort Stanwix had been abandoned. These two affairs had a marked influence on Burgoyne, and were decisive of his campaign. Had Schuyler been left in command, the result would have been the same. Burgoyne would have surrendered, but probably not on the easy terms he obtained from Gates. General Schuyler did not retire in disgust, but believed it to be his duty to render all the assistance in his power to his successor; by his influence among the Indians of the Six Nations, and by the pledge of his personal responsibility for supplies, he made it the more easy for Gates to win the great victory.

Meantime he solicited an inquiry into his conduct, and would not entertain a thought of resignation until he had had an opportunity to vindicate his reputation before a court-martial. He was well assured in his own mind that such a tribunal would acquit him of any blame for the evacuation of Ticonderoga and his conduct of the campaign. He felt sure that he had prepared the way for victory, while another had gathered the laurels. After much solicitation, Congress was induced to order a court-martial, composed chiefly of New England officers and only one

from his own State. He conducted his own defence, passing in review the whole history of his operations during the campaign. After a session of three days, the court unanimously found that he was not guilty of any neglect of duty, and therefore acquitted him with the highest honor. The verdict was subsequently confirmed by Congress. He then resigned from the army, and retired to private life. He did not, however, forget his duty to his country, but while the war continued rendered many important services. The finding of the court-martial was accepted as final, and Schuyler's detractors were silenced. During the thirty remaining years of his life, in the midst of fierce political strife and excitement, there were no insinuations, not even a whisper, to his prejudice. Writers like Chancellor Kent, Chief-Justice Marshall, Jared Sparks, Washington Irving, and Mr. Lossing have praised his generalship and done justice to his memory.

It remained for Mr. Bancroft, sixty years after Schuyler's death, to discover that he was a coward. What, the friend and correspondent of George Washington a coward! Impossible! Washington never lost confidence in his friend, and did not believe him a coward. In 1781, General and Mrs. Washington were sponsors at the baptism of Schuyler's youngest child; with him, two years later, he visited the battle-fields of Saratoga; with him he retained the most friendly relations to the day of his death. Did Mr. Bancroft suspect that his charge was a reflection on the character of the man whom he seeks to exalt above all others? Washington was too pure a patriot, and too self-respecting a man to associate with one whose cowardice might have proved the ruin of his country. If there be anything in blood, Schuyler's descent from a brave nation and a brave race disproves the charge. "His patriotism so sincere," other words of Mr. Bancroft, "that he willingly

used his credit, influence, and connections to bring out the resources of his native province,"—"His humanity so great, he brooked no delay in adopting measures for the relief of the sick,"—"Always on the alert to send help where it was wanted,"—"He loved his country more than his own rank or fortune," — these truthful utterances of Mr. Bancroft prove him to have been no coward. Of what coward can such things be said in truth? His moral heroism in the Legislature, when contending for the rights of the people against the tyrannical edicts of the government, prove that he was no coward. His determination not to resign when superseded, until a court-martial had investigated his conduct, shows his nerve in the presence of enemies. His whole life brands the charge of cowardice with falsehood.

Perhaps Mr. Bancroft's New England education, and his New England prejudices against the Dutch, had an influence upon his pen. Perhaps his great devotion to Washington, as the hero of his history, impelled him to cast aspersions upon every man, however pure and noble, who might share in the glory of liberating his country. Whatever the motive, he uttered the slander without due reflection, and on insufficient authority. When challenged to produce his proof, he presented extracts from letters and documents, which, when read in their connection, utterly fail to sustain the accusation.[1]

General Schuyler retired from the army, but did not leave the service of his country. In various capacities and in various ways he contributed to the final success of the patriot cause. He had the satisfaction of knowing that his services were appreciated and acknowledged. He retained his position on the Board for Indian Affairs;

[1] I refer the reader to Correspondence and Remarks, upon Bancroft's History of the Northern Campaign of 1777, and the Character of Major-General Philip Schuyler. By George L. Schuyler. New York, 1867.

like his ancestors, he was a friend of the Indians, by whom he was much esteemed. He served three terms in the State Senate, and in 1789 he and Rufus King were elected the first United States Senators from New York under the Constitution of 1787, the adoption of which by his State he was largely instrumental in securing. He was surveyor-general of the State from 1781 to 1784, and a member of the commission to adjust the boundaries between New York and Massachusetts. The final report defining the boundaries is in his handwriting. In the spring of 1797 he was again chosen to the United States Senate; but ill health compelled him to resign soon after taking his seat. He was a warm friend of internal improvements, and as early as 1776 had estimated the cost of a canal connecting the Hudson with Lake Champlain.

The death of his son-in-law, Alexander Hamilton, was a severe shock to his system, and he did not long survive him. He died on November 18, 1804. It was left for a granddaughter, Mrs. Miller, a daughter of Cornelia Schuyler and Washington Morton, to erect his monument, in 1871, in the Albany Rural Cemetery, where his remains repose. It is of granite, thirty-six feet high, bearing the simple inscription,

MAJOR-GENERAL

PHILIP SCHUYLER.

Born at Albany,

Nov. 22, 1733.

Died Nov. 18, 1804.

As to General Schuyler's land transactions, I have been unable to learn that they were large outside the Saratoga Patent, much of which he obtained. I find only one patent issued to him personally. There may have been others

granted to companies in which he was interested.[1] On September 22, 1789, he procured a patent for forty-five acres of land in two parcels on the outlet of Lake George, which afforded him a valuable water-power. General Schuyler in his business enterprises was careful to secure such valuable property. Besides the outlet of Saratoga Lake, he owned two mill-privileges on Batten Kill, which he gave to his son Philip Jeremiah, and now he possessed the power of which another lake was the reservoir.

General Schuyler's will, written, as he says, "by my own hand," bears date June 20, 1803, and was proved March 2, 1827. It covers several folio pages of the records.

He devises to his grandson Philip, son of John Bradstreet Schuyler, a portion of his Saratoga estate on Fish Creek within certain bounds; to his sons Philip Jeremiah and Rensselaer, other portions of his Saratoga property; the residue of said estate he divides equally between his five daughters, or their heirs; to his daughter Cornelia he also gives $2,000, and to Catherine $5,000, cash. All the rest and residue of his estate was to be equally divided among his children and his grandsons Philip Schuyler and Stephen Van Rensselaer.

If doubts or differences should arise among the heirs, in order to avoid lawsuits, he recommends that reference should be made to his friends, Hon. James Kent, Hon. Jacob Radclift, Egbert Bensen, Esq., Abraham Van Vechten, Esq., and John V. Henry, Esq., or any three of them.

The executors were his sons Philip Jeremiah and Rensselaer, and sons-in-law John Barker Church, Alexander Hamilton, and Stephen Van Rensselaer.

It has been remarked that General Schuyler did not cease his efforts in behalf of the patriot cause after he re-

[1] At the time of his death he owned 6,697 acres of land in seven different land companies, which were appraised by his executors at $52,445.

signed his commission and left the army, but continued his efforts to make that cause a success. In this work he was ably supported by other prominent citizens of Albany and vicinity. They employed secret agents to observe the movements of the enemy, to procure intelligence of organized expeditions against the northern frontier, and to make regular reports to their principals. They were so successful in learning the designs of the English, and in concerting measures to render them abortive, that the British officers commanding in Canada at last determined to gain possession of their persons and to hold them as prisoners, believing that thus they could better accomplish their purposes of murder and pillage. Colonel St. Leger, who had fled from before the walls of Fort Schuyler, scared away by the strangely significant gestures of one man supposed to be demented, seems to have been detailed to take charge of this peculiar warfare, and organize the parties for the capture of these marked individuals. We have seen that one such party carried off Mr. Bleecker from his home at Tomhanack ; and he was not the only one thus kidnapped.

The party sent against General Schuyler was not so successful. The story has been told so often, that it has become familiar to the readers of the history of those times ; but I now repeat it, that it may be compared with the version as given by one of the actors in the drama. I give it in the words of a recent writer :[1]

"The General had been warned of attempts that would be made to capture him, and he had several guards about the place. A band of Tories and Indians organized themselves under Waltermeyer at the Whitehall farm, and burst in upon the general's premises while the guards were asleep. Their arms had been removed to the cellar by Mrs. Church through a mistake. General Schuyler

[1] Magazine of American History for July, 1884.

retreated to an upper room, and fired a pistol to alarm the garrison, half a mile distant. The family were all gathered in the room with the General, when their babe, Catherine, was missed. Mrs. Schuyler attempted to go after her, but was detained by her husband. The daughter Margaret slipped by, and felt her way through the darkness to the cradle on the first floor. Although the enemy had entered the house, no one saw her till she had reached the stairs on her return. An Indian then threw a tomahawk, which cut the dress of the girl and buried itself in the railing of the stairway, where the mark is still visible. The girl fled to the upper room, having told the raiders that the General had gone to alarm the town. The raiders continued to plunder, until the sound of the General's voice above appeared to be giving orders to some of his followers outside. They then fled with what they had secured, and with three of the General's guard, and they did not stop short of Canada. None of the stolen plate was ever returned, but some of it was afterward used in Canada, with the comment, 'This came from General Schuyler's house.'"

All the versions of this affair I have seen are by American writers. I now give another, as told to me by Mr. Alexander Murdoch, of Ithaca, a Scotchman by birth and education:

"In 1829–30, while I was an apprentice in Scotland, I became acquainted with John McDonald, who was a pensioner and blind, having lost his sight in Egypt. He had spent most of his life in the army, and had fought in the four quarters of the globe. He was an intelligent man, and fond of relating his experiences when he could find ready listeners. He lived only two doors from our shop, and was a frequent visitor. In moments of leisure we encouraged him to tell his stories of army life. He had served all through the American Revolution, and had a large fund of anecdotes relating to that stormy period. As I had resolved to make the United States my future

home, I listened with more than usual interest to everything relating to the country and people.

"One of his many stories of adventure referred to an attempt to capture General Schuyler, of Albany. The party organized for this purpose was composed of picked men from his own Highland regiment, and he was selected as one of them. It was known that the Schuyler mansion was situated outside the city, surrounded with trees and a garden attached filled with shrubbery. The party was guided by an Indian, who had often visited the General, and had been treated with great kindness by himself and family. He was familiar with the grounds and all the approaches to the house. For his treachery to his friends, he received the bribe of a gun, a keg of rum, and a roll of tobacco. When the party had arrived within a few miles of the house, they concealed themselves, and waited till they were assured the General was at home. After learning this fact, they left their hiding-place late in the afternoon, and silently stole their way through the woods, arriving near the mansion unobserved not long after dark. McDonald and five others were detailed to enter the house, and others posted near the doors and windows. The leader of the band, with arms concealed under his coat, took position not far from the front entrance. The squad of six men gained access through the rear entrance on the ground floor in perfect silence, but, as they approached the stairway leading to the rooms above, a bayonet became detached and fell to the floor with a ringing noise. Immediately a young woman with a light in her hand was seen on the landing, and, discovering the strange visitors, she gave an alarm. The General flew to the attic, from which he fired his heavy pistols, apparently a preconcerted signal of danger, for by the trampling of feet and mingled voices it was quickly learned a crowd of armed men was rapidly approaching. The invading party hastily retreated into the darkness, and finally reached Canada in safety. The Indian guide, however, fell into the hands of the Americans, and was promptly executed."

CORTLANDT SCHUYLER (369) at an early age entered a regiment of the English army then stationed in this province. Not long afterward his regiment was ordered to Ireland, where Schuyler caused some sensation, both because he was more than ordinarily fine looking and because it was something new to see a man from the backwoods of America in the royal uniform. From his nativity, and his personal appearance, he was called by his acquaintances the "Handsome Savage." His good looks and shoulder-straps soon made an impression on the ladies, one of whom—Miss Barbara ——, of Cork—accepted his offer of marriage. He remained abroad several years, but returned with his family before July, 1764. He had won his promotion to a captaincy, but apparently resigned about the time he came back to America, or soon after. All his family, except his aunt, "The American Lady," were in sympathy with the republicans then demanding better laws or independence. Without doubt his correspondence with friends at home, especially with his brother Philip, had led him to suspect that the agitation would end in war, and, rather than be in a position where he might be required to fight against his land and kindred, he left the army, and resigned his flattering prospects in the future. Not thus acted his cousin, Cornelius Cuyler, whose father had bought him into the army about the time that Schuyler had entered "without money and without price." Cuyler retained his place, and in a few years after Schuyler left rose to the rank of major-general.

In July, 1764, Captain Cortlandt Schuyler bought from the city of Albany eleven acres of land, "and one rod for broken land," on "Gallows Hill," for £200 and an annual rent of fifty shillings. Four years later he took on lease, from Patroon Van Rensselaer, a farm of six hundred acres on the west side of the Hudson River, bounded north

by Normand's Creek, and afterward known as Crystal Hill. He resided on this farm on October 2, 1773, and soon after lost his life by a fall from his horse while hunting. Had he lived he would in all probability have occupied a prominent position in the army of the Revolution. He was a trained soldier, and just the kind of man much wanted to organize the troops and conduct a campaign. His widow and several children (how many I have not been able to learn) returned to Ireland, where, it is said, some bearing the name still reside.

His eldest son, John Cortlandt (385), married Angelica, daughter of Henry J. Van Rensselaer, and resided in Watervliet, where he died the latter part of December, 1793. In his will, dated December 27, 1793, and proved January 11, 1794, he gives to his wife £1,400 for her right of dower; to his mother, Barbara, £500 in lieu of dower for lands received from his father; to brothers and sisters (without naming them) the residue of his estate. The executors were "Mother Barbara" for real estate in Europe; "Father-in-law Henry J. Van Rensselaer" and "Uncle Stephen J. Schuyler" for real estate in America.

The Crystal Hill farm was bought of the executors, on February 10, 1794, by Major James Van Rensselaer for £300. Since the latter's death the farm has been divided, and the old mansion turned to strange uses.

Very little is known of STEPHANUS SCHUYLER (370). He was assistant alderman for a year or two, and then apparently removed from the city in 1765, for his name no longer appears in the records. To what place he went, or where he resided the remainder of his life, I do not know. It is probable that he took up his residence on one of the many tracts of land belonging to his family in the neighborhood of Albany. He was a member of Assembly for that county from 1777 to 1779, and a colonel of a

regiment attached to General Ten Broeck's brigade in the Revolutionary War. These were the only public positions he held. He seems to have led a quiet life, without aspirations for a large fortune or political preferment, contented with the estate received by inheritance and the position of a private citizen. He was executor of the will of his aunt, "The American Lady," and of that of his nephew, John Cortlandt Schuyler, showing that he was esteemed by his friends for his probity and business capacity. His descendants are widely scattered, some residing in Oneida County, N. Y., others in Ohio and Minnesota, while some are in Canada. None, however, linger about the home of their ancestor. One of his sons, Barent, was an officer in the United States Army, War of 1812–'15. Several of his grandsons were soldiers and officers in the late civil war, of whom three brothers enlisted in an Ohio regiment, and were on the field when Lee surrendered.

Stephanus Schuyler died on December 24, 1820, at the age of eighty-four years, having survived his illustrious brother, the General, about sixteen years. His wife, *Lena Ten Eyck*, was of an old Dutch family, whose ancestor, Counraad Ten Eyck, resided in New Amsterdam, and followed the trade of tanner and shoemaker. Her father, Barent Ten Eyck, was a merchant of Albany.

ANGELICA SCHUYLER (373) married John Barker Church,[1] an English gentleman, who before and after marriage re-

[1] In the Life of General Schuyler and elsewhere this name is written John Carter Church, but his secretary called him John Barker Church, and it was so written by his father-in-law in his will. Mr. Lossing, referring to the fact that he came to this country under an assumed name, says, "why he dropped his family name is not known." It may not be amiss to tell the story as told me. He had been engaged in a duel, or some youthful escapade, and, wishing to avoid arrest, he left his hat and broken sword in the street, and fled by a ship ready to sail to America. Some time after his marriage he was recognized in New York by an English officer, when, concealment being no longer necessary, he assumed his proper name.

sided many years in this country, and was engaged in business operations requiring a large capital and superior abilities to manage. My father was for a time his private secretary, and resided in his family. His only duty was to copy the letters Mr. Church had written before breakfast, and mail them. After this was done, he was free to employ his time as he chose. He spent an hour or two each day in the saddle, his employer keeping a horse for his individual use. He led an easy and pleasant life, one to which he frequently recurred in after years. Mr. Church made several voyages to England, but never with his family in company. They sailed in another ship. He assigned as a reason for such arrangement, that in case one vessel suffered shipwreck a part of the family would be safe in the other. Mr. Church finally returned to his English home, and became a member of Parliament. His eldest son, Philip, inherited a large tract of land in Alleghany County, N. Y., to which at an early day he removed with a young wife, cutting his own road from Bath to the Genesee River, where he located a village, and named it for his mother, Angelica.

ELIZABETH SCHUYLER (374) married Alexander Hamilton, whose life, like that of the "Father of his Country," "is written in the hearts of his countrymen." When a boy he came from the West India Island of Nevis to complete his education. While a student in Columbia College he became interested in the questions of English taxation and American independence. He embraced the popular cause, and in the press and on the platform he rendered important service. When it came to blows he volunteered in the ranks of the patriots. He raised a company of artillery, and was made its captain. In the campaigns of Long Island and of New York he showed more than ordinary ability. He attracted the observation of Washington, who

was so much pleased with his character and acquirements that he made him one of his aids, and employed his pen in his extensive correspondence. When he resigned this position he again sought service in the army. At Yorktown he led the assault on one of the two redoubts which formed the key to the enemy's position, and captured it with little loss. With a few months' study of the law he was admitted to the bar, and soon acquired an extensive practice. As a statesman he had no superior, and as a financier few were his equal. The first Secretary of the Treasury of the United States, he adopted a system of finance which lifted the country from insolvency and restored its credit at home and abroad. As a lawyer Aaron Burr was his only rival, who, despairing of becoming his superior, resolved to kill him. For this purpose he practised with the pistol, and when an expert he seized on some flimsy pretext to challenge him to the "field of honor." Hamilton, with his undoubted courage, was not brave enough to decline. At Weehawken, on the Jersey shore, he offered his body as a target to the murderer's weapon. He fell at the first fire with a mortal wound, and died the next day, in the forty-eighth year of his age. Burr became a fugitive and vagabond, living to old age.

The husband of MARGARITA SCHUYLER (375) was Stephen Van Rensselaer, the last patroon of Rensselaerwyck; and the wife of her brother, JOHN BRADSTREET SCHUYLER (378), was Elizabeth Van Rensselaer, his sister.

PHILIP JEREMIAH SCHUYLER (379) married Sarah Rutsen, of an old Kingston, N. Y., family, intermarried also with the Van Rensselaers. She was probably a daughter of Colonel Jacob Rutsen.

Eliza Ten Broeck, wife of RENSSELAER SCHUYLER (380), was a daughter of General Abraham Ten Broeck and Elizabeth Van Rensselaer.

CATHERINA SCHUYLER (383) married, first, Samuel Malcolm, son of General Malcolm of the Revolution; and subsequently James Cochran, son of John Cochran, surgeon-general, mentioned above as the husband of Gertrude Schuyler (362).

JOHN CORTLANDT SCHUYLER (384) married Angelica Van Rensselaer, of the Claverack family, niece of General Schuyler's wife and a descendant of Colonel Peter Schuyler.

HENRY TEN EYCK SCHUYLER (389) married Sarah, daughter of Nanning Visscher and Agnes Van Buren. Harman Visscher, the American ancestor of the family, was a carpenter in New Amsterdam in 1649, whence he came to Beverwyck, and was made the village surveyor in 1666.

Cynthia Carpenter, the wife of PHILIP V. C. SCHUYLER (390), is a new name in the Schuyler nomenclature. I know nothing of her family, but imagine that they may have lived at Catskill. Among the papers on file in the office of the Court of Appeals is an inventory, made by John Schuyler, of the effects of Mr. Carpenter, a former resident of that place. The estate was large, and consisted mostly of notes and other obligations, many of which were inventoried as "bad."

GEORGE L. SCHUYLER (404) married two daughters of James A. Hamilton, a son of Alexander Hamilton. They were great-granddaughters of General Philip Schuyler.

VI.

PHILIP SCHUYLER, SECOND.

"Philip was lost in the woods after he had sustained a severe conflict with the French and Indians, and was never heard of."—*Mrs. Chancellor Livingston*, 1795.
"Philip left no descendants."—*Rev. G. C. Schenck.*
"Philip lost in the woods, and never heard from."—*Maturin L. Delafield.*
"Philip, d. s. p."—*Winfield.*
"Philip was lost in the woods."—*Lossing.*
"Philip had no children, and was murdered at Saratoga, 1745."—*S. Alofsen.*
"Philip was killed in battle."—*Mrs. Booth.*
"Philip settled in Albany."—*Mrs. Lamb.*

PHILIP SCHUYLER (9) accomplished so little in his life that it is no marvel he should soon have been forgotten, or confounded with other Philips after the lapse of a few years. It will appear, nevertheless, that he had no conflict with the Indians, was not lost in the woods, was not killed in battle, and did not die without posterity.

His name appears so seldom in the records that my sketch of him must necessarily be very brief. He alone of the five brothers has no history. He left Albany before 1686, and probably took a position in some mercantile establishment in New York. In 1687 he married the daughter of Nicholas De Meyer, and soon after removed to Kingston, where he engaged in trade and milling. His father-in-law had a large property at Kingston, and he doubtless occupied a portion of it for his residence and business

purposes. After the death of De Meyer he sold his buildings, including the "bolten mill," to Louis Du Bois for "nineteen hundred scheppels of wheat." He returned to New York, and in March, 1693, he and his wife united with the Dutch Church by letter from the church at Kingston. Before April, 1699, he was a resident of Albany, on Yonkers (State) Street. In 1703 he appears in Schenectady as commandant of the fort, with the rank of lieutenant. He was afterward termed "captain" by courtesy.

He served in the fort only about three years, but continued to reside in Schenectady the remainder of his life. In politics I have been unable to determine his position. He seems to have passed through the troublesome times of Leisler unmolested and unknown. His only acts which have the appearance of any political significance, were certifying to the Assembly, in April, 1699, that he had served their citation on Dominie Dellius and Evert Bancker to appear at their bar to answer to the charge of fraudulently procuring a deed of the greater part of the Mohawk land, and of signing the address of certain Albanians to the Earl of Bellomont, August, 1700. Some might infer from this that he had a leaning to the Leislerians; but how, then, shall we interpret the fact that in the next year, 1701, he signed the address to the king, for the circulation of which Nicholas Bayard was tried and convicted of treason?

In lands he took very little interest. While his brothers and other friends were buying and selling the public lands, he seemed to hold himself aloof, and made no ventures in that direction. He did, indeed, before he had reached his majority, in 1685, a year after Robert Livingston received his first patent for two thousand acres of land on Roelof Jansen's Kil, petition the governor for leave to buy "a certain piece of woodland commonly known by the name

of Roelof Jansen's Kill." His petition was granted, provided he took out a patent before the last day of the ensuing August. Nothing came of it, and no patent was issued. It is probable that Robert Livingston did not wish any interference with his plans and intentions.

Apparently he made no farther efforts to become a landed proprietor until July, 1711, when the Mohawk chiefs gave him a deed for about two thousand acres of land adjoining the Schenectady Patent on the east, bounded south by Van Rensselaer's manor. I have a traced copy of this deed, made from the original in the secretary's office, signed by the celebrated "King Hendrick," Gideon, and others, with the *totems* of their clans. He applied to Governor Hunter for a patent, but for some reason now unknown it was not granted. In 1714 he again petitioned, but with no better success than before. A year later the tract was surveyed by his son Nicholas, "D. C. Surveyor at Schonaghtaday," and its bounds described, "east by Schonahtady, south by lands of Killiaan Van Rensselaer, west by lands of Cornelis Switz." He then wrote to his friend, Mr. Wildman, of New York, that every objection had been answered, and every obstacle removed, urging him to press the matter before the governor and Council. He did not succeed. The business then rested until 1722, when he made a last effort, with a like result. Meantime his brother Johannes secured a patent for nearly two thousand acres lying northeast and adjoining this for which Philip applied in vain. It was reserved for the Dutch Church in Schenectady, for whom it was obtained by patent, August, 1738. If the Indians had a right to dispose of their lands to whom they chose, Philip Schuyler and his heirs were the rightful owners in equity and fairness, the governor's patent to the church to the contrary notwithstanding.

It seems singular that, while Philip's brothers and brothers-in-law found little difficulty in procuring patents for lands whenever they asked for them, he alone should be unsuccessful, and not be able to own an acre. The reasons cannot now be satisfactorily explained. Philip Schuyler died on May 24, 1724, at Schenectady. He left no will; his estate, whatever it was, going to his only son and to his widow, who had a house and lot on Front Street, which she occupied in February, 1726.

Philip Schuyler was twice married. His first marriage is recorded in the Dutch Church of New York as follows, translated from the Dutch:

"July 25. 1687, Philip Schuyler, young man, of New Albany, to Elizabeth De Meyer, young maid, of New York, the first residing at New Albany, the second here."

His second marriage is recorded in the Dutch Church of Albany:

"19. May 1719. Capt. Philip Schuyler, widower of Elizabeth De Meyer, and Mrs. Catharine Schierph, widow of Ritsiert Brower, after having been proclaimed three times, were united in matrimony in presence of J. Staats, J. Roseboom and J. Schuyler, elders, at the bride's residence."

The record of Philip Schuyler's marriage in New York is in conflict with my sketch of his life in one particular. The record states that he resided at Albany at the time of his marriage, 1687, and I say that he had left Albany before 1686, and lived in New York and Kingston for several subsequent years. My authority is contained in the Albany city records. On June 27, 1699, a committee reported the names of such persons who were then residents of Albany, but who "were not actually inhabitants of the city when the charter was obtained," 1686. Among the names so reported was that of Philip Schuyler, and he

was not yet "possessed of his freedom." He may not have been in New York any considerable time before his marriage, and still considered Albany his residence.

As this is my own branch of the Schuyler family, it is my purpose to give brief sketches of my maternal ancestors, however far back I may find them. This line of inquiry will lead me into many of the Dutch families of the "Olden Time," and serve to make the reader acquainted with some names almost forgotten, as well as to refresh his memory with those of some celebrities. The first in order is the father of Philip Schuyler's first wife,

Nicholas De Meyer.

De Meyer was not a Dutchman. In the records of his marriage he is called Nicholas Meyer Van Hamborg. In the tax-list of the same year he appears as Nicholas Van Holstein, and in various legal papers and other records he is named Nicholas de Meyer Van Holstein. He signed himself N. D Meijer. When he came to New Netherland is not known, but probably not long after 1650. He was a taxable inhabitant of New Amsterdam in 1655, and was then rated among the well-to-do citizens.

June 6, 1655, he married Lydia, daughter of Hendrick Van Dyck, a former military and civil officer of the West India Company. According to tradition, as recorded in the Valentine *Manuals*, the wedding ceremonies were enlivened by a scene not usual on such occasions. A former suitor of the bride intruded himself among the guests, and forced a quarrel on the bridegroom, with whom he came to blows. He was thrust out from the house, but the festivities, so rudely interrupted, came to an end, and the company dispersed.

De Meyer had come to New Netherland to improve his

fortunes, and did not suffer the unfortunate occurrence at his wedding, or the excitement of the military preparations for the subjugation of the Swedes on the Delaware, or the Indian invasion and its calamities, to divert him from his purpose. He prosecuted his business with energy and success. In 1658 he added the manufacture of flour to his merchandise, and bought of Jacob Van Couwenhoven a "stone house, mill, and lot," situate on what is now known as South William Street, propelled not by water or steam, but by the only power known in fatherland, the winds. His business transactions required the assistance of notaries and lawyers, who sometimes charged him more than legal fees—a practice not unknown to the profession in these days. He was not disposed to submit to such "extortions," as he termed them, and complained to the director-general and Council. On one occasion he made an exhibit, which is curious and instructive and is as follows: The legal fees were

For a petition.....	3	guilders,	charged	by the	Notary	14	guilders.
For a written conclusion....	3	"	"	"	"	12	"
For a replication.....	2	"	"	"	"	12	"
For a deduction.....	6	"	"	"	"	12	"
For inventory of documents.	3	"	"	"	"	12	"

His operations were extended over the province, and in 1661 he owned real estate taken for debts in Albany, and claims secured by mortgages against several persons of that city and Schenectady. The next year he bought some land at Haerlem, and began farming, employing an overseer, who was unfaithful and absconded in his debt. In December, 1663, he was at Wiltwyck (Esopus) buying grain for his mill. The Indian war in that locality had obliged the authorities to make some stringent regulations for the security of the lives and property of the people, among them an order forbidding any one to go to the redoubt on the

river without an escort. On December 2d the lieutenant commanding reported, "that Jeronimus Ebbing, Nicholas De Meyer, and Frederick (Philipse), the Honble Company's late carpenter, went down unescorted to the Redoubt with six wagon loads of grain." Nicasius de Sille, the fiscal, immediately lodged a complaint against them, and demanded that a fine of twenty guilders each should be imposed. After hearing their defence the court deferred sentence until the lieutenant had made a farther report. The records are silent as to any other action.

In 1664 he was one of the schepens (aldermen) of the city. When the English ships appeared in the harbor, and Colonel Nicoll summoned New Amsterdam to surrender, he took an active part in bringing about the transfer of all New Netherland to the English crown. The proceedings by the West India Company in Holland on the loss of their possessions gave De Meyer and his wife some notoriety. The Company complained to the States-General of their director-general, whom they had so long sustained against the charges brought against him by Van der Donck and the best citizens of the colony, alleging that he had betrayed his trust, and had lost the province without a proper defence. In his justification Stuyvesant produced several good and weighty reasons for his action, and among them, that the citizens were in danger of being plundered by the soldiers, who were supposed to be their defenders. For the truth of this allegation it was proved that the soldiers had said: "We know well where booty is to be got, and where the young women reside who wear chains of gold;" "and on one occasion a troop of soldiers had collected in front of De Meyer's house in order to plunder it, but were prevented by the burghers." On the other hand, the Company proved that the "wife of De Meyer, on her way out of the fort, said she wished to be

on her guard whenever she saw soldiers; now, the rascals will fight as they have nothing to lose, while we must lose all our property in case of a collision."

De Meyer took the oath of allegiance to the English in the following October, and prosecuted his business as usual with uniform success. He visited Holland in 1668, and with other New Yorkers freighted a ship with merchandise for New York, but, when she was about ready to sail, there came an order in Council of the English Government prohibiting farther traffic between Holland and her former colony. The charterers petitioned for relief, and were so far successful that the order was modified in favor of their ship for that voyage only. The extent and prosperity of De Meyer's business may be inferred from his presenting for record, two years later, to the court of sessions at the little village of Gravesend, sixteen mortgages and deeds, amounting to "nineteen thousand guilders, seven hundred schepels of wheat, two hundred and forty blades of tobacco, and three farms."

After the Dutch had regained possession of New York, in 1673, they saw the importance of placing it in a complete state of defence against any assault of the English. For this purpose a large amount of money was required, which could only be furnished by the citizens. To raise it by tax would be oppressive, to borrow it on the faith of the government impossible; and the governor and Council resorted to the expedient of a forced loan by the most affluent inhabitants. A commission was appointed to compile a list of the "best and most affluent persons," with a valuation of their estates, and their report is among the records of the State. There are sixty-two names on the list, with the valuation of their estates in Holland currency. Frederick Philipse is assessed at 80,000 guilders; De Meyer and Cornelis Steenwyck at 50,000 each; Jeroni-

mus Ebbing, 30,000; Olof Stevense Van Cortlandt, 45,000; Jacob Leisler, 15,000; and Nicholas Bayard, 10,000. The majority were placed at less than 5,000, while some were as low as 1,200. Nearly all were Dutch, very few English names appearing on the roll.

Two years later, when the province had been returned to the English, a tax was levied to pay the city debts and for other purposes. There were now three hundred names on the list, several of them were English and assessed for considerable amounts. Cornelis Steenwyck now leads in valuation, being assessed at £4,000; while Philipse falls into the second class, being rated the same as Leisler, Van Cortlandt, and two others, at £3,000; Nicholas Bayard pays on only £1,500, and Ebbing on £1,000. De Meyer's name is not on the list. As mayor he signed the warrant of the collector, but escaped taxation. Did the assessors omit him out of respect to his office? or did his official position enable him to avoid the tax?

De Meyer was appointed mayor by Governor Andros, and served one year, 1676, having previously been an alderman for three years. He was nominated to the Council by Governor Dongan in 1687, and appointed by the king in January, 1689, but did not take the oath of office, for he died before the arrival of Governor Sloughter, in March, 1691. In politics he was opposed to Leisler, but, like his friend, Philipse, he was too rich to be active and pronounced. Already old, he did not wish to endanger his estate. In the riots of 1690 Leisler's soldiers were disposed to make him a visit, but were resisted by one Palmer, who stood within the door, with sword and pistol in his hands, and bid them be off. De Meyer was an officer in the militia, and rose to the rank of major. He and his family were members of the Dutch Church in regular standing.

He was twice married; first to Lydia Van Dyck, and secondly to Sarah, widow of John Wickleson. He had three sons and three daughters baptized in the church, but in his will he mentions only five children. His will is dated May 4, 1689, and was proved on March 31, 1692. He bequeaths to his "wife Sarah, widow of John Wickleson," all whatsoever he had agreed to in the marriage-contract. The remainder of his estate, "whether here, in England, Holland, or elsewhere," he divides equally between his children—William, Henricus, Anna Catrina, Deborah, and Elizabeth.

William De Meyer resided at Kingston, and Henry was a prosperous merchant of New York. Their descendants are said to be quite numerous.

Lydia Van Dyck, the mother of Nicholas De Meyer's children, carries me back another generation, to relate some incidents in the life of her father, Hendrick Van Dyck, who is an historical character of no enviable reputation. I hope to make it appear, however, that he was not so black as historians have painted him.

Hendrick Van Dyck

Came to New Netherland, in 1639 or 1640, in the service of the West India Company as ensign commandant of their troops. Under the unwise administration of Kieft, the Indians became very troublesome and hostile. Early in the year 1642, Kieft determined to chastise them, and for that purpose organized an expedition to penetrate their country and destroy their villages. Van Dyck was placed in command of eighty men, and with a guide marched into what is now Westchester County, where he was assured that he should find the enemy. Before he reached the Indian village, a dark and stormy night

closed around him. The guide lost his way, and Van Dyck his temper; a halt was ordered, and finally a retreat. He returned to New Amsterdam without having seen an Indian, and apparently without result. Not so, however, for the Indians soon discovered how narrowly they had escaped destruction, and made overtures for peace.

Kieft was not satisfied with his abortive attempt to chastise the savages for their alleged perfidy and atrocities. The next year these same Indians, and others living farther north, were driven from their villages by a raid of the Mohawks. They fled to the Dutch for safety, and encamped at Corlaer's Hook and at Pavonia. Kieft, believing that his time had come for vengeance, without giving any notice to the farmers and outlying settlements, and against the advice of the best men in New Amsterdam, directed two detachments of citizens and soldiers to fall on the unsuspecting Indians in the night and butcher them in their sleep. A large number of savages—men, women, and children—were killed at both encampments. This perfidy against a people who in time of peace had sought protection and safety, aroused the anger of the neighboring tribes, and they combined to exterminate the Dutch. In a brief time the farms and plantations were burned, and the people who were not killed or captured fled for safety under the guns of Fort Amsterdam. The Indians were bold and watchful, keeping their enemies shut up in narrow limits. Van Dyck, while stationing the guard not far from the fort, was shot and wounded in in the arm, narrowly escaping death, the bullet having grazed his breast.

The next year, 1644, was made memorable by the slaughter of large numbers of the savages on Long Island and on the eastern borders of Westchester County.

After a raid against the Indians on Long Island, in which over a hundred of them were killed, one hundred and thirty troops were put under the command of Captain Underhill, of New England, now in the Dutch service, as he had been years before in Holland, and of Ensign Van Dyck, with orders to penetrate into the country on the borders of this province and Connecticut, and to destroy a large Indian village said to be situated a few miles north of the sound. They landed at Greenwich, and the next day took up their line of march to the interior. Their guide was faithful, and conducted them straight to the Indian camp. They cautiously approached it on a bright, moonlight night, but, being discovered, they rushed forward and completely surrounded it before the Indians had time to fly. The savages fought with desperation, and in a brief time one hundred and eighty of their warriors lay dead upon the snow outside their cabins. The torch was then applied, and the village, with its living occupants—men, women, and children—was burned to the ground. Five hundred Indians were killed—some writers place the number at seven hundred; only eight escaped. The loss of the Dutch was slight, fifteen being wounded.

This severe chastisement lowered the pride of the savages, and they sued for peace. Kieft lent a willing ear to their solicitations, and in the following year concluded with all the Indian tribes a peace which continued until 1655. Meantime Van Dyck returned to Holland, and on June 28, 1645, was appointed fiscal of New Netherland. Kieft had proved himself incompetent, and the Company resolved to recall him. Petrus Stuyvesant was appointed to his place. But there were various delays, and the new officials did not sail from Holland until the close of the year 1646. On the voyage, for some unknown reason, Stuyvesant treated Van Dyck rudely and impolitely. At

one time, when Van Dyck proposed to take his seat with the Council on shipboard, Stuyvesant repulsed him with the remark, "Get out! When I want you I'll call you." At Curaçoa he confined him on board the ship for three weeks, while others, even the meanest soldiers, were allowed to land. Van Dyck believed that this was done, lest he, by virtue of his office and according to his instructions, should interfere in some business which Stuyvesant preferred to do alone. On their arrival at Manhattan the director-general pursued the same course of treatment. He did not consult him as member of Council, except when it suited his pleasure or convenience. He interfered with the higher duties of his office, and assigned him work which a slave could perform, and in various other ways made his official life a burden.

When Adrian Van der Donck was in Holland, as representative of the people of New Netherland, to solicit a better government, he sharply assailed the acts and characters of the colonial officials—none more than those of Stuyvesant and his secretary, Van Tienhoven, and said of Van Dyck, in July, 1649:

"Director Stuyvesant excluded him twenty-nine months from the Council board, for the reason among others, as his Honor stated, that he could not keep a secret. He also declared that he was a villain, a scoundrel, a thief. All this is well known to the Fiscal, but he dare not adopt the right course in the matter; and in our opinion, 'tis not advisable for him to do so; for he is a man wholly intolerable alike in words and deeds. His head is a trouble to him, and his Screw is loose, especially when surrounded by a little sap in the wood."

Stuyvesant, apparently to justify his treatment of Van Dyck, accused him of drunkenness and inattention to the duties of his office, which called out a rebuke from the

Company, in which they allude to his "respectable friends." Van Dyck, forbearing as he was, and, above all things, desiring peace and harmony in the official family, at last began to feel that he was being pushed to the wall by his enemies without cause. He had held aloof from the opposition against the director-general, and had not united with Van der Donck and other leading men in their celebrated remonstrance on the condition and misgovernment of New Netherland. But now, in 1650, he joined the vice-director, Van Dincklage, in an energetic protest against the "excesses of Director Stuyvesant." For this, although other reasons are assigned, he was arbitrarily dismissed from his office on March 29, 1692.

The long-suffering fiscal was now fairly aroused. In his *Defence*, a very able paper, addressed to the States-General, he assails the administration of Stuyvesant as autocratic and arbitrary to the last degree. With bitter sarcasm he exposes Stuyvesant's pretensions of having dismissed him "for the good of his Lords Superiors," and then having appointed such a man as his secretary, Van Tienhoven, in his place.[1] He denies that he was the author of the lampoon which was made the excuse for his dismissal, and asserts that it was concocted in the office of Van Tienhoven by himself and clerk for this very purpose. He denies the testimony of certain witnesses against him, and charges, as can be proven, that they were the creatures of

[1] Van Dyck sent with his Defence sworn statements as to the immorality and general bad character of Van Tienhoven, which must have made a profound impression on the Lords Superiors. They directed Stuyvesant to dismiss him from office, and when at a later period they found that he was still retained, they wrote to Stuyvesant: "We are greatly surprised you can plead his cause so earnestly. This has displeased us; and our displeasure must increase, if, contrary to our instructions and orders, you continue to employ him for any purpose whatever." Van Tienhoven soon after disappeared. It is supposed that he drowned himself.

the director-general and his secretary, and unworthy of belief. As Stuyvesant had reported that he was dismissed on account of misbehavior, by the advice and consent of the select-men whose names were signed to the paper notifying him of his dismissal, he asserted that the select-men had held a meeting in August, at which they declared by resolution that "no complaints were ever made to them by the commonalty of misbehavior, and they themselves had nothing to say against him or his conversation." They also said that they refused their consent to his dismissal, and did not sign the paper.

He closes his defence with a letter from the Company to him, written before their knowledge of Stuyvesant's action in his case, in which they give him some sharp rebukes for his alleged delinquencies; and his reply. In this letter he gives conclusive evidence that his "screw" was not loose, or surrounded by "sappy wood." It is keen, incisive, ironical. His *Defence* is long and able. It shows him to have been a man of more than ordinary ability and of good education. He does not deny that he has faults, but exonerates himself from the charges preferred against him, and places Stuyvesant and his friend, Van Tienhoven, on their defence. The proofs against the latter were so full and convincing that the Company ordered him to be dismissed from his employments. Stuyvesant was retained, and Van Dyck was not restored. Henceforth he did not "trouble himself with the cares of office," but lived many years in private life as an "honorable gentleman."

The Indian invasion of New Amsterdam in 1655 was the occasion of bringing Van Dyck's name again into prominence. Historians, from O'Callighan and Brodhead to Mrs. Booth and Mrs. Lamb, in their narratives of that disastrous war, have made him the responsible cause.

While Stuyvesant was on his expedition against the Swedes of Delaware, the Indians living on the river to the north formed an encampment on Manhattan Island, and early in the morning of September 15, 1655, five hundred warriors landed from sixty-four canoes near the fort, within the city limits, and began a search for "Indians from the North." (More likely they were searching for rum.) They broke into houses before the occupants were out of their beds, and in some instances abused the people by words and blows. La Montagne and Van Tienhoven, to whom Stuyvesant had committed the government in his absence, sent for the chiefs to meet them in the fort. During the conference, which does not seem to have been unfriendly or exciting, the Indians promised to withdraw to Nutten Island, that collisions with the citizens might be avoided. But, being joined by another detachment of two hundred, they did not keep their promise, but lingered in the streets and on the river-shore until evening. It is quite certain that they did not remain a whole day, in a town where rum was kept in every house and place of business, without getting more or less intoxicated. Between eight and nine o'clock they made a rush up Broadway, and passing the house of Paulus Leendertsen Van der Grist, who was standing with his wife before the door, threatened to kill him, but passing on they wounded Van Dyck with an arrow, as he was standing in his garden-gate. They were evidently on a drunken frolic, caring little for consequences. Their assault on Van Dyck and his neighbor caused an alarm, and the cry was raised, "The savages are murdering the Dutch!" when the citizens, seizing their arms, hastily assembled at the fort. The Indians, after their rush through the streets, returned to their landing-place. The armed citizens were then permitted to leave the fort and assault them, and in the

conflict which ensued two Dutchmen and three Indians were killed. The savages took to their canoes, and, smarting under their loss, they passed over the river and attacked the Dutch, whom they now looked upon as enemies. They laid waste the farms on the New Jersey shore and on Staten Island, killing fifty of the inhabitants and making more than an hundred prisoners. The loss in property of the Dutch was estimated at more than 200,000 guilders.

Several historians, in their narratives of these events, apparently without consulting the original records, attribute the invasion to Hendrick Van Dyck as the cause, but cite no authority.[1] They say that he killed a squaw whom he caught stealing peaches from his garden, and that he shot her as he would a dog. The story is embellished with incidents according to the imaginations of the several writers. Some relate that the Indians, to the number of nineteen hundred or two thousand, landed from sixty-four canoes,[2] for the purpose of taking vengeance on Van Dyck for the murder of the Indian woman. Most confine themselves to the fact of wounding him with an arrow, but one, more daring than the rest, says that they killed him.

The accounts given by the actors and their contemporaries are doubtless more trustworthy than those of writers two hundred years afterwards. La Montagne and Van Tienhoven, members of the Council, were on the spot, and active participants in all that occurred before the Indians passed to the west shore of the river. The latter

[1] Not one of the numerous authors telling the story, whose books I have read, give their authority; not one refers to the records. The charge against Van Dyck may be true, but I have failed to find the proof.

[2] These canoes must have been much larger than the average to hold thirty persons each. Few would accommodate more than ten individuals each; the more usual size would not hold as many. "Two thousand warriors in sixty-four canoes" discredits the story.

was a bitter enemy of Van Dyck's, and had no reason to shield him from blame or responsibility. In their letter to the director-general, written the day after the affair, they say that many Indians from the upper and lower Hudson had made an assault on the Dutch, and had "wounded Hendrick Van Dyck, standing in his garden-gate, with an arrow, but not mortally, and came very near cleaving Paulus Leendertsen's head with an axe as he stood by his wife." No reason is assigned for the sudden outbreak or for the assault. If they were seeking Van Dyck to kill him, why did they try to kill his innocent neighbor, and only slightly wound him, the offender? If it were Van Dyck they were after, why did they not seek him out during the day, and after killing him depart? He did not seem conscious of their hate or of his own danger, or he was brave thus to expose his person at his garden-gate. Perhaps he was watching his peaches!

On receipt of this disastrous intelligence, Stuyvesant hastened his return from the Delaware to console and encourage the poor people, "his subjects." After he had had abundant time to investigate all the circumstances relating to the invasion on October 31st, he and his Council wrote to the States-General and the Company, giving a detailed statememt of the irruption, in which they say: "On September 15th, at a very early hour, sixty-four canoes full of savages arrived in the neighborhood of the city," and then go on to relate the occurrences of the day, including the wounding of Van Dyck and the threatening of Leendertsen, but do not refer to the number of the Indians or the cause of the sudden outbreak, except that it was "in keeping with their insolence and treachery ever since the peace of 1645, having killed ten persons and destroyed much property."

A few days later the director-general submitted to the

Council, for their written opinions, the question of immediate war against the Indians, the community being divided on the subject—some urging a war of extermination to begin at once, while others were in favor of delay for thorough preparation. Stuyvesant, as was his custom, gave his own views and conclusions on the questions submitted, in which he says: "We agree with the general opinion, that the Indians upon their first arrival had no other intentions than to fight the Indians on the east end of Long Island, and that careless watching and all too hasty inconsiderateness of some hot-headed individuals diverted them and gave them a cause for their subsequent actions."

La Montagne thought that there was sufficient cause for war, "by the unseasonable gathering here of nineteen hundred savages, of whom eight hundred were already here, to attack fifty or sixty," but they had "given more than sufficient cause heretofore by murdering ten of our people."

Van Tienhoven believed there was cause for war for several reasons, but more especially "because that on September 15th, early in the morning, five hundred of them, all in arms, landed from sixty-four canoes within the city limits, and, being joined during the day by two hundred more, they ran through the streets in crowds, searching houses, beating the people, wounding Van Dyck, and threatening to kill Paulus Leendertsen."

De Sille was absent with the Delaware expedition, and had little to say except to agree with the director-general in his opinion. All agree, however, that it was not a fitting time to begin hostilities, as there should be time given in which to make preparations and receive an answer to their appeal to the States-General and the Company. There is not an intimation by any one, that the Indians

came to wreak their vengeance on Van Dyck, or that he was the cause of a visitation which proved so disastrous. Considering his relations with Stuyvesant and Van Tienhoven, it is remarkably strange that, had he been the responsible cause, they should not have arraigned him in their letters, or in their own confidential communications with each other. That Stuyvesant did not hold him culpable further appears from a letter of the Company in reply to one of his, under date of December 19, 1656. Referring to Van Tienhoven, they say: "Any one who will reflect upon his late transactions as to the savages will confess that, being very drunk, he was the chief cause of that doleful massacre. It is quite clear he might have prevented it." How should the Company have spoken so emphatically, unless they had received reliable information from Stuyvesant or some one else? Such must have been the sentiment of the community at the time.

In a postscript to the same letter, they write: "We understand, from letters and oral reports brought to us by private persons, that the late Attorney-General (Fiscal) Van Dyck was the first cause of this deplorable massacre, by murdering a squaw who stole some peaches or other fruits from his garden. If this is the truth, then we are greatly surprised it was not mentioned in your letters, not even with a single word—much more so, that he was not punished as a murderer. To this we call your prompt attention, and recommend his execution." It will be noticed that the Company say, if these reports are true, Van Dyck should be punished, but they do not recall or modify their charge against Van Tienhoven as the responsible party.

In the light thrown upon the subject by these letters and records, there can be little doubt that the Indians did not visit New Amsterdam with hostile intentions, but merely stopped on the war-path against their enemies on

Long Island for refreshments or other purposes. Van Dyck may have killed a squaw, as charged, for Indian life, from the beginning, in New England and elsewhere on the continent, until now, has been considered cheap; nor could the Indians have seriously blamed him, judging him by their own law of retaliation. They would have been likely to have thought the woman's death was some compensation for the ten lives of Dutch men and women they had wantonly taken since the peace. I cannot but think that the accusation against Van Dyck was an afterthought of the real culprit to shift the responsibility from his own shoulders.

As to the number of the invaders, it is clear that the authors who have placed them at nineteen hundred or two thousand are in error, and particularly those who term them warriors all armed. It is true, La Montagne says "nineteen hundred gathered here, of whom nearly eight hundred were already here." This sentence can only be explained or understood by supposing the "here" first used to mean Manhattan Island, and the second "here" to mean New Amsterdam. This interpretation is sustained by Van Tienhoven, who expressly declared "there landed from sixty-four canoes about five hundred men," and adds, "in the evening they were joined by two hundred more," making the whole number "nearly eight hundred," as estimated by La Montagne. The conclusion is, that they formed an encampment on the island of Manhattan belonging to the Dutch, "without previous notice," of nineteen hundred men, women, and children, whence their warriors, in detachments of five hundred and two hundred, started on an expedition against the Long Island Indians. It is surprising that anyone should have put the number of the invaders at "about two thousand armed warriors in sixty-four canoes;" equally marvellous that, in the face of

the records and all other authors, it should be said that they "killed Van Dyck." One cannot but wonder that, if there were nineteen hundred, coming with hostile intent, they should have been driven off by "fifty or sixty" citizens; for these were all, capable of bearing arms, who had been left by Stuyvesant to defend the city.

Van Dyck was living at least thirty years afterward, having survived his great opponent, Stuyvesant, many years, and nearly all the associates of his early life. After the death of his wife, Deivertje, he married, in May, 1675, the widow of Jacob Van Couwenhoven. In 1680 he made a deed of a part of his Broadway property to his son Cornelis. He was not idle when out of politics, but was known as a thrifty man, dealing in real estate and loaning money. If he had loved the bottle, as Stuyvesant charged, he reformed and became a good citizen, living to a good old age. In his will, dated August 13, 1685, and proved March 20, 1688, he mentioned one son and three daughters. His son Cornelis was a physician, and settled in Albany. He died at an early age, leaving two sons, both of whom adopted the profession of their father. Their descendants are numerous, and it is now difficult to distinguish them from those of the same name, whose ancestors settled, one in Delaware, and another on Long Island.

GENEALOGICAL TABLE.

DESCENDANTS OF PHILIP SCHUYLER (SECOND).

[*Direct line.*]

1. PHILIP SCHUYLER and *Margarita Van Slichtenhorst*, m. in Beverwyck (Albany), December 12, 1650; had ten children, of whom Philip was the eighth, and the fifth son, who was born February 8, 1666, and died May 24, 1724. He married,
   1st, *Elizabeth De Meyer*, in New York, July 25, 1687.
   2d, *Mrs. Catharine Schierph*, widow of *Ritsiert Brouwer*, in Albany, May 19, 1719.

2. PHILIP SCHUYLER and *Elizabeth De Meyer*.
   3. NICHOLAS, b. in New York, September 11, 1691, d. July 3, 1748.
      m. 1, December 2, 1714, *Elsie Wendel*.
      m. 2, *Mary Stephenson*. His first wife d. April 8, 1744; his second survived him.

3. NICHOLAS SCHUYLER and *Elsie Wendel*.
   4. ELIZABETH, b. September 4, 1715, d. December 5, 1795.
      m. *Jochim Staats*.
   5. PHILIP, b. October 17, 1717, d. s. p. April 29, 1739, at Oswego.
   6. ARIANTIA, b. March 6, 1720, d. October 17, 1763.
      m. *Killian Van Rensselaer*.
   7. HARMANUS, b. January 27, 1722, d. September 27, 1722.
   8. CATHARINE, b. August 11, 1723, d. at an advanced age.
      m. *John Jacob Lansing*.
   9. A DAUGHTER, b. August 18, 1725, d. next day.
   10. HARMANUS, b. April 2, 1727, d. September 1, 1796.
      m. September 24, 1754, *Christina Ten Broeck*.
   11. JOHANNES, b. January 3, 1733, d. s. p. October 28, 1755.

10. HARMANUS SCHUYLER and *Christina Ten Broeck.*
12. NICHOLAS, b. June 13, 1755, d. s. p. November, 1824.
m. August 13, 1782, *Shinah Simons*, at Lancaster, Pa.
13. SAMUEL, b. November 17, 1757, d. s. p. January, 1832.
14. ELSIE, b. February 5, 1760, d. 1838.
m. 1, June 15, 1783, *Dr. Nicholas N. Bogart*, of New York.
m. 2, June 24, 1789, *James Van Rensselaer.*
15. DIRCK, b. November 29, 1761, d. s. p. June, 1811.
16. JOHN H., b. July 30, 1763, d. August 18, 1846.
m. 1, June 6, 1786, *Hendrika Fort.*
m. 2, June 10, 1800, *Annatje Fort*, d. January, 1851.
17. MARIA, b. February 1, 1766, d. October 18, 1767.
18. PHILIP, b. December 12, 1767, d. August 25, 1769.
19. MARIA, b. April 25, 1769, d. March 25, 1812.
m. 1, November 22, 1793, *David Van Rensselaer.*
m. 2, January 1, 1800, *Nicholas Ten Broeck.*
20. PHILIP, b. August 21, 1771.
m. *Mary Palmer.*

16. JOHN H. SCHUYLER and *Hendrika Fort.*
21. HARMANUS, b. March 7, 1787, d. May 14, 1853.
m. August, 1813, *Eleanor Speer.*
22. JACOB FORT, bp. June 3, 1789.
m. —— ——, went to New Orleans, and not heard from after 1822.
23. NICHOLAS, bp. February 27, 1791, d. s. p. December, 1812.
24. ALEXANDER HAMILTON, b. September 12, 1792, d. March 4, 1853.
m. November 7, 1813, *Eleanor Giltner.*
25. JOHN BRADSTREET, b. July, 1794, d. 1839.
m. September, 1818, *Esther Mandeville.*
26. HENRIETTA ANN, b. August 2, 1796, d. Nov. 21, 1875.
m. *Philip S. Van Rensselaer*, d. May, 1862.

16. JOHN H. SCHUYLER and *Annatje Fort.*
27. PETER QUIDOR, b. April 21, 1801, d. 1860.
m. September 10, 1829, *Maria Ten Broeck.*
28. JAMES VAN RENSSELAER, b. June 27, 1802.
m. February 13, 1829, *Mrs. Julia McChain Ketcham.*
29. HENRY TEN BROECK, b. April 12, 1804.
m. January 8, 1851, *Sarah White*, d. 1875.
30. PHILIP CHURCH, b. October 13, 1805, d. July 16, 1872.
m. 1, January 13, 1832, *Lucy M. Dix*, d. 1855.
m. 2, May, 1860, *Louisa Bigelow.*

31. ABRAHAM FORT, b. August 20, 1807, d. y.
32. GEORGE WASHINGTON, b. February 2, 1810.
m. April 18, 1839, *Matilda Scribner.*
33. CATHERINE ANGELICA, b. December 17, 1812.
m. October 18, 1848, *Nicholas Bleecker.*
34. REBECCA SARAH MARGARET, b. March 2, 1815.

20. PHILIP SCHUYLER and *Mary Palmer.*
35. CHRISTINA, b. May 28, 1803, d. 1822, unmarried.
36. BERIAH PHILIP, b. February 24, 1806, d. April, 1822.
37. DEBORAH PALMER, b. April 8, 1808.
m. *Dr. Ira Dimmick.*

21. HARMANUS SCHUYLER and *Eleanor Speer.*
38. NICHOLAS, b. August 5, 1815, d. s. p. 1833.
39. MARY, b. March 15, 1817.
m. November 3, 1839, *Abraham Van Horne.*
40. JOHN, b. January 8, 1819.
m. October 6, 1841, *Caroline Vanatta.*
41. TEUNIS SPEER, d.
42. ALEXANDER HAMILTON, b. September 14, 1822, d. a prisoner of war in Andersonville prison.
m. 1853, *Abby Clapp.*
43. HENRY TEN BROECK, b. May 3, 1824, killed in Grant's campaign in Virginia.
m. 1856, *Amina Monroe.*
44. A DAUGHTER, d. y.
45. A DAUGHTER, d. y.
46. SPEER, b. July 11, 1831.
47. CHEERY ANN, b. February 26, 1833.
m. October 27, 1851, *Edwin E. Southwell.*
48. RACHEL, b. April 14, 1835.
49. ARIANTIA, b. June 23, 1837.

22. JACOB FORT SCHUYLER and —— ——.
50. A DAUGHTER, d. y.

24. ALEXANDER HAMILTON SCHUYLER and *Eleanor Gittner.*
51. HENRIETTA, b. August 1, 1814.
m. December 2, 1832, *Abel Burritt.*
52. CORNELIA, b. May 15, 1817.
m. September 9, 1835, *Schuyler Van Rensselaer.*
53. JANE, b. January 25, 1819.
m. February 19, 1851, *Robert Schackelton.*
54. SUSAN, b. May 2, 1821.
m. January 1, 1845, *Grant Wheeler.*
55. PHILIP CHURCH, b. August 6, 1823.
m. June 28, 1854, *Ann Kispauw.*

56. JAMES FORT, b. May 29, 1828.
m. March 1, 1851, *Catherine Smith.*
57. JULIA, b. May 30, 1831.
m. July 4, 1851, *Earl Lucas.*

25. JOHN BRADSTREET SCHUYLER and *Esther Mandeville.*
58. RENSSELAER, b. July 4, 1819.
m. —— ——.
59. CHARLES W., b. July 7, 1820.
m. —— *Rundle.*
60. CATHERINE, b. 1825.
m. *J. W. Marcellus.*
61. AMOS, b. 1831, d. s. p. 1843.
62. GEORGE W., b. 1834.
m. *C. E. McDowell.*

27. PETER QUIDOR SCHUYLER and *Maria Ten Broeck.*
63. JOHN EDWIN, b. September 16, 1831.
m. April 27, 1871, *Ann E. Stevenson.*
64. NICHOLAS TEN BROECK, b. December 4, 1833.
m. September 24, 1871, *Martha A. Griffin.*
65. ANNE H., b. October 18, 1835.
m. May 27, 1868, *George W. Bodle.*

28. JAMES V. R. SCHUYLER and *Mrs. Julia McChain Ketcham.*
66. ANN ELIZA, b. November 24, 1829.
m. June 1, 1847, *Edward Stoddard.*
67. EVELINE FORT, b. September 22, 1831, d. y.
68. JOHN JAMES, b. July 12, 1833, d. s. p.
69. LUCY ANNE, b. January, 1835, d. y.

29. HENRY TEN BROECK SCHUYLER and *Sarah White.*
70. SAGE WHITE, b. July 15, 1854.
71. KATE WHITE, b. July 4, 1856.
m. October 17, 1877, *William A. Church.*

30. PHILIP C. SCHUYLER and *Lucy M. Dix.*
72. SOPHIA ANGELICA, b. November 15, 1832, d. March 28, 1837.
73. SUSAN MANN, b. May 6, 1834.
m. September 17, 1855, *Marcus Lyon.*
74. PHILIP CHURCH, b. December 4, 1835.
m. June 5, 1867, *Lucy Sophia Hurd.*
75. GERRIT SMITH, b. April 24, 1837, d. August 1, 1838.
76. LUCY MATILDA, b. December 6, 1838.
m. Sept. 26, 1860, *Dr. Edwin P. Sheldon,* d. May 3, 1862.

77. FREDERICK, b. June 1, 1841, d. in Dakota, June 16, 1884.
m. May 3, 1865, *Nellie M. Farmon.*
78. SARAH, b. December 31, 1842.
m. December 25, 1862, *Warren W. H. Lawrence.*
79. HOWARD, b. December 11, 1844, d. December 3, 1883.
m. February 5, 1875, *Fanny Kemble Brannan.*
80. JAMES DIX, b. May 11, 1848.

32. GEORGE W. SCHUYLER and *Matilda Scribner.*
81. EUGENE, b. February 26, 1840.
m. July 13, 1877, *Gertrude Wallace King.*
82. MARTHA, b. August 3, 1842.
m. December 29, 1864, *Chauncey L. Grant, Jr.*
83. EVALYN, b. October 6, 1846.
m. March 30, 1871, *Charles Ashmead Schaeffer.*
84. WALTER SCRIBNER, b. April 26, 1850.
m. December 20, 1883, *Mary Miller Gardiner.*
85. KATE BLEECKER, b. June 10, 1853, d. April 1, 1859.

40. JOHN SCHUYLER and *Caroline Vanatta.*
86. HARMON, b. January 22, 1843.
87. GEORGE EDWARD, b. August 6, 1844, d. 1865.
88. MARY ELIZABETH, b. June 25, 1846.
89. SARAH, b. April 1, 1848.
90. OREN A., b. September 22, 1856.
91. ADELBERT, b. May 14, 1864.

42. ALEXANDER H. SCHUYLER and *Abby Ciapp.*
93. WILLIAM, b. 1854.
94. SAMUEL, b. 1857.
95. CHARLES, b. 1860.
96. HARMON, b. 1863.

43. HENRY T. B. SCHUYLER and *Amina Monroe.*
97. ALARIC, b. November 8, 1857.
98. LIONEL V., b. November 28, 1863.

55. PHILIP CHURCH SCHUYLER and *Ann M. Kispaun.*
99. HENRIETTA, b. March 25, 1855.
m. December 20, 1872, *George Besimer.*
100. FORT A., b. September 25, 1856.
101. ERMINA, b. April 26, 1859, d. y.
102. PHILIP NORMAN, b. January 17, 1863.
103. ALLAN A., b. August 1, 1865.
104. FREDERICK J., b. September 29, 1869.

56. JAMES FORT SCHUYLER and *Catharine Smith.*
105. ELLA, b. December 27, 1851.
106. ADA, b. May, 1857.
107. MINNIE, b. 1863.

58. RENSSELAER SCHUYLER and —— ——.
108. JOHN, b. 1861.
109. EMMA, b. 1862.
110. FREDERICK, b. 1864.
111. FRANK, b. 1866.

59. CHARLES W. SCHUYLER and *Sarah Rundle.*
112. ANN JENETTE, b. 1852.
113. GEORGE W., b. 1856, d. y.
114. CAROLINE A., b. 1862.

62. GEORGE W. SCHUYLER and *C. E. McDowell.*
115. MARY L., b. April 25, 1865.
116. EUGENE L., b. October 16, 1871.

64. NICHOLAS T. B. SCHUYLER and *Martha A. Griffin.*
117. BENJAMIN G., b. June 27, 1872.
118. LUCY A., b. October 20, 1875.
119. MARTHA E., b. May 6, 1877.

74. PHILIP CHURCH SCHUYLER and *Lucy Sophia Hurd.*
120. GENEVIEVE, b. November 7, 1868.
121. LUCY CORBETT, b. March 19, 1871.
122. EMILY FAILING, b. November 1, 1872.

77. FREDERICK SCHUYLER and *Nellie M. Farmon.*
123. FLORENCE, b. September 2, 1866, d. December 21, 1877.
124. PHILIP CHURCH, b. January 31, 1869, d. March 27, 1869.
125. FREDERICK, b. June 16, 1870.
126. WALTER, b. July 3, 1874.
127. A SON, b. June, 1877.

79. HOWARD SCHUYLER and *Fanny Kemble Brannan.*
128. ADÈLE ANDRÉE, d. y.
129. PHILIP CHURCH.

NOTES ON THE PRECEDING TABLE.

NICHOLAS SCHUYLER (3) was a surveyor, and apparently confined himself strictly to the business of his profession. Lands under the old titles were not definitely bounded, and after a while every landholder found it necessary to have his limits accurately defined by a competent surveyor. Schuyler was among the first on the upper Hudson who acquired sufficient knowledge of civil engineering to qualify him to run the lines and determine the boundaries as laid down in the deeds. For a time after his marriage he resided in Albany, but soon removed to Schenectady, a more central point for his business; yet his services were in frequent request by the Albanians. The city itself, whose lands at Schaghticoke were sold or leased in small parcels, after a time found it necessary, in order to quiet conflicting claims, to have the farms accurately surveyed, and frequently called upon him for his services. He was the first named to run the lines in the division of the famous Saratoga Patent.

Before he had reached his majority he accompanied his uncle, Colonel Peter Schuyler, in April, 1711, to Onondaga, and assisted in the demolition of the block-house which the French had recently erected. It was an exciting experience, and gave him a foretaste of Indian life, without, however, drawing him away from the profession he had chosen. In 1727 he was elected to represent Schenectady in

the Assembly of the province. This Assembly, the nineteenth, held only one short session, and was dissolved. Governor Burnet was not pleased, because in a series of resolutions it had presumed to attack the Court of Chancery, in which, as its presiding judge, the governor, although no lawyer, delighted to show his varied learning. He summarily dismissed the members to their homes, and called an election for a new house, which he was not permitted to meet. He was sent to govern New England.

Schuyler had not lost his taste for adventure, and in his intervals of leisure from his professional duties, like other young men of his times, used to go on trading expeditions among the Indians. On such journeys, in almost unknown regions and among the free traders of the forests, his tastes were gratified. More than this, he was successful in his ventures.

Governor Burnet's law prohibiting trade in Indian goods with Canada was very obnoxious to New York importers and Albany merchants. They had no compunctions of conscience in evading its provisions when opportunities offered. Harmanus Wendell, one of Schuyler's brothers-in-law, although classed as a shoemaker, was also a trader. At one time he had in store a large stock of goods such as were required for the Indian trade by Canadian merchants, and wished to dispose of them, law or no law. The Indian proselytes living near Montreal, in time of peace, were the camels of the desert, the freighters between Albany and Canada, and, like camels, they required drivers or conductors. The Montreal merchant, when he wanted goods from Albany, hired some Indians, with their chief, and sent them to his correspondent in the latter city, who packed the goods on their backs, or in their canoes, and despatched them home under conductors of his own selection. A guard-house had been established near the great

carrying place, on the route usually taken by the caravans, to intercept the forbidden trade, to arrest the carriers, and to seize the goods.

On October 8, 1724, the governor, in New York, received a letter from the officer of the guard, stating that he had seized fifty-eight pieces of strouds, on the way to Canada, in charge of Nicholas Schuyler, Jacob Wendell, "and another whose face he could not see," with thirty Indians. After taking possession of the goods, and stamping on each piece the "broad arrow," they were forcibly taken from their custody by Schuyler and his company and carried off. The letter was accompanied with an affidavit of the sergeant of the guard, to the effect that, on first arresting them, he said to Wendell that he was sorry to see him there, who replied that "he had not been there but for his father." Harmanus Wendell was examined, so wrote the Commissioners of Indian Affairs, and admitted that he had sold to Schuyler and his son Jacob a parcel of strouds, and thought that perhaps they were for Canada. On being made acquainted with the facts, the Council ordered all the culpable parties to be prosecuted and punished according to the law.

Nothing more relating to the business appears in the Council minutes until three years later. Meantime the offensive law had been modified or repealed. The Assembly, of which Nicholas Schuyler was a member, was then in session. The governor, in his message, had called upon them to provide means to liquidate the debt which he had incurred in the establishment of a fortified trading-house at Oswego, the cost of which, £6,682, had far exceeded the estimates and the money provided by a former Legislature. He was in a dilemma, for, contrary to law, he had proceeded with the work when the appropriation was exhausted, and had created a debt which he said that he

had paid out of his own pocket. He now appealed to the Legislature to reimburse him. The Committee of Ways and Means, Robert Livingston, chairman, took a favorable view of the case, and reported a bill for his relief. The province was in debt, and it would not be prudent to raise the money by tax. Other means must be devised. Appropriations to encourage the Indian trade, for securing the Indians to the British interests, for maintaining proper persons in the Indian country—each contributed a few hundred pounds; the remainder on hand of fines and forfeitures for trading with the French contrary to law, and the money yet to be collected for fines and forfeitures, helped; and, lastly, Nicholas Schuyler and Jacob Wendell offered to pay £200 for their transgression of the prohibitory law, provided that their bonds were cancelled and the Legislature relieved them from all further costs and litigation. The bill was enacted into a law, Governor Burnet was relieved from his embarrassment, the trading-house in due time became a fort, Schuyler and Wendell were discharged from their bonds, and Harmanus Wendell and his correspondent, Adolph Philipse, of New York, paid the bills.

Nicholas Schuyler, as an engineer, was employed in building Fort Clinton, at Saratoga, in 1746, but his bill for services was not fully paid until after his death. His profession did not often bring him before the public, and his name only occasionally appears in the records. None of his letters and private papers are known to be in existence. Consequently there are no materials for an extended notice. He died on July 3, 1758, and his will is filed in the clerk's office of the Court of Appeals. He disposed of his estate impartially among his children, having first provided liberally for his widow.

His old Dutch Bible came to my hands a few years

since. One cover and the entire book of Genesis were gone. Of course whatever records were on the first fly-leaves—and there is reason to suppose they were full—were lost beyond recovery. In other parts of the book I found his own family records, and those of his son Harmanus.[1] It was originally bound in boards covered with leather, "elaborately tooled," and finished with brass corner pieces and clasps. It must have been when new a very handsome book. It has been repaired, and is now in condition to last two centuries longer.

The title-page of the New Testament is so different from that of our English versions that a translation of it may be interesting:

"The New Testament, or the Books of the New Covenant of Our Lord, Jesus Christ. Published by authority of the High-Mighty Lords, the States General of the United Netherlands, and in conformity with the Decrees of the National Synod, held at Dordrecht, in the years 1618 and 1619. Faithfully translated out of the original Greek into the Netherland language. To which is added a commentary on the obscure passages, explaining them with corresponding texts; and also a New Register. By the general orders of the Netherland Church corrected from errors in printing. Amsterdam. Aart Dirksz Oossaan, Bookseller, on the Dam, 1687."

On this title-page is an engraving representing the four Evangelists with their emblems, and the Apostle Paul, grouped around a table on which are books and writing materials. There are no other engravings or maps in the book.

ELSIE WENDEL was the daughter of Jeronimus, son of Evert Janse Wendel, an emigrant from Emden. He resided for a time in New Amsterdam, and there married in

[1] See Appendix.

July, 1644, Susanna du Trieux. He removed to Albany about 1658, where he engaged in the business of a cooper. Wills and other legal papers of the early days make known the trades, professions, and business pursuits of the first settlers. It is no disparagement to families of the present day to have it known that their first American ancestors were artisans, tradesmen, or farmers, and it is a false pride to conceal the fact. It was not the rich and noble who for the most part sought homes in the New World. Some there were who were forced to flee from persecution, and found a home in the wilds of America. Some few endeavored to become the founders of colonies, and were generally disappointed. The less ambitious farmers and tradesmen prospered in their new homes, and many of them laid the foundations of eminence and wealth for their descendants. They were the founders of families.

Albany for more than a hundred years was the centre of the Indian trade, and the base of military operations. Hence several trades, which were a necessity, were the sources of large profits. Coopers were required to supply the large demand for the small portable kegs for rum carried by the traders into the interior, or by the Indians on their return home from Albany. Blacksmiths drove a flourishing trade in the manufacture of Indian axes or tomahawks, or as gunsmiths in repairing Indian guns. Shoemakers were indispensable to provide the citizens and soldiers with shoes, and bakers to supply them with bread. Many persons with capital embarked in these various kinds of business as the surest road to wealth. But although men of position they were always designated in their title deeds and contracts by the business they followed, and they did not hesitate to term themselves such in their wills. It was only in the third or fourth generation that the word "gentleman" began to be used.

Evert Wendel, the emigrant, had six sons, three of whom added another *l* to their names. After a time some of the family changed to *Wandel.* Two of Evert's sons were merchants, and two others wrote themselves "shoemakers." The father of Elsie Wendel was a shoemaker and tanner. His bark mill and tan vats were on Fox's Creek. His baptismal name was Jeronimus, which he changed to its equivalent, Hieronimus, which in the next generation became Harmanus.

Captain Johannes Wendell, a merchant, was the most prominent of the six brothers. Having married a daughter of Dr. Abraham Staats, he was connected with some of the leading men of the province, and in politics was a Leislerian. He was twice married, and by his second wife, Elizabeth Staats, he had eleven children. He died in middle life, and his widow married Johannes Schuyler, the grandfather of General Philip Schuyler. Jacob, his youngest son, at an early age was placed with John Mico, of Boston, where he made his permanent home. He married Sarah, daughter of Dr. James Oliver, and became a leading merchant in that city of tradesmen. He rose to eminence in a commonwealth of eminent men. He was made a colonel of the Boston regiment of militia, no mean position at the time, a member of the King's Council for the province of Massachusetts, and was often employed in other public business, more especially in affairs relating to the Indians.[1]

---

[1] Sir Jonah Barrington says: "Dress has a moral effect on mankind. Let any gentleman find himself with dirty boots, old surtout, soiled neckcloth, and a general negligence of dress, he will in all probability find a corresponding disposition, by negligence of address." We should probably feel the force of this could we but see one of the "solid men of Boston" of olden time, as he came down State Street at the hour of high change, then 12 o'clock. His appearance would cause as much or more excitement than that of the Turkish ambassador who recently made us a

Elizabeth, daughter of Abraham Wendell, brother of Jacob, married Edmund Quincy of Boston. Both uncle and niece had large families, and their descendants are among the best citizens of New England. Among them are the great orator and anti-slavery agitator, Wendell Phillips, and Oliver Wendell Holmes, the "Autocrat of the Breakfast Table."

One of Elizabeth Wendell Quincy's daughters married Jonathan Sewall, Chief-Justice of Lower Canada. Her youngest daughter, Sarah, married John Hancock, president of Congress and first signer of the Declaration of Independence.[1]

HARMANUS SCHUYLER (10).

HARMANUS was the youngest but one of his father's eight children, and the only one of the four sons who married and had a family. He was born at Schenectady, where he spent his boyhood. His education, whatever it was, was acquired in the school of his native town. When of sufficient age he was placed with a jeweller in Albany, and after serving his apprenticeship, he established him-

---

visit. Colonel Jacob Wendell, merchant, who died in 1761, is thus described: "His dress was rich, being a scarlet embroidered coat, gold laced cocked hat, embroidered long waistcoat, small clothes, with gold knee-buckles, silk stockings with gold clocks, shoes with large gold or silver buckles, as the importance of the occasion or business demanded, full ruffles at the bosom and wrists, and walking with a gold-headed cane. Now we have a portrait of one of the old school gentlemen of a century ago."—*Boston Newspaper.*

[1] "Resolved, that Colonel Hughs, Deputy, is hereby licensed and permitted to export out of this State twenty barrels of flour for the use of the Hon^bl John Hancock and his family."—*Minutes of the Council of Safety of New York*, 1778.

A Mr. Hewes married Sarah, second daughter of Jacob Wendell, and is probably the Colonel Hughs mentioned in the permit. It is evident there was a scarcity of breadstuffs in Massachusetts, and that John Hancock was indebted to his relationship to the Wendells for his bread.

self in business on the corner of State Street and North Market Street, now Broadway.

He was elected constable of the first ward in September, 1752, and assistant alderman in 1759. Philip Schuyler (the general) represented another ward of the city about the same time in a like capacity. Neither of them rose to the dignity of an alderman. In colonial times the sheriffs were appointed annually by the governors. It was an office of influence and responsibility. Albany County occupied a large territory—all the settled parts of the colony north and west of Ulster and Dutchess, including the present State of Vermont. Then, as now, there were many aspirants for the position. In the spring of 1761, the sheriff of Albany was seized with a mortal sickness, and some weeks before his death the politicians were canvassing for his successor. The Assembly was in session at the capital, and before the adjournment the members from Albany got a pledge from Lieutenant-Governor Colden that, on the death of the sheriff, he would appoint Guisbert Merselius, who was also endorsed by the mayor of the city and the judges of the courts. Colden's friend, Sir William Johnson, had a candidate, and felt sure of his appointment as soon as he named him. He waited, however, until death had made a vacancy before he urged his candidate. Before his letter was received, General Monckton called on Mr. Colden, and informed him that the sheriff was dead, and that General Amherst desired the appointment of Harmanus Schuyler to fill the vacancy. The name of the candidate and his endorsers must have produced a cold chill, and caused some degree of perplexity, as the venerable governor called to mind what he had said and written about another Schuyler only two years before, and what he had so recently promised the members of Assembly.

With trembling hand he immediately wrote to General Amherst that he was already committed, assuring him at the same time that "although Schuyler's character might be as little known to the one as to the other, if he continued to desire it, he would appoint him, notwithstanding inconveniences might arise." To Sir William Johnson he wrote that however much he wished to oblige him, "after Generals Amherst and Monckton had expressed a wish for Schuyler's appointment, he had no choice left."

Schuyler's appointment was made in Council on June 17, 1761. He must have bowed with unusual grace to the mayor, when on June 23d following, at a meeting of the Common Council of which he was a member, he produced his commission, and took the oaths of office. His appointment was all the more gratifying, inasmuch as he had not been a candidate, and had not solicited the office. It is in vain to inquire what had induced the generals to make a personal recommendation of Schuyler. Both occupied a high position; the one had recently received the surrender of the French territories in America, the other was soon to be commissioned governor of the province. They may have known him and liked him; or they may have been acting on the suggestions of the lady of the Flatts, Colonel Philip Schuyler's widow, who at that time was in high favor with the English generals, on account of her many estimable qualities of mind and heart. A letter from Van Schaick to Johnson speaks of the influence of Colonel Bradstreet.

The new sheriff acquitted himself to the acceptance of the people, and no particular "inconviences arose," except perhaps to the governor from the Assembly. Schuyler was reappointed from year to year until 1770, when he removed to Stillwater. He had the courage to face the most trying occasions in the discharge of his duties. It may be

interesting to his descendants to give two or three instances of his coolness and pluck.

The territory now forming the State of Vermont was claimed both by New York and New Hampshire. The one issued patents for large tracts of the lands to speculators with few or no tenants; the other, for small farms to actual settlers. It was long an unsettled question to which of the two provinces the prize would finally fall. It was only solved in the time of the Revolution, when the inhabitants organized an independent government and demanded admission to the sisterhood of States. For many years, however, the contest was waged by letters between the governors, by proclamations and counter-proclamations, and by appeals to the crown. Persons were arrested by both parties as trespassers, carried far from home, and lodged in jail. The strife increased in violence and culminated in riots and the use of arms. The Vermonters, not contented with the territory claimed by New Hampshire, invaded that which had been long held as a part of this province and occupied for years. They took forcible possession of farmer's houses, and turned the occupants out of doors. On one occasion the sheriff of Albany was notified that a farmer at Hoosac had been dispossessed, and that others were threatened with a like treatment. Acting by authority of the governor, he went to Hoosac, taking with him a justice of the peace. The day after he arrived was Sunday, and its quiet was not disturbed. Early the next morning the New Hampshire officers began operations by putting two farmers and their families, with their effects, out of their houses, and then hastily retired, before the sheriff, stopping a short distance off, was notified. But he found their trail, pursued and captured four of their leaders, and triumphantly bore them off to the Albany jail.

Two years later there were riots on the Livingston manor, occasioned by men from Massachusetts who claimed the land. A warrant was placed in the sheriff's hands for the arrest of the chief rioter. Knowing the desperate character of the men with whom he had to deal, he called for the assistance of a *posse*. On approaching the house of the rioter, he found him and his friends to the number of thirty behind a barricade, all armed with clubs, and defiant. When ordered to surrender he refused, and threatened death to any one who should attempt to cross his intrenchment. The sheriff did not parley, but immediately leaped over the barricade. The *posse* followed him, and for a time the strife was fierce and bloody. Clubs and pistols were freely used, resulting in the death of one man on each side. The rioters took refuge in the house, and, barring the doors, deliberately fired on their opponents, wounding seven of them. The sheriff was foiled. He had no means to storm the fort, and was obliged to leave the field without his man.

In an affray in the neighborhood of Albany a man was killed. It was supposed that the crime was committed by a negro of desperate character, who remained on the farm where he worked. A warrant for his arrest was placed in the hands of a deputy, who reported that the negro, a large, powerful fellow, threatened death to any one who attempted to take him, and that he could not arrest him except at the risk of his life. Another deputy was alike unsuccessful. The sheriff himself then took the warrant. He found the culprit on the barn floor thrashing, who rushed toward him with his heavy flail uplifted, as if to strike. The sheriff withdrew his hand from behind him and showed a pistol. The flail fell to the floor, and the desperado quietly submitted his hands to the shackles.

In 1770 Harmanus Schuyler disposed of his business

in Albany and removed to Stillwater, where he bought a farm with water-power on the river. He erected mills, and until his death transacted an extensive business. I visited the place some twenty-five years ago, but there was nothing left to mark the spot, except the dug-way from the road high up on the bank down to the water.

In February, 1776, Harmanus was appointed by General Schuyler Assistant Deputy Commissary-General of the Northern Department, and was stationed at Lake George in charge of the men engaged in building boats for the use of the army. His letters thence to General Schuyler give us a vivid conception of the poverty of the country, and how poorly it was prepared to enter upon the war for independence with a rich and powerful kingdom; and of its entire dependence on the commanding general for all the materials required in the work of preparation. His letters from Lake George are from February 8 to April 24, 1776. His first letter begs for two or three kegs of nails absolutely required to complete the workshop. He then asks for some good axes, those on hand having "no steel in them," for grindstones, for camp-kettles, a blacksmith, a stick of sealing-wax, some pitch and oakum, and various other articles, all of which should have been furnished by the commissary-general. That officer, however, had not the money to procure them, and hence he wrote to the general, who alone had the money or credit for the occasion. Nails were ordered from Canada, and the first three sleigh-loads received proved to be useless—they were too small or too large. Finally, he wrote: "The men plague my heart out for their pay. Do send me at least ten pounds, with which to make them easy for the time."

He was at Skenesborough (Whitehall) from June to September, building a larger class of boats, called gondolas and galleys. Here his want of supplies was greater

than before. Every letter (there are fourteen in all) begs for something—now for some fresh meat and a little salt; then for pease and rum, for pitch, oakum, nails, tools, provisions. Again, he urgently asks for nails, iron, steel, oakum, cordage, pitch, and tar; and a few days later he writes: "This is the third time I have written for supplies, and have received none:" "We have now twenty-five blacksmiths, but tools for only four fires." At another time he writes: "We have now fifty-five blacksmiths, but the most of them are sick, as are also a great many carpenters. Out of fifty men under Captain Titcum only ten are able to work." He wrote to Colonel Wynkoop at Ticonderoga for men to work on the vessels, and received the reply: "I have not men enough to keep the guard." We learn that General Arnold was at Skenesborough supervising the work, and directing as to the size and number of vessels. We also catch a glimpse of other officers of the army, all busied in preparations to meet the English fleet on the lake. It was all in vain. The little fleet built under so many difficulties, and at so much expense, was destroyed by the British in the following October.

His last letter from Skenesborough is dated September 2, 1786. His robust health was broken at last. He and his son Dirck were sick with the fever which had proved so disastrous to the workmen all through the month of August. He was unable to resume his duties for several weeks, but toward the last of October we find him at Stillwater superintending the transportation of supplies to Fort Edward and Lake George. There was a depot for provisions at Stillwater. From thence they were forwarded by boats to Fort Edward while the river was open, and by wagons and sleighs when it was closed. Here he found the transportation facilities entirely inadequate, and appealed to the general for more boats and wagons. It was

not in vain, for a few days later he reports, "Forwarding goes on briskly." But now comes a letter from Captain Varick at Fort Edward, asking for at least forty wagons for use at his station. "They are difficult to get," he replied, "but I will try." He then hastened over to Schaghticoke to borrow or hire them from the farmers, but with indifferent success. On November 23d he wrote: "A drove of fat oxen is passing for Fort Edward. I want one for my family, and would be pleased to have it on account of my rations; but if not so, I will pay the cash."

On December 7th the river was closing, and there were still three hundred barrels of flour in store, which had to be sent forward by land. There was the rub. The roads were bad, and wagons could not be procured. Later there was a call for one hundred tons of hay. He scoured the country, and could find only thirty-six tons, of which twenty-three tons were sent by sleighs to Lake George, and thirteen tons to Ticonderoga. The balance of the order could not be had short of Bennington.

Harmanus Schuyler retired from the service when his friend the General was superseded by Gates. However, he encouraged his sons of sufficient age to offer their services to their country. The eldest was studying medicine when the war began, and was attached for a time to the medical staff of Dr. Stringer, and afterward was the surgeon of Colonel Hazen's regiment. Samuel, the second son, on account of his imperfect vision, could not serve in the ranks, but was a clerk in the Commissary Department. The third son, Derick, less than fourteen years old at the beginning of the war, was made a second lieutenant in one of the companies of the New York line, as soon as his age would permit it. The other sons were too young to render any service.

Harmanus Schuyler died at Stillwater, on September 1,

1796, in the seventieth year of his age, leaving a widow and seven children. His will is dated August 10, 1796. In some respects it is singular. He released his eldest son from the payment of the considerable sums of money advanced to him, and now gave him his silver tankard. To his wife he gave the income of his whole estate, real and personal, "during her natural life." After her death, his daughters, Elsie and Maria, were to receive each £250 which he had invested in United States bonds; and to his son John he gave his "negro boy Peet." The residue of his estate, real and personal, he gave to his youngest son, Philip, subject to the payment of £300 to his son John, and £250 to Samuel, and to an annuity of £7 to Derick for life. He did not follow the old Dutch custom of dividing his estate equally among his children, nor the English usage of giving the real estate to the eldest son, but gave to one of his children, the youngest, much the largest share. Doubtless he had reasons for such a disposition of his property, but they are not known at the present day.

CHRISTINA TEN BROECK, my grandmother, the wife of Harmanus Schuyler, carries me back to the early days of the colony on different lines, through the Ten Broecks to the Van Rensselaers and Van Burens, and through the Van Rensselaers to the noted Anneke Jans. Her father, Samuel Ten Broeck, was the second son of Dirk Wesselse Ten Broeck and Christina Van Buren. Her mother was Maria, daughter of Hendrick Van Rensselaer and his wife, Catharine Van Brugh, who was a granddaughter of Anneke Jans. Of her father little is known, but her grandfather Ten Broeck was a prominent man, and from the time he was appointed Recorder of Albany to his death, his name is of frequent recurrence in the annals of the city and province. I have already told the story of

Hendrick Van Rensselaer, but the history of his wife's grandmother is interesting chiefly because her "heirs" so persistently for more than a hundred years sought to reclaim a portion of the property belonging to the rich corporation of Trinity Church, New York.

Dirk Wesselse Ten Broeck.[1]

Ten Broeck is a name which gives occasion for speculation. Was it the true surname of a family, or was it assumed by a section of a family known by another name? It has been claimed that Wessel Ten Broeck, merchant of Munster, Westphalia, came with Director Peter Minuit in 1626, and settled as a merchant at Fort Orange (Albany). I have been unable to verify it. The earliest date at which the name appears in the records was June 21, 1663, signed to a contract, Dirk Wesselse ten Broeck. Ten Broeck first appears in the records of the Dutch Church of New York, October 1, 1671, when Wessel Wesselsen ten Broeck was recorded as a godfather. A year later Hendrick Wesselsen ten Broeck acted in the same capacity. In 1674, the latter had a child baptized by name Wessel, and Dirk Wesselse ten Broeck was its godfather. In October, 1673, Wessel Ten Broeck was appointed by Governor Colve a schepen at Kingston. In all probability this was the Wessel Wesselse ten Broeck who was in New York in 1671, for we do not meet with him again in the latter city, and he had now taken up his permanent residence in Kingston. These three, Dirk Wesselse, Hendrick Wesselse, and Wessel Wesselse ten Broeck, were probably brothers, and the only ones, so far as I have been able to learn, by the name Ten Broeck then in the country.

---

[1] Vessell then broke. *Jacob Leisler to the Governor of Boston, October*, 1689. Dirk Ten Breeches.—*Washington Irving.*

Whether they were emigrants, or whether they assumed the name to distinguish them from others of the same family, is an unsolved question. There were several Wessels and Wesselses in New York, and some in Albany, who were among the early settlers. One Wessel Wesselse of Oyster Bay, L. I., October 4, 1677, mortgaged a house and lot on Broadway, New York, "late in possession of Dirk Wesselse," and all the estate due him by virtue of the last will of Wessel Wesselse, "my father," for thirty-six pounds, which when paid would be in full settlement for all claims, "from the beginning of the world to the present time." January 17, 1700, one Hendrick Ten Broeck "son and heir of Hendrick Wesselse Ten Broeck, quit-claimed a fifth share in a piece of land, known as the 'shoemaker's land,'" to one Lodwick. The Hendrick Wesselse ten Broeck first named had no son by name Hendrick, but his contemporary, Hendrick Wesselse, had a son by that name. These references indicate a probability that the Wessels, or Wesselses, and Ten Broecks were originally the same family. Yet it is possible that Ten Broeck was a Dutch name known in Holland, and that the three brothers were immigrants.

Dirk Wesselse Ten Broeck, as commissary, justice, recorder, mayor, member of Assembly, ambassador, wrote his name Dirk Wesselse. When mayor he was known and addressed as Dirk Wessels, while his son, an alderman, and sitting at the Council Board with his father, was written Wessel Ten Broeck. To land contracts, deeds, and to his will, he wrote his name in full, Dirk Wesselse ten Broeck, the *ten* always with a small *t*. In his will he wrote the full names of his children, the *ten* the same as in his own signature. In history and politics he is only known as Dirk Wessels. Most readers of the city and provincial records often meet the name Dirk Wessels, and do

not dream that he was the ancestor of General Abraham Ten Broeck of Revolutionary fame, or of that other Ten Broeck who made himself famous on both sides the Atlantic as the breeder and owner of race-horses.

When Pieter Van Alen, tailor and trader in Beverwyck, was about to sail for the fatherland in August, 1662, he gave a power of attorney to his servant, Dirk Wessels, to transact all his business in his absence. He was then only twenty years old, but competent for the duties of the trust. The next year he bought a house, married, and commenced business as a "free merchant." He bought the house situated on the north side of Yonker's Street, now the site of the Mechanics and Farmers' Bank, of the "heirs" of Anneke Jans for four hundred dollars, payable in beavers, and signed the contract Dirk Wesselse ten Broeck. His name for the next twenty years seldom appears in the records. He wisely devoted himself to his business, which he managed with tact and judgment, and succeeded in placing himself among the foremost merchants of Albany. It is said, but without sufficient proof, that he exported in one year five thousand beaver skins, an unusually large number for one man to handle.[1]

His education was equal to that of his contemporaries, and included a knowledge of the Indian languages, without which a man could not transact his business, as then conducted, with ease and facility. After he had gained a solid position in his community, and was in possession of a respectable estate, he began to attract the attention of the colonial governors as one fitted for public office. In

[1] There is a paper on file among the city archives without an original date, showing the number of beavers shipped by different parties, in which Derik Wessils appears to have been the shipper of five thousand. It was written by Johannes Dyckman, who on account of insanity was removed from office in 1655, when Dirk Wesselse Ten Broeck was only thirteen years old. Derik Wessils must have been another man.

1676, Governor Andros made him a commissary, the duties of which were not onerous, and did not interfere with his regular business. Eight years later Governor Dongan appointed him a justice of the peace. From this time until a few years before his death, he was much employed in the public service. He was named in the charter of July 22, 1686, one of the first aldermen of the city, and in October following he was appointed recorder in place of Isaac Swinton. He held this office until 1696, when he was chosen mayor, being the fourth since the organization of the city government. Besides these municipal offices, he was elected member of the first Assembly in 1691, and re-elected to the second, third, fourth, and fifth. He was again elected to the eighth, but was refused his seat by the Leislerian majority, for non-residence, as was alleged. He had bought a farm in the Livingston manor, on which he lived a part of the year, but kept up his residence and business in Albany as formerly. The parties were so evenly divided in the Assembly, eleven to ten, that the majority were unwilling to run the risk of falling into the minority by sickness or death, and hence seized upon a flimsy excuse to exclude Wessels and Nicols, and to seat their own partisans in their place. Dirk Wessels was also a member of the Indian Board for several years, was four times appointed political agent to Canada, and was frequently sent among the Indians of the Five Nations on important public business. His influence with the Indian allies was second only to that of Peter Schuyler. In all these various offices of trust and dignity he served without reproach, showing himself to be a man of rare ability and ready resources for all contingencies. The only thing alleged against him during his public career with any semblance of truth, was his association with Peter Schuyler and others in the patent for the Mohawk lands, as a wrong to

a nation which had always been the firm ally of the English. Although there can be little doubt that the transaction on the part of all engaged in the affair, except Pinhorne, was not for personal gain, but was in the interest of the Indians themselves, it was a mistake so far as they were concerned; and Wessels, like Peter Schuyler, as soon as he understood by the public clamor that his motives were not appreciated, renounced all connection with it.

In politics Wessels was anti-Leislerian, but was never a bitter partisan, nor an uncompromising opponent. When the interests of the province required it, he could overcome his prejudices, and act in concert with his political foes. He was a member of the Dutch Church, and for many years an officer. But an exemplary Christian life did not shield him from Jacob Leisler's vituperative tongue and pen. His opposition to usurped authority was enough to condemn him in the estimation of the usurper. Leisler said of him, "He is a person who formerly professed popery, and recanted a Protestant, and been employed by our late papist governor dongan for ambassador to Canada, and understood not one word of french."

Ten Broeck in common with his well-to-do friends and neighbors, bought lands from the Indians for investment and on speculation. His first purchase was made in 1680, of four flats or plains lying on Kinderhook Creek, "one Dutch mile from Jan Tysen Goes, (which name was afterward changed to Hoes) with the woodland extending to the high hills." He was one of the seven partners in the Saratoga Patent, and one of the seven partners in the great Westenhook patent, lying east of Kinderhook and along the sources of the Housatonic River. In 1694 he bought of Robert Livingston two tracts of land within the bounds of Livingston manor—one of six hundred acres on the Hudson, the other of twelve hundred acres on the

Roelof Jansen Kil, about six miles inland. On the latter he built a dwelling house and barns, and called it his "Bouwery." He did not at first make it his permanent residence, but lived in Albany, and there prosecuted his business and various employments as formerly. Toward the close of life, he transferred his business to others, and retired to his Bouwery to spend his last years in superintending the improvements on his farms.

In his domestic relations he seems to have been fortunate and happy. He had a family of thirteen children—six sons and seven daughters. Two of the sons, Manasseh and Ephraim, twins, died in infancy; the others survived him, and are named in his will. They were all married, and most of them were settled in Albany and its vicinity. Two years before his death, he calmly inventoried the results of his business life, and recorded them in his will. In an old Dutch Bible, possessed by one of his descendants, we read, "September 13, 1717, my father, Dirk Wesselse, fell asleep in the Lord, at his Bouwery on Roelof Jansen's Kil. The Lord give him a blessed resurection."

His will, written by himself in the Dutch language, is dated February 4, 1715, and was proved on February 6, 1718. He divided his large estate equally among his eleven children, according to the valuation made by himself of its several parts. Two-thirds of his seventh share in the Saratoga Patent he gave to his eldest son, Wessel—the other third to his daughter, Gertrude, wife of Abraham Schuyler; to his sons Samuel and Tobias, his farms in the Livingston manor; and to his son Johannes, the homestead in Albany and the lands in Kinderhook; all to be reckoned as part of his estate at the value he placed upon them. He directed his other lands and property of whatever kind to be sold, and, when all this was done, an equal distribution to be made among his children, after

the death of his widow, who while she lived was to have entire control of the estate. In conclusion, he enjoined upon his heirs "that none of his real estate should be sold to strangers, but should remain in his family for all time." This injunction was observed by the next two generations, but thereafter the lands gradually passed into the hands of strangers, until very little is now in his family. John, the son and heir of Tobias, sold his half of the manor farm to his cousin, Dirk Wesselse, son of Samuel, and removed to New Jersey. He is the ancestor of the horse-loving and horse-racing Ten Broecks of Kentucky. Dirk, the eldest son of Wessel, was mayor of Albany in 1746–7, and his son Abraham was the Revolutionary general, and also mayor of Albany in 1796–7. The latter married a daughter of Patroon Van Rensselaer, and had charge of the vast estate during the minority of the last patroon.

There are few among my various ancestors whose history I have studied with more interest than that of Dirk Wesselse Ten Broeck. I learned that his grave was still to be seen on his old bouwery, now in the town of Clermont, Columbia County, and I resolved to visit it, if for nothing else, that I might say I had stood by the grave of the grandfather of my grandmother. The early Schuylers and their families had been buried beneath the floors of city churches, or in the grounds surrounding them, which had been removed and obliterated by the march of improvements; even that of my grandfather had suffered a like fate. I could not visit them.

With a relative as mentor and guide, I left Nassau on a bright summer morning. Our route was by quiet roads, far from the hum of cities and the screech of locomotives, through a charming country, full of interest to one whose forefathers had purchased it from the Indian proprietors two hundred years ago. It led along the shore of the

pretty Kinderhook Lake, through the thriving villages of Valatie and Kinderhook, by the modest brick house built by a Van Buren, where Martin the Fox, was born ;[1] by the famous Lindenwald (so named, although there is not a linden tree on the place), where ex-president Van Buren found a pleasant retreat from his political contests and successes; over the old race-course of the Livingstons and Ten Broecks ; past country seats surrounded by ancient trees ; to Claverack, the summer family seat of the younger branch of the Van Rensselaers; thence through splendid farms to Clermont, and the grave of the grand old man of two centuries ago.

The private cemetery, in which repose the remains of Dirk Wesselse Ten Broeck and his wife, Christina Van Buren, surrounded by the graves of several generations, is situated on the second terrace or bluff above the little river, known as Roelof Jansen's Kil,[2] in the midst of forest trees, enclosed with a permanent fence, and tenderly cared for by a descendant in the sixth generation, Mrs. Harold Wilson. It is the only portion of the old Bouwery in possession of the "family." Its location, for a prospect of picturesque beauty, is unsurpassed, and there is no apparent reason why it should be disturbed for centuries. On the terrace below is the fine old brick mansion built by Ten Broeck, beyond which is the valley of Roelof Jansen's Kil, and over the river the hills rise in terraces, dotted with groves of native trees and pretty villas. Up and down the valley for long distances you catch glimpses of sparkling water through the shrubs and trees on the banks of the river. The house is isolated, far from any

---

[1] In politics Martin Van Buren was called "The Fox."

[2] It is said the river was named for the first husband of Anneke Jans, who in the early days on his small vessel, was ice-bound, and forced to spend the winter among the Indians of that neighborhood.

road, and unseen, except from the opposite hills, until by a private lane you reach the terrace of the cemetery.

CORNELIS MAESEN VAN BUREN, the father of Ten Broeck's wife Christina, came to Rensselaerwyck in 1631, and settled on a farm belonging to the manor. He and his wife died in 1648, and were buried on the same day. He left four children, the eldest of whom, Martin, bought of Ten Broeck a farm at Kinderhook, for which a deed was given to him after the latter's death, on August 10, 1703. The farm-house is situated on a slight elevation near the creek and the village of Kinderhook. Here one of the most noted presidents of the nation was born and brought up. He acquired his academic and legal education in his native village, and never lost his affection for the place of his birth. Toward the close of his life he returned to its neighborhood to spend his last years, and die among the friends of his youth.

Ten Broeck had great confidence in his wife. She must have been a woman of more than ordinary ability. Although she was about his own age when he wrote his will, he appointed her sole executrix of his entire estate, and placed the entire income at her disposal. She could not sell the lands, and in case "she should marry again" (he must have smiled at the thought) then she must surrender the trust to his sons.

The Van Burens probably came from Buren in Gelderland. On a map of that province, published in 1654, Buren is represented as a fortified town, near which is the castle of the Counts Buren—a title at that time belonging to the house of Nassau. There was another emigrant from Holland by the name of Van Beuren, whose descendants have dropped the first *e*, and now write their name like that of the former family. The two families can trace no kinship one with the other.

ANNEKE JANS,

Or ANNA IANS, as she wrote her name in small Roman capitals, on June 21, 1642, to an obligation to provide for the children of her first husband, is an ancestor whose history is interesting, not only to her descendants, but to others who know something of the persistent efforts of her "heirs" to recover possession of a valuable property in the city of New York, now, and for nearly two hundred years, held by Trinity Church. Roelof Jansen, her husband, came to Rensselaerwyck with his family in 1630, among the first emigrants sent out by the Patroon Van Rensselaer. He was employed as a farmer on a salary of 180 guilders a year. When his term of service expired, in 1636, he removed to New Amsterdam, and secured a ground-brief, or title, for sixty-two acres of land, bounded west by the Hudson River, north by "old Jans' land" and the swamp, east by the present Broadway, and south by the Company's farm. He immediately commenced improving the farm by clearing the land for tillage, and the erection of a building, but did not live to prosecute the work. He died within a year, leaving Anneke a widow with five young children.

Soon after March, 1638, Anneke Jans married the Rev. Everardus Bogardus, minister of the Dutch Church in New Amsterdam, the first settled pastor in the colony. She now entered a sphere of more activity and usefulness. From the house of a tenant-farmer she entered the home of an educated man, who, as pastor of the church, was equal in position and influence to any in the colony. Her marriage with the dominie, encumbered as she was with a family, and with no earthly possessions except a few acres of wild land, which was so abundant and cheap that it might be had for the asking, leads one to the conclusion

that she must have been more than an ordinary woman; and our curiosity is excited to learn something of her family and previous history. But there is little to learn. We only know that she was the daughter of Tryntje Jansen, or Tryn Jonas as she was called, a professional midwife, employed by the West India Company for their colony of New Netherland on a moderate salary, and that she had a sister Maritje.[1] Within a brief period these sisters and their families were connected by marriage with all the leading families of the province.

We do not know who was the husband of Tryntje Jansen; nor do we know the date of her arrival in New Amsterdam. She was probably a widow. In February, 1644, she received a patent for a lot of ground on Pearl Street, south of the fort, on which she built a house. From this time until her death, in 1648, we frequently meet her name in the records of the period. Her daughter Anneke was married, as we have seen, when she came to Rensselaerwyck, and must have preceded her mother by several years. Maritje may have immigrated with her first husband, Tymen Jansen, a ship carpenter, in 1633. Her daughter, Elsie Tymens, was first married in January, 1652.

Anneke Jans by her first husband, Roelof Jansen, had five children—Sara, Tryntje, Sytje (or Fytje), Jan, and Annatje—on whom, before her marriage with Bogardus, in 1638, she settled two hundred silver guilders each, out of their paternal estate. The record of the transaction having been lost, she again appeared before the secretary of the colony, on June 21, 1642, and executed a duplicate, in which she also agreed to give the children "a decent edu-

[1] After the death of Tryntje Jansen, her daughters, Anneke and Maritje, gave a power of attorney to a friend in Holland to collect from the Company the balance of salary due their mother, amounting to "249 guilders, 2 stivers, and 8 pennies."

cation and respectable trades." By her second husband, Dominie Bogardus, she had four sons—Willem, Cornelis, Jonas, and Pieter.

Sara Roelofs married, first, Dr. Hans Kierstede; secondly, Cornelis Van Borsum; and, thirdly, Elbert Elbertsen. The eldest of Dr. Kierstede's ten children, Hans, Jr., married a daughter of Govert Lookermans, whose sister, Anneke Lookermans, was the wife of Olof Stevense Van Cortlandt, the ancestor of the Van Cortlandts. Blandina Kierstede, a daughter of Dr. Hans, married Petrus Bayard, a nephew of the old Director-General Stuyvesant. Petrus Bayard became a sort of heretic in his religious belief, and followed his co-religionists, the Labadists, to their settlement in Delaware. He is the ancestor of the Delaware and Pennsylvania Bayards, several of whom have risen to eminence. Two of Dr. Kierstede's children married Kips, a name well known in the church. Another married Willem Teller, whose father was a prominent merchant of Albany.

Tryntje Roelofs married, first, Lucas Rodenburgh, vice-director of Curaçoa; and, secondly, Johannes Van Brugh,[1] a merchant and magistrate of New York. One of Van Brugh's daughters married Teunis de Key, a name formerly well known in the business circles of the metropolis. Catherine Van Brugh married Hendrick Van Rensselaer, grandson of the first patroon; and her brother Peter married Sara Cuyler, of Albany. Hendrick Van Rensselaer's eldest son, Johannes, married Engeltie Livingston, a granddaughter of Colonel Peter Schuyler. Another son, Killian, married Ariantia, daughter of Nicholas Schuyler.

---

[1] A wedding present—"September 12, 1658, sent from Curaçoa by ship Deimen, Captain Priens, to the newly married couple, Johannes Van Brugh and Mrs. Rodenburgh: 1 keg salt, 1 keg preserved lemons, 1 keg lemon-juice, a parrot, and 12 paroquets, all marked ⅄B."

One of his daughters, Maria, was the wife of Samuel Ten Broeck, second son of Dirck Wesselse Ten Broeck. Johannes Van Rensselaer was the father of Catherine, wife of General Philip Schuyler. Peter, son of Johannes Van Brugh and Tryntje Roelofs, had an only daughter, Catherine, who married Philip Livingston, second proprietor of the Livingston manor.

Sytje Roelofs married Peter Hartgers, and had two daughters. She died before her mother. Jan Roelofs was killed by the French at Schenectady, in February, 1690, and left no posterity. Annatje Roelofs, youngest child of Anneke Jans by her first husband, probably died young, as nothing is known of her after 1642, and she was not named in her mother's will.

William Bogardus was twice married, and had nine children. His second wife was Walbugh, daughter of Nicasius de Sille, attorney-general of New Netherland, 1656–1664; he was portmaster of the province in 1687. Cornelis Bogardus married Helena Teller, whose sister Yenke was the first wife of Arent Schuyler, of New Jersey, and whose brother married a daughter of Olof Stevense Van Cortlandt. Cornelis died in 1666, leaving one son, Cornelis. Jonas Bogardus died unmarried. Peter Bogardus married Wyntia Bosch, and had eight children; he was a trader and magistrate of Albany. Cornelis, son of Cornelis Bogardus, married Rachel De Witt, of Kingston; and Anthony, son of Peter, married a Knickerbocker.

Maritje Jans, sister of Anneke, married, first, Tymen Jansen; second, Dirck Cornelisse Van Wenveen; third, Govert Lookermans, in his day the most active and enterprising merchant of New Amsterdam, and supposed to be the richest man in the province. By her first husband she had one daughter, named Elsie, known in after years as Elsie Tymens; by her second husband she had one son,

Cornelis Dirckse, and by Govert Lookermans a son, Jacob.

Elsie Tymens married, first, Peter Cornelisse Van der Veen, a trader of New Amsterdam, who is said to have built the first brick house in the city and the first ship of any considerable size in New Netherland. She married, secondly, Jacob Leisler, on April 11, 1663. Only three years before this marriage, Leisler had left Holland as a common soldier in the service of the West India Company. He must have possessed some personal attractions, that on leaving the ranks he was able to win the affections of a woman who, as heir of her late husband's fortune and business, and related to the more prosperous classes, could have looked higher. He must also have possessed more than ordinary ability and aptitude to business, to have become within a few years one of the most prosperous merchants in the colony.

Jacob Leisler and Elsie Tymens had seven children, two sons and four daughters. The sons died unmarried. Their eldest daughter, Susanna, married Michael Vaughton, a friend of Governor Dongan and half brother of John Spragg, secretary of the province. Catherine was the wife of Robert Walter, mayor of New York and member of the King's Council. Their eldest daughter, Elizabeth Walter, married Captain John Wendell, of Albany, brother of Jacob Wendell, an eminent merchant of Boston. Maria Walter was the third wife of Arent Schuyler, and, after his death, she married Archibald Kennedy, the receiver-general and collector of customs. John Walter, son of Robert, had an only daughter, Hester, who became the wife of Colonel Peter Schuyler, of New Jersey, and *their* only daughter, Catherine, married Archibald Kennedy, Jr., who in time succeeded to the earldom of Cassillis. Mary, third daughter of Jacob Leisler, married, first, Jacob Milborne,

her father's secretary; and, secondly, Abraham Gouverneur, whose family, in time, became intimately related to the Morris family, of Westchester. Hester, the fourth daughter of Leisler, married Barent Reynders, a merchant of New York and brother-in-law of Dr. Samuel Staats. One of their daughters married, first, Nicholas Gouverneur, and second, William Provoost. Another daughter was the wife of Nicholas Bayard, grandson of the Nicholas Bayard whom Jacob Leisler had so long held a prisoner in irons.

Maritje Jansen's son by her second husband is little known. Her son, Jacob Lookermans, was a physician, and settled in Maryland, where he became a planter. It is said that his direct line has died out.

Govert Lookermans was a widower, with two daughters, when he married the sister of Anneke Jans. His first wife was Ariantje Jans, probably a relative of his second. His eldest daughter, Maritje, married Balthazar Bayard, another nephew of Petrus Stuyvesant, and had seven children. His second daughter, Jenetje, married Dr. Hans Kierstede, Jr.

Subsequently the De Lanceys, the De Peysters, the Jays, and others married into the families already named, so that the blood of Anneke Jans and her sister is mingled with almost all the old families of this State, New Jersey, and Delaware. Many a proud scion of these old houses, when tracing back his pedigree, hoping to find in the dark ages some knight or nobleman with whom to connect his name, is confronted halfway by the midwife of New Netherland.

Tymen Jansen, first husband of Maritje Jans, procured a patent for a piece of land containing 646 square rods, lying on the northerly side of Pearl Street, then fronting on the East River, including Hanover Square, a point of

land projecting into the river. He erected a dwelling-house, which he occupied until his death. It was the residence of his widow when she married her second husband, and there she continued to live until again a widow. She married, thirdly, Govert Lookermans, who now assumed control of the property. He sold some of the ground to other parties, and in 1667 procured a patent in his own name for the remainder. Meantime Elsie Tymens had married, had lost her husband, and had finally married Jacob Leisler. While Lookermans lived, the family connection—the Bayards, the Kierstedes, the Van Cortlandts, and the Leislers—were on friendly terms, serving each other as sponsors on baptismal occasions, and performing other acts of neighborly kindnesses. After his death which occurred in 1670, there were disagreements and contentions in reference to the property, which resulted in acrimonious suits before the courts. Lookermans died without a will, and, as his own estate was mixed up with that which justly belonged to his wife and her daughter, Elsie Tymens, it was difficult to determine the rights of either. His own children claimed the whole, to the exclusion of Elsie Tymens, to whom the most valuable portion of the estate really belonged, as only heir of Tymen Jansen, although the title stood in the name of Lookermans. This controversy about property undoubtedly had its influence in the political troubles of subsequent years, when Leisler and the Bayards were arrayed against each other. The suits at law terminated only with Leisler's political fall and death. It was one of the notable cases of those early times, arraying one-half of the community against the other half, and was kept in the courts for over twenty years.

Rev. Everardus Bogardus, the second husband of Anneke Jans, was a man of fair ability, and fearless in the

discharge of his duties, as he understood them. He was no respecter of persons, not sparing the highest officials when their delinquencies deserved rebuke. By his direct methods and plainness of speech he incurred the displeasure of Director Van Twiller and his Council, who called him rude and unmannerly. He esteemed Director Kieft, and treated him courteously, until he had caused the Indians, who had fled from their enemies to Manhattan for safety, to be slain at night in their encampments. Bogardus called it murder, and pronounced the anathemas of the divine law against the cowardly offender. Kieft was highly indignant, and had the minister summoned before himself and Council, to be tried for speaking ill of those in authority. Bogardus declined to appear before a court composed of his accusers, but was willing to be tried by a tribunal of disinterested persons, either here or in Holland. It did not suit Kieft to send him home for trial. It was more likely that he himself would be tried, and not the minister. He kept up the dispute, and pelted the poor dominie from time to time with paper missiles from the Council. Olof Stevense Van Cortlandt, one of the Council, felt aggrieved at something the minister had said, and sued him for slander. Both trials proceeded side by side for years, until the latter case was referred to Dominie Megapolensis, of Rensselaerwyck, who found, on investigation, that there had been a misunderstanding of some particular points, which were explained and the parties were reconciled. Kieft was glad to let the more important matter drop, and himself be reconciled to the fearless preacher. But Bogardus was weary of so much strife, and resigned his pastorship; he wanted change, and resolved to take an ocean voyage to soothe his nerves and regain his usual health. From that time to the present a voyage to Europe has been the great remedy for over-

worked clergymen. About the same time Director Kieft was recalled, and they sailed on the same vessel, The Princess. There were on board other persons whom Kieft had injured, and whom Stuyvesant had banished for speaking evil of dignitaries. They were on their way to the fatherland to present their grievances to the Lords Superior and procure redress. The voyage was prosperous across the Atlantic, but, when all were rejoicing on their near approach to their old home, the pilot erred in his reckoning, and the ship was wrecked on the English coast, in September, 1647. Bogardus and Kieft, with seventy-nine others, perished in the sea. The two men who had been banished were rescued, and bore the news of the shipwreck to Holland.

Anneke Jans remained in New Amsterdam until the summer of 1651, when she removed to Beverwyck, and in the following year bought a lot on the north side of Yonker's Street, now the site of the Mechanics' and Farmers' Bank, on which she built a comfortable house, which she occupied until her death. Her will, written in Dutch, and dated January 29, 1663, is among the notarial papers in the clerk's office of Albany. She was suffering from a mortal illness, but her mind was unclouded. She remembered the stipulation with reference to her eldest children, into which she had entered before she married Dominie Bogardus, and now, first of all, she directed that they should be paid the one thousand guilders then promised them; that all of her unmarried children should receive portions equal to those of the marrried ones; that five silver mugs should be provided for five of her grandchildren; and that the residue of her estate should be divided equally among her seven living children and the heirs of her deceased daughter, Sytje Hartgers. She appointed no executors, but left her heirs to manage and

distribute the property according to the terms of the will.

As there was no inventory, we do not know in what the estate consisted, aside from three parcels of land, the household furniture, and the apparel and jewelry of the testatrix. The realty consisted of the house and lot on Yonker's Street, Albany; a farm of one hundred and thirty acres on Long Island, near Hell Gate, known as the Dominie's Hoeck; and a farm of sixty-two acres on Manhattan Island, known as the Dominie's Bouwery.

Within a few months after the death of their mother, the heirs named in the will commenced their duties as administrators of the property. They sold the house on Yonker's Street to Dirck Wesselse Ten Broeck, for one thousand guilders in beavers, payable in three instalments. Before the deed was given, in July, 1667, Cornelis Bogardus had died. His brothers, Peter and Jonas, signed the instrument for themselves and as attorneys for the others. There never has been any question about the validity of the sale, although the property has become very valuable.

The heirs were now in possession of sufficient means to pay the minor legacies, as well as to the four children of Roelof Jansen the one thousand guilders to which they were entitled. They were in no haste to dispose of the other lands belonging to the estate, but waited for an advance in values. Not so, it appears, with others; for in the Council minutes of 1670 we have an account of a transaction so curious that I am tempted to relate it. The heirs of Anna (Jans) Bogardus lodged a complaint before the governor and Council, to the effect that a Mr. Sharp had sold their farm on Long Island, the Dominie's Hoeck, at public auction, for which he had no authority; and they now besought the Council for redress. Mr. Sharp was accordingly summoned before the board to make his de-

fence. He could only say that he was drunk, and did not know what he was doing. The court was not long in announcing its decision—that Sharp must pay back to Nicholas Bayard all the *pluck* money, the costs incurred, and two hundred guilders damages; while the heirs were to be at liberty "to do with their own as they please." The farm was eventually sold to Captain Thomas Lawrence, to whom a patent was issued in December, 1677.

The farm of sixty-two acres on Manhattan Island possesses unusual interest on account of its present great value, and of the efforts made from time to time for nearly two hundred years to wrest it from the possession of its legitimate owners.[1] Without its history no biography of Anneke Jans would be complete. After her marriage with Dominie Bogardus, he assumed its management. In May, 1639, he let it to Richard Brudnell for a tobacco plantation, at a yearly rental of three hundred and fifty

---

[1] In the patent of Governor Nicolls (March 27, 1667) the farm is thus described: "The limits whereof did then begin from the fence of the house by the strand side so running north east to the fence of old Jan's land it's in length 210 rods, then going along the fence of the said Old Jan's land south east it reacheth to a certain swamp and is in breadth 100 rod, and striking along the swamp south west it's in length 160 rod. And from the swamp to the strand going west it's in breadth 50 rod the land lying on the south side of the house to the fence belonging to the Company and so to the east side begins at the fence and goes south to the posts and rails of the Company's land without any hindrance of the path it's in breadth 60 rod in length on the south side along the posts & rails 160 rod on the east side to the entrance of the Chalke Hook in breadth 30 rod and along the said Chalke Hook on the north side to the fence of the land before mentioned going west is in length 100 rod amounting in all to about 62 acres."

The plan of this farm on the map of New York, in "Valentine's Manual" for 1853, is incorrect. A satisfactory idea of it can be gained from the plan in the interesting article of Mr. J. W. Gerard, on "Anneke Jans Bogardus and her Farm," in Harper's Monthly for May, 1885. It may be proper to state that what I have said on this subject was written at least a year before the publication of Mr. Gerard's article.

pounds of tobacco. Included in the lease was a stipulation that he should furnish the tenant with a gun and water-hound, and receive therefor one-third of the game taken. Brudnell was not successful in raising tobacco, or in killing ducks, for three years afterward Bogardus let the farm to Rufus Barton for a term of five years, at the nominal rent of two capons per annum. Before 1651 there had been another change of tenants, and Egbert Wouterson had planted corn and pumpkins in its fields and shot game in its swamps and woods.

In November, 1651, Govert Lookermans, Hans Kierstede, and Peter Hartgers, "all relatives of Anneke Jans," acting as her attorneys, leased the farm for six years from the following May to Evert Pels, at two hundred and twenty-five guilders and thirty pounds of butter a year. There was then an old house on the place, sadly dilapidated, which the tenant was required to repair at the expense of the landlord, but he might build a new one if he chose.

After the English came, in 1664, the governors, for the sake of the fees, required the owners of lots and lands to surrender their old titles and procure new ones under the new seal of the province. In compliance with this rule, the heirs procured a patent from Governor Richard Nicolls, in March, 1667. Four years afterward (March 9, 1670–71) they sold the farm "for a valuable consideration" to Governor Francis Lovelace, Nicolls' successor. This deed was signed, either personally or by attorney, by all the heirs except one. Cornelis Bogardus had died in 1666, and neither his wife (Helena Teller) nor his son (Cornelis) joined in the conveyance.[1]

---

[1] Philip Pieterse Schuyler was the administrator of the estate of Cornelis Bogardus, and as such sold his "household stuff" at public auction on September 14, 1666. It brought, altogether, 2,014 guilders, 15 stivers, seawant currency.

The West India Company, after the purchase of Manhattan Island, set apart a small tract of land, situated north of the present Fulton Street, between Broadway and the Hudson River, for the use of their directors-general, which was called the Company's Bouwery. As this was public property, it was confiscated by the English, but reserved as before for the use of the governors, and called the Duke's Farm. When the Duke of York became king, it formed part of the royal domain, and was called the King's Farm. When Queen Anne was on the throne, it was the Queen's Farm. As the Dominie's Bouwery was next adjoining on the north, Governor Lovelace occupied both places as one. When he retired, and was succeeded by Governor Andros, it was found that he had misappropriated the revenues of his royal master, and was a defaulter for a large amount. The bouwery was taken in part payment of the debt, and added to the original farm reserved for the governors, and the whole was then called the Duke's Farm. Its use and rentals inured to the benefit of the governors for the time being, and were a part of their perquisites. They were not large,[1] but, such as they were, they were by no means despised by the impecunious governors.

In 1697, a short time before Governor Fletcher retired, and after he knew that his successor had been appointed, he gave a seven years' lease of the King's Farm to Trinity Church, at a rental of £12 a year. He did this on the plea that, as a lover of the church, he wished to aid the only English church in the province, which had been recently established and was struggling for existence amid poverty and a population attached to other organizations.

[1] Governor Andros leased the farm in 1677 for a term of twenty years, at a yearly rental of sixty bushels of wheat.

Governor Bellomont was not pleased with this disposition of his perquisites, and, as Fletcher had made some extravagant grants of land, he recommended that both the lease and the grants should be vacated. His recommendations were approved by the home government, and he was directed to have the Legislature act in the premises. This was done, and a vacating act passed in March, 1699, which was sent to the king for approval. The great landed proprietors and the church made a vigorous opposition, and by their agents, assisted by Fletcher, then in England, presented specious arguments against the act, and induced delay. So strong was the opposition, that the act was not finally approved until nine years later, on June 26, 1708.

Meantime Bellomont had died, and Lord Cornbury had been appointed governor. The noble lord was a staunch churchman, and sought to promote the interests of his church by all the means he could employ, some of which were questionable as to their Christian character. By his inspiration the Legislature of 1702 repealed the vacating act, by a law which was operative in the colony until vetoed by the crown. Although Bellomont had prohibited the use of the farm to the church after the vacating act, Cornbury restored its possession by a new lease, in May, 1702, to run during his term of office. The farm was not then a source of large income, having been sublet by the church for only £20 a year, but it was steadily advancing in value, even for farming purposes, and in 1704 it was sublet to George Ryers for £30 annually.

The vacating and repealing acts were sleeping quietly in the pigeon-holes of the ministers, and it began to appear that they would sleep forever. The friends of the church were stimulated to take another step much more important to their future than a seven years' lease, or a lease for any definite time—they applied for a patent.

Their petition was favorably considered, and on July 5, 1705, the attorney-general was directed to prepare a patent to the "Rector and Inhabitants in Communion with the Church of England for the Queen's farm and the lot of ground near the church known as the Queen's garden," which passed the seals on November 23, 1705. It reserved to the queen a quit-rent of three shillings a year. The grant was subsequently confirmed by the Legislature. All questions as to the farm now seemed to be settled in favor of the church. But there were other trials in store for her.

The English ministers at last resolved to act, and the bills sent over for approval were dragged from their hiding-places and laid upon their table. The repealing act was vetoed, and the vacating act approved. Here was a new dilemma, and for a time, at least, it was believed that the church had lost her hold on the farm. Lord Lovelace, who succeeded Cornbury, and, after his death, Lieutenant-Governor Ingoldesby, seem to have had possession. When Governor Robert Hunter arrived, in 1710, the church again petitioned to him for the farm, and he gave them the use of it for his term of office only. In November, 1715, the rector wrote to a friend in London, urging him to appeal to the bishop to have the affair of the farm adjusted before a new governor came. He said that the property at present was of small account, yielding only £30 per annum, but that in a few years it would be much more considerable; "it deserves the utmost efforts to secure it for the church, which may be easily effected at present, but hereafter not." Through the representations of the bishop and other friends, the government withdrew its opposition, and Trinity was allowed to remain in quiet possession. She did not even pay the quit-rent of three shillings a year, for when an attempt was made to collect

it, as from other parties, she sent a petition to the queen praying that the proceedings might be stopped, and this was granted in 1714. Subsequently, however, though at long intervals (1738, 1750, 1768, 1786), the rent was paid in full, and in 1786 the quit-rents were commuted by the payment of a fixed sum to the State.

Trinity remained in undisturbed possession of the farm until about 1746, when Jacob Brower, a descendant of the Cornelius Bogardus who had not joined in the deed to Lovelace, took forcible possession of a portion, it then having been leased to Adam Vandenburgh. Brower was evicted, and Vandenburgh was put again into possession. In 1749 Cornelius Brower began an action of ejectment against Trinity Church for the recovery of the farm, but after two years he was nonsuited. His attorney was William Smith, the father of the historian, and there is some reason to believe that Brower was incited to his actions by parties who had no interest in the matter, except jealousy of the growing wealth and power of the Episcopal Church.[1] At all events, Brower, with Smith's help, began another action for ejectment in 1757, which was tried before the Supreme Court of the province, on October 24, 1760, by a struck jury, and on a view; and a general verdict was found for the church. The case was tried before Judge David Jones, all the other judges being members of the church corporation, and therefore interested in the event.

In 1767, Cornelius Bogardus, a great-grandson of the Cornelius whose share in his mother's estate had not been extinguished by the Lovelace deed, sold one-sixth of his eighth share in the dominie's farm to Isaac Teller, a rela-

[1] Judge Thomas Jones, in his History of New York, vol. i., pp. 1–10, charges William Livingston, William Smith, Jr., and John Morin Scott, all Presbyterians, who were Brower's counsel, with getting up this suit for their own purposes.

tive, who agreed to prosecute for the recovery of the whole eighth, bearing his own expenses.[1] What came of this suit I have been unable to learn.

The church was burned in the great fire that devastated New York soon after it was occupied by the British, in 1776. At the close of the Revolution, in January, 1784, the Committee of Safety of New York removed the old civil wardens and vestry of the church, on the plea that they were inimical to the liberties of the State, and vested the real and personal estate of the corporation in James Duane and eight other persons until further legal provision should be made. Such provision was made by an act passed by the Legislature in April, 1784. Taking advantage of the general confusion, the relaxation of civil authority, and the popular enmity against the church, Cornelius Bogardus (probably the same who sold a sixth of his patent to Teller) effected a lodgment upon a portion of the farm which was at the moment neither city nor country, where lands were waste and where the enclosures had been partly destroyed during the war. He took possession of a small house on the farm (which was taken by the city in 1790 for the purpose of widening Chambers Street), which had just been vacated by a tenant of the church. He also similarly put his son John and his brother Lewis into possession of small wooden houses on the outskirts of the farm, one of which, situated on what was afterward St. John Square, was known as the *possession house*, and was enclosed with a substantial fence. The church, on the advice of two of the best lawyers in the city —Morgan Lewis and Aaron Burr—caused the fence to be destroyed in the night, when Bogardus was off his guard. Bogardus retaliated on the fence built by the church, and

[1] This deed is dated January 28, 1767, and is recorded in the Book of Deeds, No. 18, p. 133, in the office of the Secretary of State, Albany.

there were quarrels and fights, which did not always terminate without bloodshed. Cornelius Bogardus was duly evicted by the courts, and left New York in 1786. It is alleged that he was bought off by the church for £700. The various intrusions of his son John after that date did not have even a color or claim of right. He gained an entry by taking leases from persons who held under the church.

The example, however, was contagious, and other persons squatted on the farm, under the pretence of being heirs. A Mrs. Broad settled on a piece of ground near North Moore Street, called *The Fort*, which was surrounded by a breastwork and trench, and drove away the people who came to take earth from the banks of the fort by throwing boiling water on them. A certain William Malcolm, who also claimed to be an heir, was evicted in 1786. One of his descendants subsequently began a suit by writ of right for some land near Chambers Street. This was tried, in 1807, before Justice Tompkins, and decided in favor of the church.[1]

The church had now another interval of peaceful possession, but in 1830 John Bogardus, just mentioned, then an old man, brought suit in chancery for the recovery of one-thirtieth of the farm, together with his proportionate share of all back rents and profits. He died in 1833, and Nathaniel Bogardus was substituted as complainant. The theory of Bogardus contradicted itself. On the strength of the signature of Cornelius Bogardus being wanting to the deed to Governor Lovelace, it was claimed that the church was a tenant in common with him and his heirs. There being five heirs of Cornelius Bogardus, the complainant might on this principle have asked for one-for-

[1] James Jackson, *ex dem.* Richard M. Malcolm and others, against Martin Bromeling.

tieth, or one-fifth of one-eighth share; but he claimed to be also one of the heirs of Jans Roelof and Jonas Bogardus, two sons of Anneke Jans, who had died intestate and without issue, although they had joined in the deed to Lovelace.

John Bogardus had able lawyers, but little money, without which not much could be accomplished against a corporation controlling millions. Money must be had by some means, so his lawyers said, and some device must be resorted to for its procurement. Concealing the fact that the suit had been commenced for the recovery of only a part of the property, which, if successful, would inure to the benefit of only a few of Anneke's descendants, they sent out agents and issued circulars calling upon all her heirs to contribute toward the expense of the suit, as though all were equally interested. According to their representations, there could be little or no question but that the trial would result in their favor, and there would be millions to divide, making them all rich. The stratagem was successful—pockets were opened. One lady even sold her grandmother's silver teaspoons in order to contribute to the fund. Money was procured sufficient to satisfy the lawyers, and the suit went on from year to year, from court to court, "dragging its slow length along." When the money was short the suit stopped for a time, and it was not until 1847 that judgment was finally given for the church. Many old documents had been produced, and the evidence had been heard of many old and well-known residents, whose recollections went to times before the Revolution. Vice-Chancellor Sandford, in delivering his decision, said:

"Now that I have been enabled to examine it carefully, and with due reflection, I feel bound to say that a plainer case has never been presented to me as a judge. Were it

not for the uncommon magnitude of the claim, the apparent sincerity and zeal of the counsel who support it, and, in fact (of which I have been oftentimes admonished, by personal applications on their behalf), that the descendants of Anneke Jans, at this day, are hundreds, if not thousands, in number, I should not have deemed it necessary to deliver a written judgment on deciding the cause.

"A hearty dislike to clothing any eleemosynary institution with either great power or extensive patronage, and a settled conviction that the possession by a single religious corporation of such overgrown estates as the one in controversy, and the analogous instance of the Collegiate Dutch Church, is pernicious to the cause of Christianity, have disposed me to give an earnest scrutiny to the defence in this case; as, in the instance of the Dutch Church, they prompted me, in my capacity of counsel, to more zealous efforts to overthrow their title to the lands devised by Jan Haberdinck. But the law on these claims is well settled, and it must be sustained in favor of religious corporations as well as private individuals. Indeed, it would be monstrous, if, after a possession, such as has been proved in this case, for a period of nearly a century and a half, open, notorious, and within sight of the temple of justice, the successive claimants, save one, being men of full age, and the courts open to them all the time (except for seven years of war and revolution), the title to lands were to be litigated successfully upon a claim which has been suspended for five generations. Few titles in this country would be secure under such an administration of the law; and its adoption would lead to scenes of fraud, corruption, foul justice, and legal rapine far worse in their consequences upon the peace, good order, and happiness of society than external war or domestic insurrection.

"The bill must be dismissed with costs."[1]

---

[1] Sandford's Chancery Reports, vol. iv., pp. 633-672. The report of this case gives a very good history of the various preceding attacks on the title. See also 4 Paige, 178, and 15 Wendell, 111, and the note of Bishop De Lancey in Thomas Jones' History of New York, vol. i., pp. 402-413.

While the preceding suit was going on, one Jonas Humbert, claiming to be an heir of old Anneke, began, in 1834, a suit in chancery, maintaining that the Dominie's Bouwery, *i.e.*, the farm of sixty-two acres left by Anneke Jans, had never properly formed part of the Queen's Farm, and had therefore never been included in the grant to the church, and that the sole real basis of any claim of the church was the alleged purchase, in 1785, of the rights of Cornelius Bogardus for £700, by which it had come to be tenant in common with the heirs. This case, after being decided in favor of the church, was appealed to the chancellor, and subsequently to the Court of Errors, where the judgment was finally affirmed in 1840.[1]

Nine other suits were begun in 1847, in the Supreme Court, by another Cornelius Brower, an "heir," in which the plaintiff was nonsuited.

One Kiersted brought an action for the same purpose, in 1851, in the Court of Common Pleas, and another, in 1852, in the Supreme Court. The former suit was abandoned; the latter was decided, in 1856, against the plaintiff.

The heirs, full of Dutch blood and Dutch obstinacy, were not yet satisfied. Legal technicalities might defeat their attempts to get "their own" again, but, at all events, the church had no right to it. The grant of Lord Cornbury being, in their belief, void, all that had then belonged to the crown now belonged to the State, and those pleas which had been so effectual against them could not hold against the People. Once the title of Trinity disproved, there would be time enough to settle the boundaries between the Queen's Farm, which would remain to the State, and the Dominie's Bouwery, which would come to them.

---

[1] See Paige's Reports, vol. vii., pp. 195–198, and Wendell's Reports, vol. xxiv., pp. 587–640.

This was not the first time that such an attempt had been made. When Trinity Church was reorganized by the Legislature, in 1784, numerous petitions were presented on the subject, and among them one from the descendants of Anneke Jans. On November 22, 1784, a committee was appointed by the House to examine the laws and records, and to report on the crown lands—the King's Farm and Garden, and all other lands conceived to belong to the State. On February 17, 1785, the committee reported in favor of a bill authorizing the attorney-general to proceed, without delay, to recover the King's Farm and Garden and establish the People's claim. A petition was received from Trinity remonstrating against this action, and, although the bill was passed by the House, it never became a law.

The question apparently arose again in 1836, for the commissioners of the land office in that year signed an opinion and a statement of facts that Trinity had "a valid, subsisting, and absolute title to the lands referred to."

In 1854, however, the "heirs" began again, and Mr. Rutger B. Miller, in behalf of himself and his associates, succeeded in making an arrangement with the commissioners of the land office, by which the attorney-general was directed to bring a suit against the church, provided that the State should be indemnified against any expense, and that evidence should be first presented showing the title of the State. Miller's offer was to carry on the suit at his own expense, on condition that one-quarter of the estate recovered should be given to him. After some hesitations the suit was begun, but the bargain had to be abandoned, as it was shown to be contrary to the constitution, which appropriates all escheated estates to the Common School Fund. It took the form of an action of ejectment to recover a lot of land on Murray Street; and, as this did

not form part of the Anneke Jans farm, there was no embarrassment of the decision of the point of law by outside matters. The case was tried in 1859, and the people were nonsuited. This judgment was affirmed at the General Term, and again, in 1860, by the Court of Appeals, the court of highest resort.[1]

Perhaps the most amusing attempt to get possession of the Trinity Church property, though not connected directly with the heirs, was the suit brought in 1871, in the Superior Court of New York, by Rev. David Groesbeeck, against Mr. William E. Dunscomb and the Rev. Morgan Dix. Mr. Groesbeeck demanded that a receiver should be appointed to take charge of the property of the church, on the grounds that he is a successor of the original corporators (how he does not show); that the "trust estate" has been diverted from the purposes of the founders, which were "to prevent the increase of vice and immorality in the city of New York, and not merely to support the parasites of any sect;" "that the Jewish rabbi and his congregation contributed funds to build the original parish church of Trinity;" that "he is of the same faith, baptism, and communion as the wardens and vestrymen of Trinity on February 4, 1714;" that "he is a Protestant, a Trinitarian, and a believer in the doctrines of the Christian communion, as established by the synod or ecumenical council (!) of Dort;" "that he has taken the sacrament in a chapel of Trinity;" that "he is, and long has been, ready, willing, and anxious, being a Protestant minister of the gospel, and without a church edifice, to preach in said parish church;" that the property of the church is being wasted "in seeking to acquire and establish 'a political weight,' and boasting thereof, in having threatened the Legislature

[1] Smith's Reports of the Court of Appeals, vol. viii., pp. 44–67.

of the State with contempt, in having neglected to provide for the poor of the parish, while pampering the pride of the worldly-minded and laying up treasures on earth in bonds and mortgages," and in preaching blasphemies and heresies; that stipends and salaries are paid for preaching such blasphemies; that the communion of Roman Catholics and Protestants is denied, and the services of the Greek Church admitted; that the establishment of "houses of able-bodied young women" is advocated; that vice and immorality have been allowed to increase; and that the defendants refuse to return the farm to the heirs of Anneke Jans.

The defendants demurred to this complaint, on the ground that there was a defect of parties in the omission of Trinity Church, and that there were no facts stated sufficient to constitute a cause of action. The demurrer was very naturally allowed, and as the judge was "satisfied that the plaintiff's notions as to his rights and remedies were wild, visionary, and absurd," he thought he did "an act of great kindness to him" in dismissing the complaint altogether, and not allowing him to amend it. He thought too that the costs and allowances should be made large enough to deter men from that kind of litigation.[1]

It might naturally be supposed that all legal remedies had been exhausted. But no. In 1877 a certain Rynear Van Giessen, claiming to be a descendant (of the seventh generation) of Anneke Jans, presented to the surrogate of Albany County a family Bible and a pair of gold earrings, which it was asserted had belonged to Anneke Jans, and applied for the appointment of administrators of her estate. This application was refused by the surrogate. The question was argued on appeal before the General

[1] Howard's Practice Reports, vol. xli., pp. 302-345.

Term of the Supreme Court, in 1879, and finally before the Court of Appeals, in 1881, when the decision of the surrogate was fully sustained.[1]

In colonial times the Legislature enacted laws to quiet titles to lands. It may come to pass that our State Legislature will have to act in this case, and make it a misdemeanor for anyone to attempt to disturb the church in her possession of Anneke's farm or any part thereof.

Suppose that the heirs should gain possession, of what particular advantage would it be to them? Suppose that the heirs had increased in the same ratio as in the first two generations, and that the sixty-two acres of land, with their buildings, were worth sixty million dollars—a liberal estimate, after deducting for streets—they would have about two hundred dollars each! The heirs, in their excitement (1830–1847), did not sit down and figure out this problem, but rushed up and down through the State, searching church and municipal records for a pedigree, and ready to sell their grandmothers' spoons to obtain the wherewithal to contribute to the funds, lest they should be left out when the grand division should be made!

In view of the repeated decisions of the highest judicial tribunals, and of their publicity, any lawyer who can now advise or encourage the descendants of Anneke Jans to waste their money in any proceedings to recover this property must be considered as playing on the ignorance of simple people, and as guilty of conscious fraud, and of an attempt to obtain money under false pretences.

As one of the heirs, I rejoice that the property is in the possession of a church, which has used and will use its in-

---

[1] See New York Reports, vol. lxxxiii. (Court of Appeals, Sickels), pp. 348–358, Rynear Van-Giessen vs. Samuel Bridgford. Also, 18 Hun, 80.

come to build churches and colleges[1] for Christian and educational purposes, and not in the hands of a corporation, which would use it to swell individual and private fortunes. It is to be hoped that it will remain in the hands of the present owners so long as they use it wisely. I am the more free to express such a wish, as I personally do not belong to the Episcopal Church.

NICHOLAS SCHUYLER (12) was educated a physician, and in the first year of the Revolutionary War was on the staff of the medical director of the Northern Department, Dr. Stringer. He was afterward appointed surgeon of Colonel Moses Hazen's regiment, with which he served to the close of the war.

After his marriage to Shinah Simons, member of a prominent Jewish family of Philadelphia, on August 13, 1782, he returned to his home at Stillwater, and engaged in the practice of his profession. When the county of Rensselaer was organized, he was appointed its first clerk, on February 18, 1791. He then removed to Troy, the county-seat, and entered upon the duties of his office, although he did not wholly give up the practice of medicine; he was clerk of the county fifteen consecutive years. Having no children, he was indifferent to the acquisition of an estate, and cared only to accumulate sufficient to carry himself safely through the journey of life.

For his services in the war, the State assigned to him four lots of land of five hundred acres each, three of which were located in Onondaga County and one in Cayuga. One of the lots was reclaimed by the State as part of the saline district, but was not replaced by another. He was

[1] Columbia College was founded on the avails of a lottery, but her great wealth is derived from a liberal slice of the King's Farm, bestowed by Trinity Church, by a deed dated May 15, 1755.

not worried, and made no claim. It was evident to the most short-sighted, that lands situated as were his military lots would soon become valuable for farming purposes, as emigration from the Eastern States to the unoccupied lands of New York was very large; but he did not see it, or, if he did, it made little impression on him, for he sold his lands for a nominal consideration.

His wife inherited a large tract of land lying in one of the Southern States, which in a few years would have been a fortune to him, but he never troubled himself about it, and it passed out of his possession. Toward the close of life, having lost his wife and being lonely, he removed, with his adopted daughter (Henrietta Schuyler (26)),to the residence of his brother-in-law, Major James Van Rensselaer, at Crystal Hill, three miles south of Albany on the river. There, in congenial society, he passed the last few years of his life happy and contented.

SAMUEL SCHUYLER (13), because he had been a clerk in the Commissary Department, was called captain by courtesy. He never married, and lived for the most part with his relatives, now with one, and now with another. For a few years he was the guest of my father, when I was a boy. He was very short-sighted, and quite irascible in temper. His young nephews soon found out his weaknesses, and would often provoke him with their practical jokes and harmless tricks, for which, when caught, their backs were made to smart; but as soon as he had vindicated himself the tempest subsided, and he was all kindness and generosity. Politically he was a Democrat, the only one in his family; he held to the faith so firmly, that no amount of argument or ridicule could shake his hold. Although his sight was very defective, his chief enjoyment was in reading. The Bible and Edwards' "History of Redemption" were his favorite books. On bright,

sunny days of winter he would sit by the hour near a window, with one of those books before his face and the other by his side. He had a long nose, which appeared the longer by the loss of teeth, and, when the light began to fade, it was used as a pointer to trace the printed lines. Poor Uncle Sammy! Often in these latter years I think of thee! Thy years, though many, were not fortunate. Thy life was one of faith, and when thou wast summoned thou wast ready! Thou hast gone to thy rest, and art no longer troubled by wicked boys!

ELSIE SCHUYLER (14) was married to her first husband, Dr. Bogart, in June, 1783. After a brief pleasure trip, she returned to her father's at Stillwater, to make her final preparations for a permanent residence with her husband in New York. Her mother embraced the opportunity to visit, with her younger children, some relatives living at a distance, and she was left alone with the servants to care for the house. While so employed she received a call from some distinguished visitors, who sought entertainment for the night. General Washington, in company with Governor Clinton, left the encampment of the army at Newburgh about the middle of July, for the purpose of inspecting the battle-fields of Saratoga and the Mohawk Valley. At Albany he was joined by General Schuyler, and on horseback the company proceeded on the journey. On their arrival at Stillwater, General Schuyler conducted them to the residence of Harmanus Schuyler to spend the night. Their visit was unexpected, but Elsie was self-possessed, and did not allow herself to be disconcerted, and received them with graceful courtesy; she was dignified in manner, and possessed more than ordinary beauty of person. She appreciated the honor of having Washington for her guest, but made no effort at display; she gave him the simple and substantial fare of her father's house,

and lodged him in a clean and comfortable room. After breakfast the next morning, as her guests were about to leave, Washington, in his habitually grave and courteous manner, took her hand and raised it to his lips. It was a kiss never to be forgotten. Nearly fifty years afterward, when languishing in her last illness, her youngest nephew, who had never before seen her, called to pay his respects. When taking leave, he approached her bedside, and was about to kiss her on her lips, she held up her hand, and, said, "Not my lips, George, but my hand, once kissed by Washington."[1]

DIRCK SCHUYLER (15) was named for his great-grandfather, Dirck Ten Broeck. In time the name was changed to Derick. In the allotment of lands to the Revolutionary soldiers by the State of New York, he drew two lots of five hundred acres each, both lying in the present town of Ithaca. One was sold at a low price; the other, after April, 1811, was the homestead of my father. Derick did not marry, but died a bachelor in the forty-ninth year of his age.

JOHN H. SCHUYLER (16), the H. standing for Harmanus, to distinguish him from other Johns, received a fair education in the best English schools of Albany, and was prepared with reference to the mercantile business. On leaving school, instead of entering a counting-house, as was intended, he became the private secretary of John Barker Church, with whom he spent several years. As a relative of Mrs. Church, he was received into the family, and accorded more privileges than were usually granted to young men of that position. Mr. Church resided in New York, but his business frequently called him to Philadelphia and Boston, usually accompanied by his

[1] Some years since this anecdote appeared in the Magazine of American History, over the signature of a well-known author, without credit to the original source. I now reclaim my own.

secretary. Schuyler soon became accustomed to the best English society in the country, and to its usages. Unlike most young men of Dutch descent in his time, he spoke English without an accent, and easily passed, when occasion offered, for a genuine Yankee.

After some years of such employment, he returned to Stillwater, and, without experience or training, engaged in mercantile pursuits. For a time he prospered, but his want of commercial knowledge was a serious hindrance to his ultimate success. He finally gave up the shop, and engaged in farming. Fortune was not propitious, and in the spring of 1811 he removed, with all his family, to the present town of Ithaca, N. Y. He settled on Lot No. 57, containing five hundred acres, and situated two and a half miles west from the village. It was one of the military lots assigned to his brother Derick. The country was new and sparsely settled; it was almost a wilderness. For the want of good roads, and the facilities of travel, it was farther removed from the old settlements on the Hudson than are Dakota and Wyoming at the present time. The family, so far removed from their old friends, died out of their remembrance, except of those nearly related. We have seen how Philip, the great-grandfather of John H. Schuyler, was supposed to have left no posterity. So now, the line was again believed to have become extinct. Mrs. Cochrane, the youngest daughter of General Schuyler, writing to a friend from Oswego, on November 12, 1845, said: "I remember Mr. Harmanus Schuyler, a distant relative, who had been sheriff of Albany County many years before I saw him, and that is fifty years ago; not one of his children, and he had many survive." She was mistaken, poor lady, for John, the fourth son, was still living, surrounded by eight living sons and three daughters, with numerous grandchildren.

As Harmanus Schuyler (10) was the only one of his brothers to continue the direct line, so was John the only one of his six sons to hand down the name and pedigree of his branch of the Schuyler family. There seems little danger now that it will be reduced to such extremities. As a farmer John was a failure. He had been accustomed all his life, up to his removal to Ithaca, to the unpaid labor of slaves; he never afterward could adapt himself to circumstances, and earn his bread by the sweat of his brow. In a few years the title to his farm was questioned by a land speculator, who had bought the soldier's right from an agent whose power of attorney had been revoked, with a full knowledge of the fact. But he got his fraudulent title on record first, and by this means succeeded in his suit of ejectment. Several years afterward the case was again taken into the courts by Schuyler's son Philip (30), and the former verdict reversed. The farm came back into the family, and its original occupant spent his last years on the homestead. John H. Schuyler married successively Hendrika and Annatje Fort.

The Fort Family.

The first trustworthy information relating to the ancestor of the Forts is found in a deed for a farm at Canastagione, situated on the north bank of the Mohawk in the southeast corner of the present town of Clifton Park, Saratoga County. It is dated June 10, 1684, and was given by the administrators of Teunis Wielemse Boots, deceased, to Jean Forte, alias Liberté, "for all the land and real estate which the said Boots possessed in his lifetime at that place, together with house, barn, stacks, orchard, and lots, which said land has now been inhabited by the said Liberté for three years, being satisfied with it, as if he owned

it hitherto."[1] Why the *alias* I am unable to explain. He was a Frenchman, and may have fled from the military despotism of Canada, and, having gained his liberty, he may have adopted the word as one of his names. It was one of the royal ordinances for the government of Canada, that Protestants should not be permitted to live on its soil. When any, in their ignorance of the law, found their way thither, they were required to conform to the established Catholic religion, or leave the country. Some did conform for the time being, to avoid greater evils, but embraced a favorable opportunity to remove to other parts. Before 1700 there were several such men in Albany and its vicinity. Usually they married in the families of the community, and became prosperous citizens.

There may have been other reasons why Jean Fort adopted the alias. It was not uncommon in those days to have two surnames, or for members of the same family to take different names. He may have come to this country through Holland, as did many of his countrymen and men of other nationalities. His name is variously written in the documents, not by himself, as Le Fort, La Fort, de Fort, but never without the alias Liberté. He or his fam-

[1] A singular, and in some respects an amusing, mistake has been made as to the first American ancestor of the Forts. Professor Pearson, in his Genealogy of the First Settlers of Albany, introduces Jan Fort Orangien, who married Marie Grande, in New Amsterdam, November 24, 1641, as the first of the family, of whom Jan Fort, alias Liberté, is supposed to be a son. A gentleman of New York, whose family had intermarried with the Forts, prepared a genealogical chart, on which Jan Fort Orangien appears as the first ancestor of that kindred family. Had these authors been better acquainted with the provincial records, Jan Fort Orangien would not have occupied the position assigned him. He was a native African, and after serving the West India Company faithfully for nineteen years, was manumitted, with others, on February 25, 1644, by Director Kieft. He probably had served the Company at Fort Orange (Albany) long enough to get his name. The Forts are not a mixed race; they have a very fair complexion.

ily may have been in the province prior to the date named in the deed for the farm. Jean de Frote (Forte?) joined the Dutch Church in New York, on October 7, 1663, after which the name does not again appear in the church records or elsewhere. Jacob (one of the most usual names in the Fort family) Le Fort was one of the creditors of Joshua Green, in New Amsterdam, in August, 1668. Nothing more is known of him. Marcus Lafort applied for letters of naturalization in May, 1693. It is not known whether they were granted, or what became of him. Bartholomew La Fourt, an alien, had his goods seized by the collector of customs, in 1701. Whether he procured the release of his property, and remained in the country, or returned to the place whence he came, is not known.

The wife of Jean Fort was Margriet Rinckhout, but the date and place of their marriage are unknown. The brothers Daniel and Jan Rinckhout were in Albany about 1653. Daniel died in 1662, at the age of thirty-two years, and in his will left his house and all other property to his brother Jan, except twenty-five guilders to a brother in Pomeren, Holland. He could not have had a family, or he would have mentioned them in the will. Jan Rinckhout, a baker by trade, had a family of two children at least—a daughter Gertrude, married to Simon Groot, of Schenectady; and a son Juriaen, residing in New York in 1703. Jan Rinckhout bought a farm at Schenectady, and in 1670 his wife let his bakery in Albany to Antony Lespinard, the ancestor of the New York Lispenards. Rinckhout became a recluse, living and dying alone in a hut on his farm. Jean Fort's wife may have been Jan Rinckhout's daughter, and yet, by comparing the dates, she was quite as likely to have been his sister, and married to Fort in Holland.

Jean Fort, alias Liberté, made his will on November 3,

1726, in which he names as children—Anna, Johannes, Abraham, Nicolas, Jacob, Mary, Daniel and Isaac. The last was baptized in the church at Albany in September 3, 1699. The will was proved in October 3, 1727.

The settlement at Canasingione, on the north bank of the Mohawk River, was somewhat distant from another of the same name on the south side, near Nisskayuna. It was made by seven farmers—Jean Fort, Jean Rosie, another Frenchman, often employed as an interpreter in the missions to Canada; Dirck Arentse Bratt, two brothers Jan and Reynier Quackenboss, and the brothers Jerrit Ryckse and Maas Ryckse Van Vranken. The farms were located on the interval along the river, each having about the same frontage; behind was an unbroken forest. The nearest neighbors were across the river, some three miles distant, and at Half Moon, on the same side, about five miles below. The settlers chose the wilderness, where they could hold their lands in fee, rather than settle on the manor of Rensselaerwyck under long or perpetual leases.

In 1705 Jean Fort sent a petition to the governor for some of the wild land back of his farm, but was not successful. Three years later the seven farmers joined in an arrangement to procure what Fort had individually sought in vain. They entered into an agreement with Colonel Peter Schuyler to procure for them a patent from the government for a tract of land one mile in depth lying back of their farms, for which they stipulated to pay him £50 on delivery of the patent. The instrument was signed by the several parties except Fort, whose wife signed her own name, "Margret ye wife of Jan Fort Liberté." The paper is still preserved uncancelled by one of the descendants of Schuyler. The patent was granted on April 20, 1708, and the next year the parties released to each other one-seventh of the whole.

The settlement, being on the borders of civilization, was not safe from the incursions of unfriendly Indians, and of their savage allies, the Canadian French. Gradually the Rosies, the Bratts, and the Quackenbosses withdrew to safer localities. The Forts and Van Vrankens tenaciously retained possession of their paternal acres. It is shown by a map of Albany and vicinity, published in 1851, that these families still maintained their ground, and were numerous in the country for miles around. The Forts early established a ferry across the river and opened a road direct to Albany. The ferry is known to-day as Fort's Ferry.

The homestead was not large enough to accommodate the six sons of the original proprietor. Two of them, Abraham and Isak, bought farms in Schaghticoke, and Jacob settled in Half Moon, on the borders of Stillwater. He paid for his farm £80, and a yearly quit-rent to Anthony Van Schaick of a "half skippel of wheat and sixpence currency."

GENEALOGICAL TABLE OF THE FORT FAMILY.

1. JEAN FORT, alias Liberté, and *Margriet Rinckhout.*
   2. ANNATJE.
   3. JOHANNES, m. *Rebecca Van Antwerpen.*
   4. ABRAHAM, m. *Anna Barber Clute.*
   5. NICHOLAS, m. *Maritje Van Antwerpen.*
   6. JACOB, d. May 17, 1760.
      m. 1, January 14, 1726, *Sara de Wandelier.*
      m. 2, *Maritje Oosterhout.*
   7. MARY, m. *Johannes Vedder.*
   8. DANIEL, m. *Gerritje Van den Bergh.*
   9. ISAK, m. 1, *Jacomyna (Joan) Viele.*
      m. 2, *Sara Viele.*

6. JACOB FORT and *Sara de Wandelier.*
   10. ELIZABETH, b. March 5, 1727.
       m. *Jacob J. Van Woert.*
   11. JOHANNES, b. October 22, 1728, d. s. p.

12. ABRAHAM, bp. February 3, 1731.
m. 1, November 18, 1752, *Sara Van Woert*, d. November 22, 1754.
m. 2, July 1, 1758, *Eva Bennewe*, d. September 4, 1799.
13. MARGARET, bp. March 24, 1734.
14. HARMAN, bp. January 8, 1737.
m. September 6, 1760, *Rebecca Van Woert*.
15. LEENDERT, bp. July 6, 1744, d. s. p.

12. ABRAHAM FORT and *Sara Van Woert*.
16. MARGARET, b. November 16, 1753, d. July 2, 1757.
17. A DAUGHTER, b. November 18, 1754, obt.

12. ABRAHAM FORT and *Eva Bennewe*.
18. SAARTJE (Sara), b. December 18, 1759.
m. *Wynant Van der Bergh*.
19. JACOB, b. May 22, 1763, d. October 20, 1839.
m. September 7, 1783, *Anna Vrooman*.
20. ANNATJE, b. June 30, 1767.
m. June 4, 1787, *Peter Van Ness*.

19. JACOB FORT and *Anna Vrooman*.
21. JENNY, b. December 21, 1784, obt.
22. JANE, b. January 18, 1797.
m. *Henry P. Van Rensselaer*, of Claverack.
23. ABRAHAM, b. January 2, 1799.
m. *Abby Rogers*, d. s. p. in Virginia.
24. EVELINE, b. April 22, 1801.
m. *Douw Van Vechten*.

14. HARMAN FORT and *Rebecca Van Woert*.
25. HENDRIKA, b. June 6, 1761.
m. June 6, 1786, *John H. Schuyler*.
26. SARA, b. January 11, 1763.
m. *Dr. Reuben Schuyler*, of the Flatts.
27. JACOB, b. July 22, 1764, d. s. p. October 14, 1804.
28. MARITJE, b. May 3, 1766, obt.
29. MARGRETA, b. June 24, 1768, d. y.
30. ANNATJE, b. March 29, 1770.
m. June 10, 1800, *John H. Schuyler*.
31. MARITJE, b. December 18, 1771, obt.

An old Dutch Bible in good preservation, originally belonging to Jacob Fort (6) and now in possession of John Van Rensselaer, of Cambridge, N. Y., one of his descend-

ants, contains many valuable records, on which I have freely drawn in the preceding pedigree. It also contains a paper written in 1835, by Mrs. Abby Rogers Fort, giving the genealogy of the Fort family. It states that "the family was originally French, and the true name Le Forte. They emigrated to Holland at the time of the persecution of the Huguenots, and Jacob Le Forte emigrated from thence to this country about the beginning of the eighteenth century. He had six sons, John, Nicholas, Daniel, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob." The writer had taken some pains, by correspondence and personal interviews with members of the family, to get at facts. She did not succeed in getting the true name of the first American ancestor, but she gave the names of his sons correctly. Annatje Fort (30), when speaking of her family, always said that the name was Le Fort, of French origin, and that the family came through Holland to this country.

The Dutch Bible of Harman Fort (14), printed in 1736, by Pieter and Jacob Kuer, Dordrecht, is now in my possession. It is a thick folio volume bound in boards covered with tooled leather, and finished with eight brass corner-pieces and two clasps. Besides the text in two columns to the page, there are marginal references and voluminous foot-notes. It contains maps of Asia Minor, of Egypt, of the countries traversed by the children of Israel in their forty years' wanderings, of the Holy Land, of the countries visited by the Apostles in their missionary tours, and a plan of Jerusalem with the front elevation of Solomon's Temple. There were originally at least twenty-two pages of plates, each containing six illustrations, three by three and a half inches, engraved by D. Jonkman; but having passed through many hands, and amused several generations of children, it now contains only eleven plates, or sixty-six distinct pictures, which are quaint and

amusing. The family records once within the covers are sadly mutilated, and many of them lost. When it came to my hands, a few years since, more than half the leaves were loose and misplaced, and the title-page to the Old Testament missing. I put it in the hands of a careful binder, who restored it to its original condition, preserving all the old binding. With careful usage it may go down the ages. From the records in these two old Bibles I have mainly prepared the Fort pedigree.

It will be noticed that the direct line of Jean Fort's fourth son, Jacob, is extinct. The last of the name died in Virginia during the civil war. He was engaged in a large and profitable business when the war commenced. Not wishing to lose his all, he remained, but did not join the rebel ranks. Jacob (27), the only son of Harman Fort, was the first sheriff of Saratoga County, 1791–93. (The name is erroneously printed *Ford* in the civil list.) He died at the age of forty years, and was never married.

In the old French and Indian war of 1744–48, the people on the borders were exposed to great dangers and hardships. The almost uninterrupted peace of fifty years, since 1697, had made them careless and indifferent as to their defences. The old fort at Canastagione had rotted down and disappeared. The French had erected Fort St. Frederick at Crown Point, which gave them command of the Lakes Champlain and George and of the upper Hudson. The English, in consequence of the chronic quarrels between the governors and the Legislature, neglected to fortify any point on the borders to hold the French in check, but left the settlements north of Albany undefended and open to the incursions of the enemy. Suddenly the peace of Europe was broken, and all North America became involved in the horrors of a savage war. Scalping parties from Canada swooped down upon the defenceless

settlements of New York and New England, killing and capturing the terror-stricken inhabitants. The farmers of Canastagione were especially unfortunate.

In the year that Saratoga was destroyed, 1745, several persons were killed, and others carried to Canada to suffer a long imprisonment. Three of Jean Fort's sons and two grandsons were among the unfortunates. Johannes (3) died in prison at Quebec, on December 7, 1746, and his brother Abraham (4) died in the same prison a year later. Jacob (6) fared better; he succeeded in regaining his liberty, and returned to his family, but nothing was heard of his son, whose fate was unknown. Simon, a son of Nicholas (5), was a mere boy when carried off. He was adopted by an Indian woman, one of the Mohawk proselytes, in place of her own son, killed on an expedition. After the war, in June, 1750, Governor Clinton sent commissioners into Canada to effect an exchange of prisoners. They could not procure Simon's release, although Captain Van Schaick offered the Indian mother six hundred francs for his ransom. She said that she was much attached to him, and regarded him as one of her own children, but if she were obliged, by the commands of the French governor, to give him up, her friends would follow them and cause them to feel her resentment. On appealing to him to leave the Indians and return to his family, he replied that he was attached to his new friends, and, having become a Catholic, he preferred to remain with them. In the following autumn his father was more successful, and procured his release at an expense of £50. Simon returned home, and twelve years later married a daughter of his neighbor, Van Vranken.

Harman Fort (14) was a merchant in Waterford, N. Y., in the full tide of a successful business when he died, at a comparatively early age. His wife had died a few years

before. Their children were left to the care of relatives. Only one of them, Annatje, lived to old age: she died in Ithaca, N. Y., January 12, 1851, nearly eighty-one years old.

MARIA SCHUYLER (19), "Aunt Polly," as she was familiarly called, lost her first husband within a few years after marriage. Her second marriage was happy. Her husband had a pleasant place south of the city of Hudson, the land running down to the river. She lived to enjoy her surroundings only a few years, and died in giving life to another.

PHILIP SCHUYLER (20), the youngest of the family, succeeded to his father's property and business. He married, on May 22, 1797, Mary, daughter of Beriah Palmer, who came with a church colony from Canaan, Conn., 1762, and made a settlement at Stillwater. For more than a hundred years the people of Connecticut had made repeated efforts to gain a foothold in the beautiful valley of the Hudson. At last it was effected. Were the members of this colony the descendants of those who, a hundred years before, negotiated with the Mohawks for the purchase of Half Moon, and failed because Philip Pieterse Schuyler and Goosen Gerritse Van Schaick were too quick for them?

I have been able to procure but little information relating to this member of the Schuyler family. His marriage and death are not recorded in the family Bible. These dates were furnished by a correspondent, who knew more about him than any living Schuyler. His death occurred in 1807, at the early age of thirty-six years. His wife did not long survive him. Their orphan children found a home with their mother's relatives. Two of them died at an early age. The youngest, Deborah, married and had two children, of whom I have been unable to gain any information.

HARMANUS SCHUYLER (21) and JACOB FORT SCHUYLER (22) both served in the War of 1812.

PHILIP CHURCH SCHUYLER (30) was a devoted adherent of the anti-slavery cause, removed to Kansas in 1855, and threw himself warmly into the struggle for making it a free State.

GEORGE WASHINGTON SCHUYLER (32) graduated at the University of the City of New York in 1837. He studied theology, but subsequently, in order to extricate a brother from difficulties, engaged in business at Ithaca, N. Y. He was elected treasurer of the State of New York on November 3, 1863, and served for two years. He was appointed superintendent of the Banking Department of the State of New York on January 3, 1866, and served until February 14, 1870. He was a member of the Assembly of 1875, and chairman of its Committee on Banks and Banking, when he obtained the passage of the General Savings Bank Law, and of a law for the protection of railway employees. He was subsequently, from January 1, 1876, to May, 1880, Auditor of the Canal Department, and was the first to propose making the canals free waterways by the abolition of tolls—a recommendation which was subsequently effected by a constitutional amendment. As auditor he was at the same time one of the New Capitol Commissioners. He has been a trustee of Cornell University from its foundation, and was its treasurer (without salary) from 1868 to October, 1874, when he resigned. He married, in 1839, Matilda Scribner. The genealogy of the Scribner family is inserted in the APPENDIX.

NICHOLAS BLEECKER, JR.

The husband of Catherine Angelica Schuyler (33) was descended from Jan Jansen Bleecker, the ancestor of the Bleecker families in America, who, in 1658, at the age of

seventeen, emigrated to Albany from Meppel, in the Netherlands. According to the custom of his native country, he had been taught a trade, which he abandoned soon after his arrival for the more profitable business of a merchant. He married Margarita, daughter of Rutger Jacobsen Van Schoenderwoert. In his business he was more than ordinarily successful, and soon became a leading man in his community. He made large purchases of lands, usually in company with others, which laid the foundations of considerable estates for the enjoyment of his posterity. He was one of the seven partners in the famous Saratoga Patent, some portions of which are yet in the possession of his descendants. He was named one of the first aldermen, and also "chamberlain," or treasurer, in the charter of Albany of 1686. In 1690 he was a member of Leisler's Assembly, and also represented his county in the Sixth and Seventh Assemblies, 1698–1700. He was recorder in 1696, and mayor in 1700. He died on November 21, 1732, in his ninety-second year, leaving a family of four sons and four daughters. Two of the sons, Nicholas and Henry, died unmarried. The other two and several of their descendants have held prominent positions in the professional and political circles of the province and State.

Johannes, the eldest son of Jan Jansen Bleecker, succeeded his father as mayor of Albany in 1701, having previously served one year as recorder. When eighteen years old he was on a trading expedition, in company with others, among the Indians of the Northwest, and was taken prisoner by the French. He was carried into Canada, but was released and returned to his home in the following year, 1687. He was acquainted with the Iroquois language, and was often employed in negotiations with the Five Nations. His son Nicholas married Margarita Rose-

boom, on April 10, 1728, and had several children, one of whom, Johannes, married Margarita Van Deusen. The latter had a family of two sons and three daughters. Margaret, the eldest daughter, married John Van Schaick. Harriet married Rev. John B. Romeyn, D.D., a prominent Presbyterian clergyman, of New York City. Elizabeth, the third daughter, married Rev. Jacob Brodhead, D.D., a distinguished minister in the Reformed (Dutch) Church, and father of the late J. Romeyn Brodhead, the historian, of New York. His son Henry married Mary Storm, and died in his thirtieth year, leaving one daughter. Nicholas Bleecker, Jr., the youngest of the family, married, first, Catharine Staats, daughter of an old Albany merchant; and, secondly, Catharine A. Schuyler. By his first wife he had one daughter, Margaret, who married Anson Bangs, lately deceased. She and her two sons, Bleecker and Anson, reside in Brooklyn, N. Y. Nicholas Bleecker, Jr., as he always wrote his name, was long connected with the old Bank of Albany, as one of its most faithful and trusted officers. He was deputy State treasurer from 1864 to 1867. As a man he was modest and unobtrusive; he had a high sense of honor, and in all the relations of life he bore himself without reproach. He died at an advanced age, like many of his family in preceding generations.

Rutger, youngest son of Jan Jansen Bleecker, was also the recorder of Albany, and mayor 1726–28. He married Catalina, daughter of David Schuyler and his wife, Catalyn Verplanck, and then the widow of Johannes Abeel, by whom he had four children. His only daughter, Margarita, married Edward Collins, only son of John Collins and his wife, Margarita Schuyler. His eldest son, John, married Elizabeth Staats. Their son Rutger married Catharine Elmendorf, and had Elizabeth, who married Peter Brinckerhoff, of New York; Maria, who married

Morris S. Miller, of Utica; Blandina, who married Hon. Charles E. Dudley; John R., who married, first, Eliza Bridgen, secondly, Mrs. Hetty Linn. Mr. Dudley was a State senator, mayor of Albany, and United States senator. Mrs. Dudley, in memory of her husband, founded the Dudley Observatory at Albany. John R. Bleecker had six children, the youngest of whom, Mary, married the Hon. Horatio Seymour, late governor of the State of New York.

Jacobus, or James, second son of Rutger Bleecker, the elder, married Abigail Lispenard, of New York, and had several children, one of whom, John J., married Ann Eliza Schuyler, the poetess, daughter of Brandt Schuyler, of New York.

ALEXANDER HAMILTON SCHUYLER (42) entered the army early in 1863, as did also his brother HENRY (43). Their regiment was sent to the front when General Grant entered on his Virginia campaign. Alexander was taken prisoner by the Confederates, and sent to the military prison at Andersonville, where he was attacked by fever, and died from want of proper medical treatment and ordinary care. His sufferings, as related to me by a companion, were terrible. I never think of them without a feeling of horror and indignation, that men claiming to be Christians should have permitted them. Henry was never heard of after the campaign began. It is supposed that he was killed in battle, but how and where he died is unknown. He lies among the unrecorded dead.

JOHN EDWIN SCHUYLER (63) was with the army under General Banks before Port Hudson and on the Red River. He had read for a physician, and was well qualified for an assistant in the hospital department. He remained with his regiment through the war, and at its close he was honorably discharged. He was frequently under fire, but escaped without a wound.

NICHOLAS TEN BROECK SCHUYLER (64) was born in Hudson, N. Y., but emigrated to Kansas in 1859, where he was engaged in farming when the civil war began. He enlisted in the Second Kansas Infantry Regiment, which shortly afterward participated in the battle of Wilson's Creek. He was wounded, but was enabled to leave the field with his regiment. After his discharge, in September, 1861, he enlisted, the following October, in the Second Kansas Cavalry, and was appointed orderly sergeant in Company H, in which position he remained until January, 1864. He was then appointed a captain in the Second Infantry Regiment of Arkansas Volunteers. A few months previously the commissioned officers of his regiment had united in a petition to have him appointed to a vacant captaincy in the Second United States Cavalry, but, having no friends at headquarters to push his claims, the appointment was given to another. He served through the war, and was honorably discharged, on August 8, 1865, at Clarksville, Ark.

One of his exploits is worthy of record. I give it in his own words, as contained in a letter years afterward, in answer to one of mine asking for information :

" I can only speak from memory, as all my papers relating to my campaigning were lost in the battle of Saline River, on the retreat of General Steele from Camden to Little Rock. General Blount was in command of the Union Army when the battle of Fort Wayne, Ind. Ter., was fought. He had five regiments of infantry, three of cavalry, and two batteries. It was his intention to surprise the enemy, and for this purpose we made a night march. At daybreak the general at the head of the cavalry, with Captain Rab's battery, advanced rapidly, and when near Fort Wayne formed the line of battle. Four companies of the Kansas cavalry, dismounted, Captain

Crawford commanding, were on the right, myself acting as left guide. We charged on the run, when a battery of four large guns opened on us. Without wavering we rushed on through brush and undergrowth, which partially concealed us. After traversing about four hundred yards, we reached the battery, and, mounting one of the guns, I called for assistance to run them to the rear. This was quickly rendered, and we secured the four guns with one caisson. It was hot work, the enemy's bullets flying thick around us, but it was finished before our officers comprehended the situation. The loss of the battery was a serious blow to the rebels, who, whites and Indians, were in large force under command of General Cooper. They soon retreated from their position, and left the field to the Union boys. In less than an hour after the command was given to charge, the battle was over, and the enemy flying in all directions. I had command of the captured guns while the officers of my regiment were trying to secure my promotion. They failed, and I surrendered them to another."

FREDERICK SCHUYLER (77) was one of the Kansas boys who volunteered at the commencement of the war. In the battle of Wilson's Creek he was shot in the chest, and left on the field by his company on their retreat, supposed to be mortally wounded. Captain Conrad, of the regular army, an old acquaintance, found him braced against a tree with the blood oozing from his wound; but, perceiving that he had more life and strength than was at first supposed, he assisted him to mount a mule, and conducted him within the Union lines. His wound was dressed, and after a few days he was carried in an ambulance to St. Louis, and placed in the hospital. When he had sufficiently recovered to perform some clerical work, he was employed in the office of the adjutant-general of the State.

He was a good penman, and, being a man of fine personal appearance and of gentlemanly manners, he quickly won his way to higher positions. He was first appointed assistant adjutant-general, with the rank of captain, and then lieutenant-colonel of a cavalry regiment. Subsequently he received the commission of inspector-general of the State troops in the field, with the rank of colonel. He retired from the service a year after the end of active hostilities, and returned to his home in Kansas. He died in Dakota on June 16, 1884.

HOWARD SCHUYLER (79) was a few months past sixteen years of age when he volunteered as a private soldier in a Kansas regiment, in May, 1861. Under General Lyon he was in the battles of Forsyth, July 25th; Dug Springs, August 1st, and Wilson's Creek, August 10, 1861. In the last he was slightly wounded in the hand, and his clothes were pierced with five bullets. His regiment, having served its term of six months, was disbanded, and he joined the Eleventh Kansas Infantry early the next year. His regiment was attached to the army of General Blount, then in Arkansas, and participated in the battles of Cane Hill, November, 1862, and of Prairie Grove, in the following December. In January, 1863, he was commissioned first lieutenant for bravery in the field, but declined the position, because of his youth and inexperience. In June following he was appointed second lieutenant in the artillery, which he also declined. Three months afterward he accepted the commission of captain in the Eleventh United States Colored Troops. His reasons for this, and its outcome, I will give in his own words. They reveal the high character of a man not yet twenty years old:

"These (colored) regiments at that time were in great disfavor and bad odor. I had faith in being able to make them good soldiers, and I certainly worked hard to that

end. Their officers were not treated at all times with the courtesy which I thought their past services entitled them to. Although I think I was not personally unpopular, yet, being young and hot-headed, the constantly recurring slights to the corps involved me in many unpleasant scenes. On this account I at last tendered my resignation; and, unwilling to desert the cause while there was need of every man, I was returned, at my own request, to the ranks of my old company. Not long after I was summoned before an examining board, on whose report the Secretary of War commissioned me first lieutenant in the Fourth Arkansas Cavalry. I may say to you that the board reported me for higher rank, but it was thought that I was not old enough. My company had no captain, and I was its commanding officer for several months, when I was considered of sufficient age to be made its captain. Such are the ways of the service!"

In May, 1865, he was recommended to a majority, but, the war coming to a close, he was mustered out of the service before he reached a higher grade or the twenty-second year of his age. He was offered a commission in the regular army, but declined to accept it. Soon after returning to his home he joined the Engineer Corps of the Kansas Pacific Railway, and assisted in its survey and construction until it was completed to Denver. He then aided in the organization of the Denver & Rio Grande Railway Company, and was made its secretary and treasurer. In its service he visited Europe, to examine the narrow gauge railways, and to interest foreign capitalists in its construction. He remained with the company three years, when he was appointed chief engineer of the North Pacific Coast Railway. After the completion of this road he was engaged in various other enterprises, in all of which he proved himself to be the right man in the right

place. When the Mexican Central Railroad Company was organized, he was appointed chief engineer and superintendent of construction, on a salary of ten thousand dollars a year. With his family he removed to the city of Mexico, and entered on his exacting duties. For two years he was thus employed, devoting all his energies to the work, and more hours of each day than his naturally strong constitution could endure. The climate of that country is not favorable to men born in the North, and this, with his incessant labor and exposures, soon undermined his health. He was obliged to quit his work, and in other countries seek to shake off the disease which had fastened on him. He came to the North, and, after spending a short time in his native village, he sailed for Europe. He placed himself in the care of skilled physicians, who did all that science and experience could suggest to save his life. It was in vain. He died at Davos-Platz, Switzerland, on December 3, 1883.

Many years ago Howard Schuyler related to me some incidents of his experience on the plains while employed in railroad engineering. Among them was one which, for the danger of the situation and the presence of mind, combined with courage, which extricated him from the toils of hostile Indians, has few parallels in history or romance. He promised to give me all the details in writing, but his busy life did not afford him the leisure. Happily, his brother James, who was one of his party, has supplied the omission. The following account was published in the *Evening Post*, of New York, on March 22, 1884:

"In a recent letter from ———, he informs me of your request that I should write out in detail the story of Howard's miraculous escape from the Indians, as I had narrated it to you. If it is a matter of interest to you, it will certainly be a pleasure to me so to do.

"In the month of June, 1869, when the grass and flowers on the plains of Kansas and Colorado were nearly knee-high, the result of unusually abundant rains, which left clear pools of water in all the little arroyos, a corps of Kansas Pacific engineers, under the leadership of Howard Schuyler, were engaged in making certain preliminary surveys in the vicinity of the terminal town of Phil Sheridan, near the border line of the two States. They had been out on a trip of several months in the direction of Denver, and had returned to the end of the track to begin the definite location, which we afterward carried through to Denver. At this time I had been with the party some two or three months, taking my novitiate in engineering, and was occupying the position of rodman. Prior to commencing the location, we were running some rapid trial lines north of Sheridan, and by June 19th were some fifteen or twenty miles out in a rolling country, where the heads of the Smoky Hill and Republican Forks of the Kansas River interlock. On the evening before our camp had been brought up to the end of our work, and we started out bright and early on this memorable Saturday morning, so that by 10 o'clock we were several miles away from camp. In all our work we had been accompanied by an escort of fifteen infantry soldiers, under the charge of a lieutenant, acting in the capacity of a camp-guard, who, while they were very useful in guarding our base of supplies, were of no protection to us in the field. Our party numbered thirteen all told, two of whom remained in camp as cook and teamster. The working party was therefore reduced to eleven, including Howard, whose custom it was to ride several miles ahead looking out the line and indicating it by building sod-mounds two or three feet high with a shovel. We followed from one mound to the next, measuring angles and distances and levelling the ground. Our

progress was almost as rapid as a man would walk at a moderate pace, and we were exceedingly vulnerable to attack, as we were all separated, strung out over a distance of a mile or more, while Howard was always out of sight and several miles ahead; but, having been out several months without seeing any Indian signs, we had no suspicion of danger, and did not dream there were any Indians in the country. We afterward knew that they had been watching us some days, and were simply waiting for the most favorable opportunity to make the attack, having evidently planned to kill Howard first, and then come back along the line, picking off the rest of the party one by one.

"In pursuance of this plan they lay in wait until they had cornered him in a trap, when they fired a shot, striking his horse in the hip; and, looking around, he saw a long line of the red-painted devils on three sides of him, while on the fourth, in the direction of his party, was half a mile or more of broken ground, cut up by deep, narrow ravines. It took but a moment to decide his line of action. Putting spurs to his horse, he turned to the only loophole of escape, and, to the surprise of the Indians, went leaping over the ravines, one after the other, at the risk of his life, but with the assurance that they could not follow him, as none of their ponies were equal to the work, and to keep up the pursuit they were obliged to make a long detour.

"Having once got clear of the broken ground, Howard, looking back, found himself well ahead, and was congratulating himself on so easy an escape, when he saw directly before him, springing out of the grass, a formidable array of Indians intercepting his flight; those pursuing in the rear closed up, and, almost before he could realize the situation, he found himself again entrapped, this time by a line of Indians that entirely encircled him, numbering about a hundred, as nearly as he could judge. They

rapidly narrowed the limits of the circle, and began taunting him with all manner of insults, and telling him of the tortures that awaited him, and of the slow roasting that they proposed to give him. For several minutes he sat on his horse trying to reconcile himself to the certainty that death was before him, but when the first struggle was over all trembling ceased, and with as true an aim as ever huntsman levelled at a deer, he drew up his rifle, and fired at the nearest man, killing him instantly. Earlier in the fight he had realized that he was more lightly armed than usual, having that morning left his belt, with a brace of pistols and a box of cartridges, in camp to be cleaned, taking only his Winchester carbine, carrying twelve shots. He now determined to sell his life as dearly as possible, and, counting every shot, to be sure that he saved one for himself as a last resort in case of capture, since death by his own hand was preferable to slow torture. Twice more he shot in quick succession with fatal effect, when he suddenly put spurs to his horse and dashed through their line. At this moment there was a general scramble and rush for him, some trying for him with their spears, others seizing his legs and striving to unhorse him. He succeeded in the twinkling of an eye in throwing them all off, and even killed a second man riding at his side, putting his gun against his (the Indian's) body and blazing away, the blood spurting over Howard's buckskin leggings, saddle, and horse. The instant he freed himself from them and got clear alone on open ground ahead of them, where they were not in danger of killing each other in shooting at him, they fired a volley of bullets and arrows at him. None of them hit him, and up to this moment he was entirely unharmed. Had his horse been equally fortunate, this would doubtless have ended the fight, as the horse was a fine, high-spirited animal, superior to any of the Indian

ponies. But the first shot, received at the beginning of hostilities, had cut a small artery, and from this the blood was pumping out a steady stream that, together with his violent exertions, was fast sapping his strength. The Indians, seeing this, were encouraged to continue in pursuit, and their leader, mounted on an American stage-horse (stolen the day before at a stage-station a few miles back, which they had burned, murdering all the inmates), succeeded so well in keeping pace with him, that Howard could almost feel the breath from the nostrils of his pursuer's horse. Thus they rode, nose to tail, for a mile or two, the Indian occupying the time in shooting at Howard. Three pistols, six-shooters, he emptied, and bullets flew around poor Howard on every side. Four more entered the poor horse, already so badly wounded, a bullet pierced Howard's clothes at his side, another cut the strap of his field-glass, which was lost; another cut off his spur, bruising the heel slightly, but not drawing blood; a fourth pierced the wooden breech of his rifle, as he carried it in his hand, alomst striking it from his grasp; others struck the saddle; and, in short, they seemed to strike everywhere but where they were aimed. All this time Howard was endeavoring to reach over his shoulder and get a shot at the Indian, but at every such movement the savage slipped under the belly of his horse and was out of sight, except a hand on the mane and heel on the back. Finally, all ammunition exhausted, the Indian resorted to his spear, and with the wooden handle gave Howard one or two severe raps on the head, trying to knock him out of his saddle, without avail; but at last Howard's horse, that had been tottering shakily from loss of blood, fell on his knees, and the Indian rushed up to end the contest. At that instant the horse struggled to his feet again, and Howard saw that his opportunity had come, his foe was at his side,

and he quickly thrust his rifle against the Indian's body and fired, blowing a hole through that seemed as large as one's arm. The Indian shrieked, leaped out of his saddle, and fell to the ground on his face, dead.

"Looking about, Howard saw the remainder of the band following at a prudent distance, for by this time they began to look upon him as a god, invulnerable to all their weapons. When at last the poor horse fell prostrate, and apparently dead, they all flocked up to make a final disposition of their troublesome enemy. But Howard, undaunted, lay quietly down behind the body of his horse, and when they came within short range, took deliberate aim and fired, killing another man. This unlooked-for disaster completely demoralized them, and they fled in all directions. Within three minutes not an Indian was in sight. He turned his attention to his horse, loosened the girth to take off the saddle, and was surprised when the animal drew a deep breath and struggled to his feet. He then led him slowly to where the rest of the party had made a stand about their wagon and as he approached from one direction, I came up limping from the other, with a bullet in my right leg. The Indians had paid their gentle attentions to the rest of us during the time Howard was having his fight, but fortunately not in force, and we succeeded in getting together at the wagon, without the loss of a man, I being the only one wounded in the whole engagement. As soon as Howard joined us we started on the retreat for camp, the Indians harassing us the whole way. They would form in single file or all abreast, and charge as though they were going to ride right over us, but on getting within short range would wheel and retire, after discharging a volley of shots that would tear up the earth all around us. This was most terrifying to me, a boy fresh from school, who had never experienced any

sort of warfare, and had never even seen a gun fired by one man at another; but Howard, who had gone through four years of the war of the rebellion, and had seen three years or more of border warfare with Indians, was quite exhilarated by the excitement. He gave them a challenge by walking alone several hundred yards away on one side. They charged, but retreated when he kneeled and fired.

"Arriving at camp, after an hour's ride and running fight, we found the escort thoroughly alarmed, and just starting out to pick up our dead bodies, for they had seen so many Indians about that they made sure we were all killed. It was a scene of mutual rejoicing and congratulation, as we had feared that they had met an untimely fate. A hasty council of war was held as to what was to be done. We were unanimous in the opinion that it was folly to continue work without a larger escort and a personal body-guard, besides, it was necessary that my wound should be dressed. Consequently, it was decided to turn our faces in the direction of Sheridan, which we did, arriving there late in the afternoon, the Indians following us all the way seeking an opportunity to attack us again. With them it had become a question of revenge, as they had lost heavily, while we had escaped entirely.

"The horse that carried Howard so nobly through this fight ultimately recovered. Three of the five bullets were extracted. I afterward took him home to Burlingame, where he was carefully fed and pampered for some years till he died.

"I recovered from my wound very quickly, and within six weeks rejoined the party, receiving promotion to the first place in the corps—that of transit-man—which I occupied until the road was completed.

"Our miraculous escape was long the subject of wonder

on the frontier, where it was regarded as the most marvellous on record, as we fought against such fearful odds. I hope the narrative as I have written it will be intelligible. I fear I have not made it as clear as I could orally. It always excites me to think or tell of it."

EUGENE SCHUYLER (81) graduated at Yale College, in 1859, and, after a further course of study there, was the first to receive the degree of Doctor of Philosophy, in 1861. After studying law at Columbia College (LL.B. in 1863), he began the practice of law in New York, devoting his leisure to literary pursuits. In 1867 he entered the foreign service of the United States, and was successively Consul at Moscow, 1867–69; Consul at Reval, 1869–70; Secretary of Legation at St. Petersburg, 1870–76 (during which term he was several times Chargé d'Affaires for long periods); Secretary of Legation and Consul-General at Constantinople, 1876–78; Consul at Birmingham, 1878–79; Consul-General at Rome, 1879–80; Chargé d'Affaires and Consul-General at Bucharest, 1880–82; Minister Resident and Consul-General to Greece, Serbia, and Roumania, 1882–84. In 1873, while on leave of absence, he made a long journey of eight months through Central Asia. In the summer of 1876 he was sent to investigate the Turkish massacres in Bulgaria, and his reports did much to influence the subsequent history of that country. He also assisted in preparing a constitution for Bulgaria. In 1881, as Plenipotentiary for the United States, he concluded and signed commercial and consular treaties with Roumania and Serbia.

Besides being an occasional contributor to various reviews and journals in America and England, he edited Porter's "Selections from the Kalevala" (1867), and has published a translation of Turgenef's "Fathers and Sons" (1867); "Turkistan: Notes of a Journey in Russian

Turkistan, Khokand, Bukhara, and Kuldja" (1876); a translation of Count Leo Tolstoy's "The Cossacks" (1878); and "Peter the Great" (1884). He received the honorary degree of Doctor of Laws from Williams College in 1882, and from Yale College, his alma mater, in 1885. He has at various times been elected corresponding member of the Roumanian Academy, member of the Royal Asiatic Society, of the Société Asiatique, and of the Royal (London), the Imperial Russian, Italian, and American Geographical Societies; of the American Historical Association, and of other learned societies, and has received decorations from the governments of Russia, Greece, Roumania, Serbia, and Bulgaria.

He married, in 1877, Gertrude Wallace, daughter of the late Charles King, President of Columbia College, himself a son of Rufus King, one of the first senators from New York.

WALTER SCRIBNER SCHUYLER (84) "was graduated from the Military Academy on June 15, 1870, and assigned to the Fifth Cavalry as a second lieutenant, and was promoted a first lieutenant July 29, 1876. He joined at Fort D. A. Russell, Wy., on October 9th, 1870, where he served on escort duty with a surveying party during the summer of 1871, until December, 1871, when he accompanied the second detachment of the regiment, by the way of San Francisco and the Gulf of California, to Arizona, and arrived at Camp McDowell in February, 1872, where he had station, with occasional tours of detached duty, until June. He then entered upon a tour of field service, which continued, with few interruptions, until February, 1875. He participated in all the Apache campaigns of that period, and was engaged in the brilliant action at Muchos Cañons; the affairs on the Santa Maria, Sycamore Creek, and in the Red Rock country; the actions (commanding) on

Pinto Creek, on Lost River, on the Black Mesa, on the east branch of the Verde River, on Cave Creek, on Cañon Creek, in the Superstition and Arivaipa Mountains, near the Gila River, in the Mazatzal Mountains, on the west side of the Four Peaks, in the Four Peaks, and near the north peak of the Mazatzal Mountains. He superintended the removal of the Apache Yuma Indians from Camp Date Creek to the Verde Reservation, in May, 1873, and was in charge of the agency for several months. He was among the most active, untiring, and successful of the young officers who participated in the Apache campaigns of 1872–75, and was twice nominated to the United States Senate to be a brevet first lieutenant, to date from September 25, 1872, for gallant conduct in the engagement at Muchos Cañons; a brevet captain, to date from June 26, 1873, for gallant conduct in the engagement on Lost River; a brevet major, to date from April 28, 1874, for gallantry in the action at Salt River; and a brevet lieutenant-colonel, to date from May 14, 1874, for gallant conduct in the engagement in the Red Rock country.

"He availed himself, in April, 1875, of a leave of absence, and visited Europe, and upon his return to the United States rejoined at Fort Hays, Kan., in March, 1876, and served as acting regimental adjutant until June 1st, when he was appointed an aide-de-camp for Brigadier-General George Crook, and immediately proceeded to Fort Fetterman; whence he made a daring march, with a few men, across the country, which was infested with hostile Sioux, to Goose Creek, Wy., where he joined the general and participated in the Big Horn and Yellowstone expedition, and was engaged in the skirmishes at Slim Buttes, Dak. He participated in the Powder River expedition during the winter of 1876–77, and was engaged in the brilliant action at Bates Creek (north branch of Powder River),

where he was distinguished for good judgment and conspicuous gallantry. He served with the expedition against the hostile Utes of Colorado during the march from Rawlins, Wy., in October, 1879, to the relief of the besieged troops on Milk Creek, Col., and participated in raising the siege and action at that place on the 5th. He was on a leave of absence from January, 1880, to January, 1882, when he was relieved, at his own request, from duty as an aide-de-camp for Brigadier-General George Crook, and joined his company at Fort Sidney, Neb." [1]

At Sidney he remained, performing the routine duties of garrison life, until April, 1883, when he changed station, marching with his troop, via Cheyenne and Fort Laramie, to Fort McKinney, Wy. In July of that year he was detailed as commander of an escort to conduct a party of officers to and through the Yellowstone National Park. Returning from this expedition, he was (September) detailed as Professor of Military Science and Tactics at Cornell University, Ithaca, N. Y.

He was married on December 20, 1883, to Miss Mary Miller Gardiner, of Geneva, N. Y.

---

[1] Price's "Across the Continent with the Fifth Cavalry."

GENEALOGICAL TABLE.

DESCENDANTS OF PHILIP SCHUYLER (SECOND), IN THE FEMALE LINE, IN PART.

As Philip Schuyler had only one child, this table begins with the daughters of his son Nicholas. It is by no means perfect, as I had not the leisure to prosecute my inquiries to the extent necessary to make the work complete.

NICHOLAS SCHUYLER (3) had three daughters, to wit:

4. ELIZABETH, m. *Jochem Staats.*
6. ARIANTIA, m. *Killian Van Rensselaer.*
8. CATHARINE, m. *Johannes Jacob Lansing.*

Jochem Staats, son of Barent, son of Jochem, son of Dr. Abraham Staats, the emigrant of 1642. His grandfather, Jochem, adhered to Jacob Leisler, and by him was commissioned a captain. When Albany finally submitted to Leisler, he was put in command of the fort.

The following genealogical table is copied from the family records contained in an old Dutch Bible, now in possession of one of the Staats families.

4. ELIZABETH SCHUYLER and *Jochem Staats.*
  130. BARENT, b. November 8, 1741.
    m. *Annatje Winne.*
  131. NICHOLAS, b. September 26, 1743.
    m. *Mallykin (Maria) Saulsbury.*
  132. GERRIT, b. January 27, 1745; d. y.
  133. ELSIE, b. October 6, 1747.
    m. *William Saulsbury.*

134. NELTIE, b. February 17, 1750.
m. *John Amory.*
135. GERRIT, b. March 2, 1752.
m. *Elizabeth Low.*
136. PHILIP, b. July 26, 1755.
m. *Annatje Van Alstyne.*
137. JOHANNES, b. November 1, 1756.
m. *Jane Shauts.*
138. ANNATJE, b. December 7, 1759; d. February 26, 1794, unmarried.

130. BARENT STAATS and *Annatje Winne.*
139. JOCHEM, b. April 27, 1769.
140. DAVID, b. September 19, 1771.
141. CATHALYNA, b. January 11, 1774.
142. GERRITJE, b. April 18, 1777.
143. ELIZABETH, b. May 3, 1779.

131. NICHOLAS STAATS (a colonel in the Revolutionary War) and *Mallykin (Maria) Saulsbury.*
144. WILLIAM, b. June 16, 1773.
145. JOCHEM, b. January 25, 1777; d. y.
146. JOCHEM, b. August 25, 1778.

134 NELTIE STAATS and *John Amory.*
147. ELIZABETH, bp. June 28, 1772.

135. GERRIT STAATS and *Elizabeth Low.*
148. CORNELIS, b. August 1, 1780.
149. MARIA, b. February 22, 1781.
150. ELIZABETH, b. April 26, 1782.
151. SAMUEL PROVOST, b. September 6, 1784.

136. PHILIP STAATS and *Annatje Van Alstyne.*
152. ELIZABETH SCHUYLER, b. March 14, 1789; d. unmarried, September 13, 1851.
153. ABRAHAM P., b. February 11, 1791.
m. *Barthia Leggett.*
154. JOCHEM P., b. May 7, 1793.
m. *Catherine Brcese.*
155. BARENT P., b. September 25, 1796.
m. 1, *Maria Gourley.*
m. 2, *Maria Winne.*
m. 3, *Caroline Porter.*
156. PETER, b. May 8, 1800; d. y.
157. PETER P., b. January 20, 1803.
m. *Hetty Platt.*
158. PHILIP P., b. May 23, 1807.
m. —— *Aldrich.*

153. ABRAHAM P. STAATS and *Barthia Leggett.*
159. PHILIP, b. January 25, 1814.
160. RACHEL, b. January 23, 1816.
161. ANNA MARIA, b. January 13, 1818.
m. *John Van der Burgh.*
162. JOHN T., b. March 16, 1820.
m. and has three children.
163. ELIZABETH, b. March 17, 1822; obt.

154. JOCHEM STAATS and *Catherine Breese.*
164. ELIZABETH, b. April 9, 1818.
m. *John Miller.*
165. CATHERINE, b. October 30, 1821.
m. *Peter Van Wie.*
166. ANNA ABEEL, b. July 1, 1824.
m. *Barent Winne.*
167. JOHN, b. December 7, 1826.
m. *Sarah Jessup.*
168. BARTHIA, b. January 26, 1829.
169. JOCHEM, b. October 14, 1831.
m. *Catherine Miller.*
170. PHILIP, b. August 28, 1833.
m. *Laura Sprague.*

155. BARENT P. STAATS and *Maria Gourly.*
171. HELEN, d. y.
172. HELEN, m. *Samuel Stokes*, of Canada.

155. BARENT P. STAATS and *Maria Winne.*
173. JOHN, d. y.
174. ANNA, m. *Peter Sickler.*

157. PETER P. STAATS and *Hetty Platt.*
175. SARAH ANN.
176. ELIZABETH, m. *Richard Dodge.*
177. CHARLES PLATT.
178. PHILIP.
179. CHARLES DUDLEY.
180. BLEECKER.
181. EDWARD, d. y.
182. MARY.
183. HETTY, m. *George Haywood.*
184. EDWARD.

158. PHILIP P. STAATS and —— *Aldrich.*
185. PETER.
186. SARAH ELIZABETH.
187. JOCHEM.
188. WILLIAM.

The members of the Staats family are numerous and widely dispersed. It is quite apparent that the preceding table comprises only a small part of them. The time necessary to make a perfect list I could not well afford. Enough has been done to point the way to others, who may have leisure and inclination to pursue the work. I am indebted to Mrs. Hetty Platt Staats and her family for the little accomplished, and I hold their courtesy in grateful remembrance. It was a surprise to us all to learn that she and my wife were related to each other in the same degree as her deceased husband and myself—on the one side from Yankee blood, and on the other Dutch.

KILLIAN VAN RENSSELAER, the husband of Ariantia Schuyler, was the youngest son of Hendrick, son of Jeremiah, son of Killian Van Rensselaer, the first patroon of Rensselaerwyck. His mother was Catherina, daughter of Johannes Pieterse Van Brugh and Catherina Roelofse, daughter of Annecke Jans, the celebrated, whose mother, Tryntje Jans, was among the earliest settlers of New Amsterdam.

The following table is taken from a Van Rensselaer "chart made by my father, Robert S. Van Rensselaer, 1796 continued by his son Philip, Albany, N. Y., 1847." "Presented to Walter Van Rensselaer, New Orleans."

Robert S. Van Rensselaer had spent several months in Holland, where he had collected materials to form the chart down to the American branch of the family. I may have erred in the order of birth, as there were no numbers on the chart to guide me.

6. ARIANTIA SCHUYLER and *Killian Van Rensselaer.*
   189. HENDRICK, m. 1, September 19, 1764, *Alida Bratt.*
   m. 2, *Nancy G. Simmons.*
   190. PHILIP, m. February 15, 1768, *Maria Sanders.*
   191. CATHERINE, m. *William H. Ludlow*, d. s. p.
   192. NICHOLAS, m. *Elsie Van Buren.*

193. MARIA, m. *Leonard Gansevoort.*
194. KILLIAN, m. *Margarita Sanders.*
195. ELSIE, m. *Abraham A. Lansing.*

189. HENDRICK VAN RENSSELAER and *Alida Bratt.*
196. KILLIAN, d. y.
197. HENRY, d. y.
198. CATHERINE, m. *Cornelius Schermerhorn.*
199. SOLOMON, m. *Arietta Van Rensselaer.*
200. PHILIP, m. 1, *Anne Marselius.*
m. 2, —— *Scéry.*
201. JOHN, m. *Maria Lansing.*
202. NICHOLAS, m. *Nancy Ten Eyck.*

189. HENDRICK VAN RENSSELAER and *Nancy G. Simmons.*
203. DAVID, m. *Lydia Carter.*
204. KILLIAN, m. *Martha Ross.*
205. MARTHA, d. y.
206. HENRY, m. *Cornelia Van Alstyne.*
207. STEPHEN, m. —— *Bonnell.*

190. PHILIP VAN RENSSELAER and *Maria Sanders.*
208. ELIZABETH, m. *Peter E. Elmendorf.*
209. ROBERT S., m. *Catherine Nicholas Bogart.*
210. ARIETTA, m. *Solomon Van Rensselaer.*
211. PETER S., m. *Sally Hand.*
212. KILLIAN, d. y.
213. PHILIP P., m. *Catherine Lansing.*
214. MARIA M., m. *Jacob S. Glen.*
215. SCHUYLER, m. *Rebecca McCartey.*
216. SANDERS, m. *Abby McCartey.*

192. NICHOLAS VAN RENSSELAER and *Elsie Van Buren.*
217. KILLIAN, m. 1, *Catherine Whitbeck.*
m. 2, *Jane Bogart.*
218. MAGDALENA, m. *Peter Buckman.*
219. ARIETTA, m. *Abraham Whitbeck.*
220. CORNELIUS, m. 1, *Eveline Gansevoort.*
m. 2, *Maria Genet.*

194. KILLIAN VAN RENSSELAER and *Margarita Sanders.*
221. JOHN S., m. *Anna Duncan.*
222. WILLIAM, d. s. p.
223. DEBORAH, d. y.
224. RICHARD, m. 1, *Elizabeth Van Rensselaer.*
m. 2, *Matilda Van Rensselaer.*
225. BERNARD, m. 1, *Elizabeth Hun.*
m. 2, —— ——, d. s. p.

193. MARIA VAN RENSSELAER and *Leonard Gansevoort.*
226. MARIA, m. *Abraham Hun.*
227. ARIANTIA.
228. CATHERINE.
229. ELIZABETH, m. *T. Ross.*
230. JOHANNES.
231. RACHEL.
232. EVELINE, m. *Jacob H. Ten Eyck.*
233. ANN.
234. ELSIE, d. y.
235. RENSSELAER, d. in Louisiana, 1839.
236. ELSIE, m. *R. M. Cuyler.*

195. ELSIE VAN RENSSELAER and *Abraham A. Lansing.*
237. ABRAHAM DOUW, m. *Christina Voorhis.*
238. ARIANTIA SCHUYLER, d. y.
239. ARIANTIA, d. y.
240. CATHERINE, m. February 13, 1804, *Philip P. Van Rensselaer.*
241. ARIANTIA, m. 1801, *Herman Knickerbacker.*
242. KILLIAN V. R., d. y.
243. MAGDALENA, d. y.
244. MAGDALENA, d. y.
245. GERRIT, d. y.
246. KILLIAN V. R., m. *Amanda Carter*, d. December 18, 1874, aged 80 years.

246. KILLIAN V. R. LANSING and *Amanda Carter.*
247. ELSIE.
248. LYDIA CARTER.
249. ABRAHAM A., m. *Cornelia Schoonmaker.*
250. KILLIAN V. R., JR.
251. EVELINE OLIVIA.
252. ARIETTA AMANDA.[1]

199. SOLOMON VAN RENSSELAER and *Arietta Van Rensselaer.*
253. ADELINE.
254. ELIZABETH, m. *Richard Van Rensselaer* (224).
255. RENSSELAER, m. *Mary G. Foreman.*
256. MATILDA, m. *Richard Van Rensselaer* (224).
257. MARGARITA.
258. HARRIET MARIA, m. *Peter Elmendorf.*
259. CATHERINE VISSCHER, m. —— *Bonney.*

201. JOHN VAN RENSSELAER and *Maria Lansing.*
260. JOHN.
261. HENRY.

---

[1] Nos. 226 to 252 are taken from the Lansing family Bible.

262. STEPHEN.
263. KILLIAN, d. y.
264. MARY ANNE.
265. CORNELIA, m. —— *Thum*, of Philadelphia, Pa.

202. NICHOLAS VAN RENSSELAER and *Nancy Ten Broeck.*
266. NICHOLAS.

203. DAVID VAN RENSSELAER and *Lydia Carter.*
267. HENRY, m. *Elizabeth Scudder.*
268. MARTHA.
269. LYDIA.
270. DAVID C.
271. AGNES GERTRUDE.

204. KILLIAN VAN RENSSELAER and *Martha Ross.*
272. EDWARD A.

207. STEPHEN VAN RENSSELAER and —— *Bonnell.*
273. EUGENE.

209. ROBERT S. VAN RENSSELAER and *Catherine N. Bogart.*[1]

213. PHILIP P. VAN RENSSELAER and *Catherine Lansing.*
274. MARIA, m. *David Woodhouse.*
275. ABRAHAM L., m. *Clarissa Caswell.*
276. ELSIE L., m. *Timothy G. Abrahams.*
277. ARIETTA, m. *Robert Holmes.*

215. SCHUYLER VAN RENSSELAER and *Rebecca McCartey.*
278. SARA MARIA, m. *John W. Wickham.*
279. SANDERS, m. *Melissa Haywood.*
280. ELIZABETH.

216. SANDERS VAN RENSSELAER and *Abby McCartey.*
281. SARAH, m. *John W. Wickham.*
282. FAYETTE.
283. REBECCA.
284. CECILIA ANNE.
285. MARIA MATILDA.
286. ARIETTA.

220. CORNELIUS VAN RENSSELAER and *Eveline Gansevoort.*
287. CORNELIA CLINTON, d. y.
288. CORNELIA.

221. JOHN S. VAN RENSSELAER and *Anna Duncan.*
289. MAUNSELL, m. *Sarah Anne Taylor.*

---

[1] As Catherine Bogart was a granddaughter of Harmanus Schuyler (10), I have placed this family among his descendants.

290. MARGARET, m. *Joseph Russell.*
291. CHARLES, d. s. p.
292. ANN ELIZA, m. *Alex. H. Hough.*
293. LYDIA BEEKMAN.
294. ARIETTA LETITIA, m. *Leonard Kip.*
295. CATHERINE BEEKMAN, m. —— ——.
296. LOUISA.

224. RICHARD VAN RENSSELAER and *Elizabeth Van Rensselaer.*
297. MARIA ELIZABETH, d. unmarried.

255. RENSSELAER VAN RENSSELAER and *Mary G. Foreman.*
298. SOLOMON.

267. HENRY VAN RENSSELAER and *Elizabeth Scudder.*
299. DELIA GERTRUDE.
300. ELLEN ELIZA.

275. ABRAHAM L. VAN RENSSELAER and *Clarissa Caswell.*
301. PHILIP P.
302. CATHARINE A.

279. SANDERS VAN RENSSELAER and *Melissa Haywood.*
303. GERTRUDE GLEN.

W. L. Stone, in "Burgoyne's Campaign," says of the Van Rensselaers, that "they consisted of eighteen males in 1776. During the war every adult, except two old men, and all minors, except four boys, bore arms at one or more battles during the Revolutionary struggle." Of the eighteen males, sixteen belonged to Hendrick's branch; and of these, five were of Killian's (6) family.

HENDRICK VAN RENSSELAER (189) was a colonel in the Revolutionary army. He and Colonel Long were directed by General Schuyler to hold the enemy in check at Fort Anne until the cannon and armament of Fort George could be removed to a place of safety. The English, under Colonel Hill, were in pursuit of the patriots from Lake Champlain up Wood Creek, and on their approach to Fort Anne Van Rensselaer and Long sallied from the fort, on the morning of July 8, 1777, and attacked them so vigorously that they were obliged to retire to a stronger position on

a hill. Here they were again attacked with such impetuosity that, had it not been for the timely arrival of succor, Hill must have surrendered or retreated in confusion. The English had had enough, and in the following night retreated, leaving their wounded on the field. Colonel Van Rensselaer was so severely wounded that he was obliged to retire from the service. After his death the ball, which he had carried for more than thirty-five years, was extracted from his thigh-bone.

PHILIP VAN RENSSELAER (190) was engaged in the commissary department, where he rendered efficient service.

NICHOLAS VAN RENSSELAER also held the grade of colonel, and was in the decisive battles on the heights of Still, water. After the surrender of Burgoyne, he was despatched by General Gates to convey the intelligence to Albany.

KILLIAN VAN RENSSELAER (194) was one of the minors referred to by Mr. Stone. After the war he studied law, and became a prominent man in the profession. He was elected to Congress five successive terms, and was an efficient member.

SOLOMON VAN RENSSELAER (199) is an historical character. As a captain of cavalry he participated in the battle with the Indians on the Maumee River, in 1794, and was shot through the lungs. He recovered from the wound, and in 1812 he accompanied General Stephen Van Rensselaer to the northern frontier. At the battle of Queenstown he received six wounds, and was disabled. His recovery was slow, but he regained his health, and rendered other important services to his country.

NICHOLAS SCHUYLER'S third daughter, CATHERINE, was not married when her father made his will. It was a long time before I could trace her. In Pearson's "First Settlers of Albany," I found that John Jacob Lansing married

a Cathalyna Schuyler (about 1747), and that a Rev. Nicholas Lansing died at Tappan, September 26, 1835, aged eighty-seven years. I acted on this clue, although I was by no means certain that Cathalyna was Nicholas Schuyler's daughter Catherine. After inquiries among various Lansing families of Albany, who knew nothing of John Jacob, I chanced to inquire of an English gentleman residing at Yonkers, whether he could give me the address of anyone at Tappan? He gave me the name of an acquaintance living at Closter, an adjoining town. I wrote to him, and received in reply that he had heard Dominie Lansing preach in Dutch, but knew nothing of his family. He referred me, however, to Lansing Zabriskie, Esq., of Jersey City, who might solve my questions.

In reply to my letter, Mr. Zabriskie wrote: "Nicholas Schuyler had three daughters, one of whom, Catherine, married John Jacob Lansing;" and then gave the names of their children, and whom they married. As to Elsie Lansing, who married —— Dickinson, and had several children, he "believed them all to be dead." Subsequently I learned that there was a lawyer by the name of Dickinson living at Nyack, near Tappan, who informed me that the Dickinsons were not "all dead."

From these two gentlemen I have received the following names of descendants of Catherine Schuyler:

8. CATHERINE SCHUYLER and *Johannes Jacob Lansing.*
   304. NICOLAAS, bp. September 11, 1748.
        m. —— *Dickinson*, d. s. p.
   305. LENA, bp. November 4, 1750.
        m. 1, *John Zabriskie.*
        m. 2, *Abraham Oothout.*
   306. JACOB, bp. August 12, 1753.
        m. and had a daughter, who died unmarried.
   307. PHILIP, bp. November 28, 1756.
   308. ELSIE, bp. July 15, 1759.
        m. *Charles Dickinson*, brother of Nicolaas' (304) wife.

305. LENA LANSING and *John Zabriskie.*
- 309. SARAH, m. *Abraham Van Dusen;* descendants live at Adrian, Mich.
- 310. CATHERINE SCHUYLER, m. *Walter Van Vechten;* had one daughter, and resided at Brooklyn, N. Y.
- 311. JOHN L., m. *Sarah Bancà.*

305. LENA LANSING and *Abraham Oothout.*
- 312. LANSING; residence, Schenectady, N. Y.

311. JOHN L. ZABRISKIE and *Sarah Bancà.*
- 313. JOHN B.
- 314. ABRAHAM O.
- 315. MARY A.
- 316. CATHERINE SCHUYLER, m. *Henry Starr,* Brooklyn, N. Y.

314. ABRAHAM O. ZABRISKIE and —— ——.
- 317. LANSING.

308. ELSIE LANSING and *Charles Dickinson.*
- 318. CHARLES, d. s. p.
- 319. CATHERINE, d. s. p.
- 320. JOHN, d. s. p.
- 321. DORCAS, m. *Rev. Joshua Boyd;* had one child, d. y.
- 322. CORNELIA, d. s. p.
- 323. CORNELIUS, m. —— ——.
- 324. JACOB, m. —— ——; had one son, d. unmarried.

323. CORNELIUS DICKINSON and —— ——.
- 325. WILLIAM, m.; has a large family.
- 326. DORCAS, m. *John C. Gale;* has several children.
- 327. ROBERT, m.; has two children.
- 328. SOPHIA, m.; has two children.
- 329. MARCENA M., m.; has eight children.
- 330. CHARLES, d. s. p.
- 331. JOHN JACOB, d. s. p.
- 332. ANN ELIZA, m. *William Depue;* has two children.
- 333. CORNELIA R., m. *William S. Kelly;* has four daughters.

JOHN JACOB LANSING was a son of Jacob, son of Gerrit, Jr., son of Gerrit Lansing, an early emigrant to New Netherland from Hasselt, in Overyssel, who died in Albany before October 3, 1679. John Jacob resided on the west side of Broadway, near Maiden Lane, Albany, and was a merchant. He had been twice married, and was twice a widower, before he married Catherine Schuyler. Mr.

Dickinson sent me a photograph of Lansing from his portrait, painted when he was nearly ninety years old. He sits with his arm resting on a table, dressed in black, with a cocked hat and knee-breeches. The traditionary pipe and snuff-box are absent. Lansing died at the age of ninety-two years, on April 19, 1808.

ABRAHAM O. ZABRISKIE (320) was lately Chancellor of New Jersey.

HARMANUS SCHUYLER (10) had two daughters, Elsie and Maria.

14. ELSIE SCHUYLER, m. June 5, 1773, *Dr. Nicholas N. Bogart*, of New York, d. September 26, 1783.
    334. CATHERINE NICHOLAS, b. April 16, 1784.
        m. October, 1801, *Robert S. Van Rensselaer.*

334. CATHERINE N. BOGART and *Robert S. Van Rensselaer.*
    335. PHILIP, m. *Harriet Morehouse.*
    336. JAMES, d. s. p.
    337. NICHOLAS, m. *Catherine Ten Broeck.*
    338. SCHUYLER, m. 1, *Cornelia Schuyler.*
        m. 2, *Maria Wareing.*
    339. CHRISTINA, m. *James H. Osborn.*
    340. WALTER, m. *Emeline L. Gladding.*
    341. JOHN CORTLANDT, d. y.
    342. ANGELICA, d. unmarried.
    343. HARRIET MARIA, m. —— *Putman.*

335. PHILIP VAN RENSSELAER and *Harriet Morehouse.*
    344. JAMES.
    345. PETER SANDERS.
    346. JOHN BOGART.

338. Schuyler Van Rensselaer's children are among the descendants of John H. Schuyler.

339. CHRISTINA VAN RENSSELAER and *James H. Osborn.*
    347. CATHERINE, m. *William N. S. Sanders.*
    348. ELIZABETH, m. *Dr. Charles A. Devendorf.*
    349. AUGUSTA, m. *Archibald Thompson*, d. s. p.

340. WALTER VAN RENSSELAER and *Emeline L. Gladding.*
    350. ROBERT ALLAN.

351. EMELINE MATILDA.
352. SCHUYLER G.

347. CATHERINE OSBORN and *W. N. S. Sanders.*
353. HARRY OSBORN.
354. FRANCIS NICOLL.

348. ELIZABETH OSBORN and *C. A. Devendorf.*
355. FREDERICK.
356. ELIZABETH V. R.
357. WALTER.

I have been unable to trace the pedigree of Dr. Nicholas Bogart, the first husband of Elsie Schuyler (14). Her second husband, Major James Van Rensselaer, was the son of Johannes, the son of Hendrick, the son of Jeremiah, the son of Killian Van Rensselaer, the first patroon. He was an officer in the Revolutionary War, and served without pay. He was on the staff of General Montgomery, and was near him when he fell, mortally wounded, before the walls of Quebec. His mother was a granddaughter of Colonel Peter Schuyler.

14. ELSIE SCHUYLER, widow of *Dr. Nicholas N. Bogart*, m. June 3, 1789, *James Van Rensselaer.*
358. PHILIP SCHUYLER, b. April 18, 1790, d. y.
359. CHRISTINA SCHUYLER, b. August 10, 1791, d. unmarried.
360. MARGARET SCHUYLER, b. June 21, 1793, d. y.
361. CORNELIA MARIA, b. November 17, 1794, d. y.
362. HARMANUS SCHUYLER, b. July 30, 1796, d. y.
363. PHILIP SCHUYLER, b. November 28, 1797.
m. *Henrietta A. Schuyler.*
364. HARMANUS NICHOLAS SCHUYLER, b. August 24, 1799, d. y.
365. JAMES, b. June 14, 1801, d. s. p.

363. The children of PHILIP S. VAN RENSSELAER are placed with the descendants of JOHN H. SCHUYLER.

19. MARIA SCHUYLER m. 1, *David Van Rensselaer*, d. s. p.
m. 2, *Nicholas Ten Broeck*, by whom
366. MARIA HOFFMAN, b. April 27, 1801.
m. *Peter Quidor Schuyler.*
367. HARMANUS SCHUYLER, b. February 25, 1804, d. y.

368. JOHN JEREMIAH, b. August 8, 1806.
m. *Helen Ten Broeck.*
369. DAVID V. R., b. February 25, 1808.
m. *Jane Douw.*
370. CHRISTINA JANE, b. February 4, 1809, d. January 11, 1831.
m. *Dr. Knickerbocker.*
371. ANN CATHERINE, d. y.

366. Maria H. and P. Q. Schuyler's children are among the descendants of John H. Schuyler.

Nos. 368 and 369 were married and had children, but I have been unable to procure their names. The posterity of Maria Schuyler (19) is not numerous. Her first husband, David Van Rensselaer, was a son of Hendrick, son of Hendrick, son of Jeremiah, son of Killian Van Rensselaer, the first patroon. Her second husband, Nicholas Ten Broeck, was a son of John, son of Johannes, son of Dirck Wesselse Ten Broeck.

JOHN H. SCHUYLER (16) had three daughters, the eldest of whom, Henrietta Anne (26), alone has living descendants.

26. HENRIETTA A. SCHUYLER and *Philip S. Van Rensselaer.*
372. MARY ELIZABETH, b. March 2, 1828, d. November 9, 1877.
m. July 27, 1850, *Samuel H. Gardiner*, d. December 25, 1864.
373. JAMES C., b. June 9, 1831, d. s. p. September 25, 1882.
m. August 7, 1866, *Anna Jenkins.*
374. GRATZ, b. April 17, 1834.
m. *Kate Van Rensselaer.*
375. HENRIETTA ANNE, d. y.

372. MARY E. VAN RENSSELAER and *Samuel H. Gardiner.*
376. HENRIETTA SCHUYLER, b. September 29, 1852.
377. MARY MILLER, b. November 9, 1854.
m. December 20, 1883, *Walter S. Schuyler* (84).
378. FANNY FOY, b. August 5, 1859.

374. GRATZ VAN RENSSELAER and *Kate Van Rensselaer.*
379. ELIZABETH RUTGERS, b. June 30, 1857.
m. *George Hull.*
380. CORTLANDT SCHUYLER, b. November 22, 1859.

381. JOHN, b. April 4, 1862.
382. MARGARET, b. December 26, 1865.
383. PHILIP SCHUYLER, b. October 19, 1870, d. 1885.

39. MARY SCHUYLER and *Abraham Van Horne.*
384. NICHOLAS HARMANUS, b. June 21, 1841, d. s. p. February 13, 1863, in the Union army, War of the Rebellion.
385. PHEBE JANE, d. s. p. August 18, 1863.
386. ELEANOR AUGUSTA, b. April 22, 1846.
m. *J. P. Baker.*
387. JOHN SCHUYLER, b. April, 1849.
388. SARAH M., b. 1852.
m. September 27, 1874, *B. A. Roun.*
389. RACHEL C., b. November 28, 1855.
m. *M. F. Paine.*
390. ALICE E., b. January 28, 1859.

386. ELEANOR A. VAN HORNE and *J. P. Baker.*
391. NICHOLAS HARMANUS, b. December 16, 1871.

389. RACHEL C. VAN HORNE and *M. F. Paine.*
392. EDWIN L., b. April 2, 1872.
393. JENNIE M., b. June 16, 1874.

47. CHEERY ANN SCHUYLER and *E. E. Southwell.*
394. ELLA R., b. November 22, 1852.
m. February 19, 1878, *Edwin R. Young.*
395. SCHUYLER E., b. August 13, 1854.
396. GEORGE A., b. May 7, 1858.
397. CAPTOLA ELIZABETH, b. September 17, 1860.
398. MERLIN DERBY, b. August 9, 1867.
399. AMBROSE NICHOLAS, b. January 21, 1870.
400. BURT FRANK, b. April 4, 1872.

51. HENRIETTA SCHUYLER and *Abel Burritt.*
401. WILLIAM, b. April 13, 1836.
402. GEORGE H., b. April 24, 1838.
403. SUSAN CORNELIA, b. December 13, 1843.

52 CORNELIA SCHUYLER and *Schuyler Van Rensselaer.*
404. WALTER A., b. November 24, 1836.
m. *Jennie Van Hovenburgh.*
405. SCHUYLER, b. February 22, 1839, d. s. p. 1858.
406. JOHN, d. y.
407. FANNY, b. March 19, 1841, d. s. p. 1863.
408. CORNELIA, d. y.

53. JANE SCHUYLER and *Robert Shackelton.*
409. GEORGE EUGENE, b. December 24, 1853.

54. SUSAN SCHUYLER and *Grant Wheeler.*
410. PHILIP, b. November 19, 1845.
m. *Mary E. Stewart.*
411. MARY ELLEN, b. November 6, 1847.
412. AMY ANN, b. December 4, 1849.
m. *Philip Barton.*
413. WILLIAM A., b. June 25, 1853.
414. SCHUYLER V. R., b. June 19, 1855.
415. HIRAM A., b. September 29, 1857.
416. GEORGE W., b. March 7, 1860, d. y.
417. LINDA H., b. September 3, 1861.
418. FREDERICK W., b. June 13, 1867, d. y.

57. JULIA SCHUYLER and *Earl Lucas.*
419. CLARENCE, b. April 7, 1853.
420. ELLA, b. 1856.

410. PHILIP WHEELER and *Mary E. Stewart.*
421. LOUIS A.
422. FORT.
423. MARY MATILDA.
424. An infant, not named.

60. CATHARINE SCHUYLER and *J. W. Marselis.*
425. ESTHER ANN, b. February 10, 1846.
m. 1, July 4, 1868, *Henry Delline.*
m. 2, January 8, 1870, *Thomas Arnold.*
426. JUDSON, b. June 17, 1848.
427. FRANCES, b. June 9, 1850.
m. *Joseph Beers.*
428. LOUISA, b. November 1, 1853.
429. JOHN SCHUYLER, b. February 14, 1859.
430. GEORGE E., b. 1862.
431. VICTOR C., b. October 16, 1867.

425. ESTHER ANN MARSELIS and *Henry Delline.*
432. MARY, b. May 18, 1869.

425. ESTHER ANN MARSELIS and *Thomas Arnold.*
433. JACOB A.

65. ANNE H. SCHUYLER and *George W. Bodle.*
435. EDWIN S., b. May 26, 1876.

66. ANN ELIZA SCHUYLER and *Edward Stoddard.*
436. HERMAN G., b. July 6, 1848.
437. ADA M., b. February 23, 1851.
438. ALBERT R., b. December 21, 1852, d. y.
439. SCHUYLER E., b. March 22, 1865.

71. KATE W. SCHUYLER and *William A. Church.*
    440. EDITH SCHUYLER, b. January 31, 1879.

73. SUSAN M. SCHUYLER and *Marcus Lyon.*
    441. LUCY, b. July 9, 1858.
        m. December 29, 1883, *Walter Kerr.*
    442. LAURA, b. October 28, 1865.
    443. PHILIP SCHUYLER, b. September 30, 1867.
    444. MARY, b. September 7, 1870.
    445. NEWELL, b. September 20, 1874.

78. SARAH SCHUYLER and *W. H. Lawrence.*
    446. SCHUYLER, b. February 13, 1864.
    447. HOWARD, b. July 6, 1868.
    448. CORTLANDT, b. August 3, 1870.

82. MARTHA SCHUYLER and *Chauncy L. Grant, Jr.*
    449. SCHUYLER, b. August 22, 1865.
    450. LOUIS BEDELL, b. May 24, 1867.
    451. A SON, not named, b. February 5, 1869.
    452. MAURICE VIELE, b. March 22, 1870, d. June 23, 1872.
    453. CHARLES SCHAEFFER, b. July 6, 1872.
    454. EDWARD HARGIN, b. April 11, 1875.
    455. WALTER SCHUYLER, b. January 24, 1878.
    456. EUGENE SCHUYLER, b. November 28, 1884.

83. EVELYN SCHUYLER and *Charles A. Schaeffer.*
    457. ELIZABETH ASHMEAD, b. February 1, 1872.
    458. EUGENE SCHUYLER, b. February 5, 1876, d. June 22, 1879.
    459. GEORGE SCHUYLER, b. July 8, 1878.
    460. GERTRUDE KING, b. December 27, 1882.

SAMUEL H. GARDINER, who married Mary E. Van Rensselaer (372), was the son of Jeremiah W., son of Jeremiah, son of Jeremiah, son of Lion, son of Lion, son of David, son of Lion Gardiner, the first English proprietor of Gardiner's Island.

MARCUS LYON, who married Susan M. Schuyler (73), graduated at Yale College in 1852, has practised law, and is now county judge of Tompkins County, N. Y.

CHARLES A. SCHAEFFER, who married Evelyn Schuyler (83), is the son of the Rev. Charles W. Schaeffer, D.D., of Philadelphia. He graduated at Union College, studied in Europe, and is professor of chemistry in Cornell University.

APPENDICES.

A. The Bible Records of Nicholas Schuyler, and of Harmanus Schuyler.
B. A Family Register from a Dutch Bible.
C. The Scribner Family.
D. David Schuyler's Genealogy.
E. The Mohawk Valley Schuylers.
F. Rev. Johannes Schuyler.
G. The Philadelphia Schuylers.
H. Other Schuylers.

A.

NICHOLAS SCHUYLER'S BIBLE RECORDS, TRANSLATED FROM THE DUTCH.

1712 On the 4th of May my mother, Elizabeth Schuyler, went to bed sick, and on the 13th of the same month fell asleep in the Lord. She was buried on the 16th in the church at Schenectady.

1689 April 21. My wife Elsie Wendell was born in Albany.

1691 Sept. 18, I, Nicholas Schuyler was born in New York.

1714 Dec. 2. I, Nicholas Schuyler entered in the state of matrimony with Elsie Wendell—married in Albany by Petrus Van Driessen, preacher at Albany (1).

1715 Sunday, Sept. 4. My daughter Elizabeth was born in Albany, baptized by Dom. Van Driessen on the 18th ditto. Her godfather was father Philip Schuyler, and her godmother Margarita Livingston (2).

1717 Saturday, Oct. 26. My son Philip was born in Albany, baptized by Dom. Van Driessen on the 27th. His godfather Harmanus Wendell, his godmother Ariantie Wendell.

1720 Sunday, March 6. My daughter Ariantie was born at Schenectady, baptized on the same day by Thomas Brouwer. Her godfather my father, and her godmother my mother Catharine.

1722 Saturday, Jan. 27, my son Harmanus was born at Schenectady, baptized on the 28th by Thomas Brouwer. His godfather brother Johannes Symonsen, his godmother Sister Hester Beekman (3).

1723 Tuesday, Augt. 11. My daughter Cathrina was born at Schenectady, baptized the same day by Thomas Brouwer. Her godfather Jacobus Van Dyck, and godmother Hester Groot (4).

1725 Thursday, Augt. 18. Was born a daughter, who died in a short time, and was buried on the 19th at Schenectady.

1727 Sunday, April 2, my second Harmanus was born at Schenectady, baptized on the 3d by Thomas Brouwer. His godfather my uncle John Collins, and his godmother my Aunt Margrita Collins.

1733 Saturday, Feb. 3. My son Johannes was born at Schenectady, baptized the 4th by Reinhart Ericksen. His godfather Johannes Wendell, his godmother Ariantie Wendell.

1724 May 24. My father Philip Schuyler fell asleep in the Lord, and was buried in Schenectady.

1722 Sept. 27. My son Harmanus fell asleep in the Lord, and was buried at Schenectady.

1739 April 29. My son Philip Schuyler went to bed ill, at Oswego, N. Y., and died the same day. He was buried May 1, age, 21 yrs. 6 mos. 3 dys.

His Epitaph.

Take notice all who here pass by,
As you are now, so once was I,
But now I am as you must be,
Prepare yourselves to follow me.

1744 Sunday, Apl. 8. Between 9 and 10 o'clock my wife fell asleep in the Lord after one day's illness.

RECORDS OF HARMANUS SCHUYLER.

1748 July 3. Father Nicholas Schuyler went to rest in the Lord at the age of 57 years.

1755 Oct. 28. My brother Johannes Schuyler went to the Lord, and was buried on the 31. at the age of 22 years.

1756 Apl. 5. Father Samuel Ten Broeck died, and was buried on the 7th.

1771 July 31. Mother Ten Broeck died in Claverack, at the age of 82 years.

1729 Nov. 19. My wife Chrijstina Ten Broeck was born at Claverack, according to the records of her father, baptized at Albany by Peter Van Drissen. Her godfather Johannes Ten Broeck, her godmother her aunt Gertrude Schuyler.

1754 Sept. 4. I, Harmanus Schuyler, entered the state of matrimony with Chrijstina Ten Broeck, married at Claverack by Domine Vrelenhuyse of Albany (5).

1755 June 13. Sunday. My son Nicholas was born in Albany, baptized on the 22d. His godfather my brother Johannes Schuyler, his godmother my sister Elizabeth Staats. Baptized by Dom. Vrelenhuyse.

1757 Thursday, Nov. 17. My second son Samuel was born, baptized on the Lord's day, the 20. by Dom. Vrelenhuyse. His godmother his grandmother Maria Ten Broeck, for godfather his uncle Dirck Ten Broeck.

1760 Tuesday, Feb. 5. My daughter Elsie was born at 2 o'clock in the morning at Albany. Baptized on the 9th of March by Dominie Fremont of Claverack. Her godfather John A. Lansing, her godmother my sister Catrina (6).

1761 Nov. 29, about 3 o'clock in the afternoon my third son Dirck was born in Albany, baptized on the 6th Dec. by Dom. Westerlo. His godfather his uncle Killian Van Rensselaer, his godmother his aunt Ariantie Van Rensselaer (7).

1763 Saturday, July 30. My fourth son John was born in Albany, baptized the 7th day of August, by Dom. Westerlo. His godfather Jochem Staats, his godmother Elizabeth Richards (8).

1766 Saturday, Feb. 1. My second daughter Maria was born in Albany, baptized by Domine Westerlo. Her godfather Hendrich Van Dyck, her godmother Margreta Van Dyck (9).

1767 Oct. 18. My daughter Maria fell asleep in the Lord.

.1767 Saturday, Dec. 12, my fifth son Philip was born in Albany, baptized by Dom. Westerlo. His godfather Vuckert P. Douw, his godmother Anna Douw.

1769 Tuesday, April 25, my third daughter Maria was born. Her godfather Hendrich Van Dyck, her godmother Margreta Van Dyck.

1769 Augt. 25. My son Philip fell asleep in the Lord.

1771 Augt. 21. My sixth son Philip was born on Wednesday. His godfather Col. Philip Schuyler, his godmother Mrs. Catherine Schuyler (10).

1782 Augt. 13. My son Nicholas Schuyler was married to Shinah Simons in Lancaster, Pa., by Rev. Mr. Muhlenburgh. Her age 20 years and six months.

1783 June 15. My daughter Elsie was married to Nicholas N. Bogart of New York, in Stillwater by Mr. Dempster.

1783 Sep. 26. Died, Nicholas N. Bogart, aged 22 years 6 months and 22 days.

1784 April 16. Was born my grand child Nicholas Catherine Bogart on Friday 2 o'clock—christened by Mr. James Dempster 1st June. His godfather Nicholas Schuyler, his godmother Shinah Schuyler.

1786 June 6. My son John Schuyler was married to Hendrika Fort at Half Moon by Domine De Ronde. She is 25 years of age (11).

1787 March 7. My grandson Harmanus was born at 5 o'clock in the afternoon. Baptized by Dom. De Ronde at Whitsuntide. Godfather and mother, myself and wife Christina.

1789 June 26. My eldest daughter Mrs. Elsie Bogart was married to James Van Rensselaer.

1793 Nov. 22. My daughter Maria was married to David Van Rensselaer of Schaghticoke, at Stillwater by Domine De Ronde.

The following records in the same Bible are in English, and made by different hands ·

1796 Sep. 1. Died my father Harmanus Schuyler, aged 69 years four months and 19 days.

1811 June. Died Derick Schuyler, son of Harmanus and Christina Schuyler, at Ballston, N.Y., in his 49th year.

1812 March 25. Died at Claverack, Maria Ten Broeck, daughter of Harmanus and Christina Schuyler, aged 42 years and 11 months.

1824 November. Died, Nicholas, son of Harmanus and Christina Schuyler, at Albany in his 70th year.

1832 January. Died, Samuel, son of Harmanus and Christina Schuyler, at Albany aged 73 years.

1838 ———. Died at Albany Elsie Van Rensselaer, daughter of Harmanus and Christina Schuyler, in her 78th year.

1846 Augt. 18. Died in Ithaca, N. Y., John H. Schuyler, son of Harmanus and Christina Schuyler, aged 83 years and 19 days.

In an unfamiliar handwriting, alone by itself, stands the following:

Ira Dimick was born July 18. 1806.
Deborah Palmer (Schuyler) Dimick was born Apl. 8. 1808.
Philip Schuyler Dimick, born June 15. 1831.
Susan Ann Dimick, born Oct. 11. 1835.

On the cover of the Bible is a note in Dutch, giving the text of a sermon preached by "Mister Condit, Jan. 2. 1739, First Corinthians 15-4."

Also, "the month of June 1775 was the hottest of the year; as was also June 1793."

NOTES ON THE BIBLE RECORDS OF NICHOLAS AND HARMANUS SCHUYLER.

1. REV. PETRUS VAN DRIESSEN succeeded Dominie Lydius in the church at Albany, and, like his predecessors, gave more or less instruction to the Mohawk Indians. He soon became convinced that, if anything effectual was to be accomplished among them, they must have a church building of their own and a more steady ministry. He obtained leave to build a church, but did not for the time succeed in securing funds for its erection.

The church in Albany, built in 1656 of wood, had become too small for its requirements, and was much out of repair. It was determined to build a new one of brick on the site of the old, in State Street, at the intersection of Broadway. This was completed in 1715. The dominie records in the baptismal books, in October of that year, that his son Hendrick "was the first child baptised in the new church."

2. MARGARITA LIVINGSTON was the eldest daughter of Colonel Peter Schuyler, and the wife of Robert Livingston, Jr.

3. JOHANNES SYMONSEN (Veeder) married Susanna Wendell, and Johannes Beekman married Hester Wendell, sisters of Elsie, wife of Nicholas Schuyler, hence the terms brother and sister.

4. JACOBUS VAN DYCK was a grandson of Hendrick Van Dyck, attorney-general of New Netherlands, and a nephew of Nicholas Schuyler's mother. He was a physician in practice at Schenectady.

5. The name of THEODORUS FRELINGHUYSEN, pastor of the Dutch Church of Albany, is not correctly spelled in the record. He was the son of Rev. Theodorus Jacob

Frelinghuysen, who came to this country in 1720 as a missionary to the Dutch churches in Central New Jersey. He was well educated, and had served the church in Emden, Holland, two years before he was selected for his life-work in New Jersey. His zeal and enthusiasm were inexhaustible, and enabled him to surmount the difficulties incident to a new country, among a people who had not enjoyed the advantages of education and discipline. The church organizations were dispersed through an extensive territory, and the greater part of them were without a settled ministry. Mr. Frelinghuysen encountered much opposition, but, in spite of it, was successful in winning his way to the hearts of the people, and gathered large numbers into the churches to which he ministered.

He had five sons, all of whom embraced the profession of their father. In some respects they had a remarkable history. It was the rule and custom of the Dutch Church in America, that all their ministers should be licensed in Holland. This was a great mistake, and retarded the growth of the denomination. In conformity with this rule, two of the brothers went to Holland for ordination. On their return home, in 1753, they both died at sea. Another, after completing his studies, found the church to which he was called unwilling to bear the expense of sending him to Holland, and they endeavored to have him licensed at home. After a protracted correspondence with the classis of Amsterdam, consent was obtained, but it was three years before he was ordained. He died two weeks afterward of the small-pox. A fourth brother visited Holland, and was ordained by the classis of Amsterdam. He succeeded his father, who had died in 1747, as pastor of the Raritan and other churches, in 1750, but died four years after, away from home, while on a journey to attend an ecclesiastical assembly. He was the grand-

father of the late Theodore Frelinghuysen, chancellor of the University of the city of New York.

Theodore Frelinghuysen, eldest of the five brothers, having obtained his license in Holland, was settled over the church at Albany in 1745. He was a man of fine abilities, eloquent in the pulpit, popular in the community, and of high moral character. He was greatly beloved by his people, and had an unquestioned influence with them; not enough, however, to preserve the younger members of his flock from the worldly gayeties and follies introduced among the sober and sedate citizens by the officers of an English regiment quartered among them. Public balls were held, and an extemporized theatre was organized, in which the young officers were the actors. In spite of the good dominie's efforts in and out of the pulpit, the young people were in raptures over these new forms of amusement, and turned a deaf ear to his pleadings and warnings. Some of them in the near future had grave cause to regret that they had not heeded his admonitions.

One Monday morning Mr. Frelinghuysen found on his door-step a pair of shoes, a crust of bread, a piece of money, and a staff. He interpreted them as an allegorical message to him to leave the city. He had a peculiarly sensitive nature, and the message, as he understood it, produced a profound impression; he brooded over it, and at last resolved to leave his people for a time, until he could recover self-control and his usual flow of spirits. He determined on a voyage to the fatherland. But, while seeking relief from his cares, he was not unmindful of the interests of his beloved church on those western shores. He advised with friends, and it was decided that while in Holland he should make an effort to procure funds for the establishment of a seminary of learning, in which can-

didates for the ministry could be educated without the risk and exposure of two voyages across the ocean. He sailed from New York in October, 1759, and this is the last positively known of him. By some it was said that he was lost at sea on his outward voyage; by others, that he reached Holland, transacted his business, and on his return home wrote to his wife from London. But nothing more was heard of him, and his fate remains a mystery.

Among the deeds in the secretary's office, Albany, is one signed by Theodore Frelinghouse, on October 16, 1757, conveying to Henry Van Schaick his whole estate, real and personal; particularly a farm of two hundred acres, situate on the road between New Brunswick and Trenton, "between the three-mile run and the six-mile run;" his share in a house in New Brunswick, and his half share of a tract of land six miles square, lying between the Schoharie and Cherry Valleys, for the consideration of £3,000.

On October 21, 1757, Elizabeth and Theodorus Frelinghouse, "minister of God's Word," in consideration of £7,000, conveyed to Philip Johnse Schuyler (the future major-general) all their estate, particularly the estate "which the said Elizabeth had received from her grandparents, Captain Lancaster Syms and Catherine, his wife, from her uncles and aunts, and from her brother." The next day, for the like consideration, Philip Johnse Schuyler deeded the same property to Rev. Theodorus Frelinghouse.

6. FREMONT is so spelled in the record, but in the Church Manual it is "Fryemoet (Frymuth) Johannes Casparus." In the record it is probable the spelling conformed to the pronunciation. He was Swiss by birth, and he or his family may have subsequently changed the orthography and made the name Fremont. Was he the ancestor of General

John C. Fremont, who in 1856 was the Republican candidate for President of the United States?

7. REV. EILARDUS WESTERLO was born and educated in Holland. He was only recently licensed when he received a call from the church in Albany, then without a pastor by the disappearance of Mr. Frelinghuysen. He was only twenty-two years old, but by his character, ability, and attainments gave promise of future usefulness and influence. He possessed unusual prudence and tact for one of his age, united with Christian meekness. He was soon recognized as a power for good, not only in his church, but in the community and the surrounding country. His learning and abilities were admitted by ministers of other denominations to be of a high order, and they treated him with marked respect. His thirty years' ministry covered the most trying and exciting period of American history, beginning at the time when the contest between England and France for the possession of the continent was settled, extending through the stormy years preceding the War of Independence, through the long war, and after the peace during the years of strife and uncertainty, until the States were united by the Constitution of 1787 into a nation. He espoused the patriot cause, and gave it his warmest support. He stood in line with his countrymen and their descendants. He was no exception to the rule that the Dutch were the uncompromising opponents of the English Government and the firm supporters of the revolution. Dominie Westerlo's fortunate marriage with an estimable lady undoubtedly contributed in no small degree to his influence and success as a pastor. She was the daughter of Philip Livingston, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence, and the widow of Patroon Van Rensselaer.

8. JOCHEM STAATS was uncle by marriage of the child,

and Elizabeth Richards was a sister of his grandmother. She was a daughter of Hendrick Van Rensselaer and Catharine Van Brugh.

9. HENDRICK VAN DYCK was a physician, whose father, grandfather, and great-grandfather were also physicians, and practised in Albany. He was in the fifth generation from Hendrick Van Dyck, a former *fiscal* of New Netherland.

10. PHILIP, sixth son of Harmanus Schuyler, was born at Stillwater, to which place his father had removed from Albany about a year before. Colonel Philip Schuyler, his godfather, four years later was appointed a major-general in the Revolutionary army. Mrs. Catherine Schuyler, the colonel's wife, was daughter of John Van Rensselaer, of Claverack, and a first cousin of the child's mother.

11. REV. LAMBURTUS DE RONDE was one of the ministers of the Dutch Collegiate Church of New York. He was a Whig in the Revolution, and when the British entered New York, after the battle of Long Island, he retired to Schaghticoke, where he resided through the war and until his death, in 1795. Passing through Schaghticoke in the summer of 1881, I called on Mr. Knickerbacker at the old homestead of the Knickerbackers, and was courteously shown through the private cemetery of his family. Among the costly and handsome monuments erected to the memory of various members of the family for several generations was one over the remains of Mr. De Ronde. In a few words Mr. Knickerbacker told me its history.

It is a practice of the New York Collegiate Church to mark the graves of their deceased pastors with memorial stones. Not many years ago they resolved that the grave of De Ronde, if it could be found, should not be an exception. A committee of the consistory was appointed to carry out their wishes, which, in pursuance of their instruc-

tions, visited Schaghticoke to find the grave of their ancient pastor. His body had been deposited in one of his own fields, and not in the church graveyard. There was no one living to point out the exact spot. The field had been cultivated for scores of years, and all evidences of a grave had been long since obliterated. It seemed a difficult business to find the object of their search, until they learned that underlying the surface, only a few inches below, was soft shale rock. It was seen at once that the grave could be found, but only by feeling for it with iron bars. Men were immediately set to work to feel over acres of ground with iron fingers. An old gray-headed man chanced to pass along the road, and stopped to learn the object of such unusual work. He told them that when a small boy he had seen the dominie buried. He located the grave in a particular part of the field, but could not fix the exact spot. The men commenced work in the locality indicated, and in a short time one of the bars sunk to its haft. The ground was excavated, and the grave was found. A few bits of bone were discovered and reverently gathered up. They were deposited in the Knickerbacker cemetery, and a marble monument was erected over them.

B.

A FAMILY REGISTER FROM A DUTCH BIBLE.

SOME years since, a gentleman placed in my hands a manuscript entitled "Family Register, from a Dutch Bible," which, from its references to various families, including the Schuylers, may be of some value to genealogists. It is a copy of the records contained in a Bible belonging to the late Mrs. Henrietta Liston King, widow of Charles King, late President of Columbia College. She was a daughter of Nicholas Low, a descendant of Cornelius Low, Jr., who came into possession of the Bible in November, 1729.

The Bible had suffered the fate of many others, and had lost some of its records. Isaac Gouverneur, its original owner, had four children baptized in the Dutch Church of New York before the date of the first record of the register. He had doubtless recorded their births and baptisms, but, being on the missing leaves, they do not appear on the register. They were :

JOHANNA, bp. April 15, 1705.
MAGDALINA, bp. August 25, 1706.
SAMUEL, bp. February 29, 1708.
MARGRITA, bp. September 2, 1709.

Isaac Gouverneur was the youngest of the two sons of Nicolas Gouverneur and Machtelt de Reimer. They were of French extraction, but emigrated to New Amsterdam through Holland. His brother Abraham made the name known to history, as one of Jacob Leisler's chief supporters, Isaac being too young at the time to take any active part in politics. Later, when the Leislerian party

was in the ascendancy under Lord Bellomont, he confined himself to his mercantile pursuits, in which he was very successful. On July 24, 1704, he married Sarah, daughter of Dr. Samuel Staats; of whose estate he and Andries Coeymans were the executors. His portrait is among the family pictures of one of the Morris family of Morrisania, N. Y.

The Register.

In this year of our Lord Jesus Christ 1709, on the 3. of October, departed this life our son Samuel, and was buried in our Dutch Church, near to my wife's mother.

In the year of our Lord 1711, on the 31. of March, Saturday afternoon, between 2 and 3 o'clock, was born a Daughter, was named Alida, in good health, and was baptized by the Reverend Galterus Du Bois, Comper. For godmother Alida Gertrude has presented her for baptism. Died 2. September 1758, New Style.

In the year of our Lord Jesus Christ 1713, on the 7. of August, on Tuesday morning, at 9 o'clock, was born our second son, and was named Nicholas—was baptized by the Reverend Galt. Du Bois—Godfather father Staats, Godmother sister Maria Gouverneur (1).

In the year of our Lord Jesus Christ 1714, on the 14. of October, Thursday evening, between 8 and 9 o'clock, was born our fifth daughter, and called Sarie—was baptized by the Reverend Galterus Dubos—Godfather Stephanus Van Cortlandt, Godmother Johanna Staats (2).

In the year of our Lord Jesus Christ 1715, on the 27. of September, our father Samuel Staats died, on Tuesday afternoon, at 2 o'clock. He was buried in the Dutch Church near his wife. His age was 58 years in the month of May last past (3).

In the year of our Lord 1716, on the 5. of March, on Monday morning, at six o'clock, was born our sixth daugh-

ter, and was called Gertrude—was baptized by the Reverend Dubos. Godfather Philip Schuyler, Godmother Elizabeth Schuyler (4).

In the year of our Lord Jesus Christ 1720, on the 24. of February, on Wednesday morning at 6 o'clock, was born our son, and named Samuel. Godfather Andries Coeymans, Godmother Tryntje Staats—Baptized by the Reverend Galterus Dubos, in our church (5).

In the year of our Lord Jesus Christ 1721, on the 27. of September, on Wednesday at 11 o'clock in the evening, died my Mother, aged 77 years, eight months and nine days, and was buried in our church.

In the year of our Lord Jesus Christ 1721, on the 3. of October, on Tuesday morning between 6 and 7 o'clock, was born our fourth son, and was called Isaac. Godfather John Shraat, Godmother Mientje Seeger Reynders. Baptized by Revd Galterus Dubos.

In the year of our Lord Jesus Christ 1723, on the first day of September, on a Saturday, was born our fifth son Gerbrant Abraham. Godfather Nicholas Gouverneur, Godmother Gertrude Rynders. Baptized by the Revd Hendrikus, in Coeymen's church (6).

In the year of our Lord Jesus Christ 1726, on the 8. of November, on Tuesday, between 11 and 12 o'clock, died my dear and affectionate wife, and was buried in our Dutch Church, close and along side of her father's grave (7).

In the year of our Lord 1728, on the 5th of August, on Tuesday, at 2 o'clock, died my dear and affectionate father; and was buried in our Dutch Church alongside of

In the year of our Lord 1741, on the 2. of May, died Mr. Abraham Gouverneur, son of Isaac Gouverneur (at the house of John Broughton) and was buried in the vault of Andries Coeymans.

In the year of our Lord 1729, on the 9/20 November, I, Cornelius Low Jr. purchased this present Bible from the Executors of my father-in-law Isaac Gouverneur, deceased, for two golden pistoles, or f56. (currency) (8).

On the 20/31 March $\frac{1699}{1700}$, on Thursday at 4 o'clock in the morning, I, Cornelius Low Jr. was born in the city of New York, and there baptized by Pastor John Heermans—Godfather Grandfather, Godmother Grand Mother H.: (9).

On the 9/20 April 1704, on Monday at 4 o'clock in the afternoon, was born my wife, in the city of New York, (at the house of Thorn Lewis) and was baptized by Father Dubois; Godfather her grandfather Doctor Staats, and Godmother her grand Mother Nissepat (10).

On the 10/21 May 1729, on Saturday evening at 9 o'clock, I, Cornelius Low Jr. entered into the state of marriage with Johanna Gouverneur performed by Pastor Dubois at the residence of her father.

On the 2/13 May 1730, on Saturday night between 11 and 12 o'clock, our first son was born, at the Raritan Landing, in New Jersey; and died on the 4th of the same month, at 2 o'clock on Monday morning; he lived about 26 hours, and was buried in the vault of Mr. Delabogtealn, near his house.

On the 2/13 of April 1731, on Thursday, at 3 o'clock in the morning, was born our second son, at the Raritan Landing, and was baptized in the 3d Mile Run Church, by Pastor Cornelis Coens, minister of Aquackanonck, on the 15 the June following; he was named Isaac; Godfather Brother Nicolaas Gouverneur, Godmother Sister Magdalena Hall (11).

On the 9/20 January 1732/3, on Sunday evening, between 10 and 11 o'clock, was born our first daughter at the Raritan Landing, and was baptized in the Middletown Church at the Neversink, on the 4th of February follow-

ing, by Pastor Haeghoort, minister there, and was named Sarah. Godfather brother Abraham Low, Godmother sister Margareta Gouverneur.

On the 13/24. July 1734, on Saturday morning at about 2 o'clock, was born our second daughter, at the Raritan Landing, and was baptized in the 3d Mile Run Church, on the 13. September following, by Pastor Haeghoort, minister at Nevisink, after the sermon by Pastor Dubois, minister at New York; and was named Margaretta. Godfather brother Roger French, Godmother sister A——. Died July 8. 1755 in New York, and was buried in the old Church.

On the 1. January 1735/6, on Thursday night at about 12 o'clock, was born our third son, at the Raritan Landing, and was baptized in the old Church at New York by Pastor Boel, on the 14. of March—was named Cornelius. Godfather Lewis Morris jr. Godmother sister Sarah Gouverneur. Died on the 3. of October 1769, and was buried at Brunswick (12).

On the 2/13 August 1737, on Tuesday at about 2 o'clock in the afternoon, was born our fourth son, at the Raritan Landing, and was baptized in the German church at Second River by Pastor Haeghoort, minister there, on the 18. September following, and was called Samuel. Godfather brother John Low, Godmother his wife Sarah Provoost.

Was shot dead on Lake Ontario, on the 24. June 1756, in the vicinity of an island near Quadraques.

On the 19/30 March 1738/9, on Monday at about 5 o'clock in the morning, was born our fifth son, at the Raritan Landing, and was baptized in the German church at Second River, by Pastor Haeghoort, minister there, on Easter day, being the 22. day of April following, and was called Nicolas. Godfather brother Wilhelmus Low, Godmother sister Gertrude Ogden.

On the 8/19 October 1741, on Thursday morning, at about half an hour before ten o'clock was born our sixth son in my new house on the Mountain, at the Raritan Landing, and was baptized by Pastor Haeghoort at his house on Second River, on the 24. January 1741/2; and was called William. Godfather brother Samuel Gouverneur, Godmother Johanna Van Courtlandt (13).

On the 26 March (6 April) 1743, on Saturday evening at about 9 o'clock, was born our seventh son in my house on the Mountain at the Raritan Landing, and was baptized in the German Church at Second River by Pastor Haeghoort on the 12. June, and was called John. Godfather Brother Isaac Gouverneur, Godmother Maria Maghtilda, the wife of Nath: Gouverneur.

On the 10/21 December 1743, on Saturday at about 3 o'clock in the afternoon, died our youngest son John, and was buried in the vault of Hendrick Vroom.

On 18/29 February 1744/5, on Monday morning at 4 o'clock, was born our third daughter, at the Landing, and was baptized in the German Church, on the Church lot of Millstone, on the 4th of April by Pastor Arondeus; and was called Johanna. Godfather brother John Broughton, Godmother Maria Morris, wife of Thomas Lawrence jr. (14).

On the 22. of December /2 January 1746/7 on Monday morning at 8 o'clock, was born our fourth daughter, at the Landing, and was baptized on the 5. of April, in the barn of Arie Moolman, by our Pastor Arondeus, and was named Gertrude. Godfather David Ogden, Godmother Gertrude Coeymans jr.

On the 20. September /1 October 1747, on a Sunday morning about half past 2 o'clock died my daughter Gertrude, and was buried in the vault of Henry Vroome.

On the 4/15. January 1747/8, on Monday evening at half after eight o'clock, was born our fifth daughter, at the Landing, and there baptized on the 21. February following, by Pastor Arondeus, and was named Gertrude. Godfather my son Isaac, and Godmother my daughter Sarah.

On the 29. August /10 September 1748, on Monday at 6 o'clock died my very beloved and affectionate father, Cornelius Low, and was buried in Newark. His age was 78½ years less seven days.

On the 1/12 December 1749, on Friday about 4 o'clock in the afternoon, died my son William, and was buried in the vault of Henry Vroome.

On the 18/29. December, 1751, on Wednesday about noon, died my daughter Johanna, and was buried in the vault of Henry Vroom.

On the 18th of March 1761, died my very dear and affectionate mother Margareta Low; and was buried (along side of my father) at Newark—Aged 82½ years.

On the 17. October 1763, died my very dear and very affectionate wife Johanna Low; and was buried in the vault of Henry Vroom.

Notes on the Register.

1. Maria Gouverneur was a daughter of Jacob Leisler, and married, first, Jacob Milborne; and, secondly, Abraham Gouverneur, brother of the child's father.

2. Stephanus Van Cortlandt was the fourth son of the first proprietor of the Cortlandt manor, who had married the child's aunt, Catalina Staats, about a year before the baptism.

3. This is the first authentic record I have seen of the death and age of Dr. Samuel Staats. It serves to put to

rest the hypothetical stories of his marriage to an East India Begum, and his return to Holland after the English came, 1664, where several of his children were born and educated. As I have given some account of him on another page, it only remains to say something more of his family.

It is said that he had nine children, but I have found only six, all daughters, four of whom were baptized in the church at New York :

SARAH, m. June 24, 1704, *Isaac Gouverneur.*
GERTRUDE, m. 1, May 25, 1711, *Peter Nagle.*
m. 2, June 13, 1716, *Andries Coeymans.*
CATALINA, m. August 28, 1713, *Stephen Van Cortlandt.*
ANN ELIZABETH m. August 28, 1713, *Philip Schuyler.*
JOHANNA, m. June 26, 1717, *Anthony White.*
TRYNTJE, m. March 17, 1723, *Lewis Morris, Jr.*[1]

In 1716 Philip Schuyler had leave to purchase a tract of land near Schoharie for "himself and the rest of the heirs of Dr. Staats." The next year a survey was ordered of said tract for Rip Van Dam and "Philip Schuyler for himself and the rest of the heirs of Samuel Staats, deceased." On August 6, 1724, Lewis Morris, Jr., and Andries Coeymans petitioned for a warrant of survey of about two thousand acres of land near Schoharie, "purchased of the Indians by Philip Schuyler and Rip Van Dam." On July 20, 1726, a patent having been issued for 3,500 acres, the parties in interest agreed upon a division. It then appeared that there were six others besides the "heirs of Samuel Staats" who were partners in the land, and it was agreed "that, as all the parties had borne an equal share of the expense in procuring the patent," the tract should be divided into seven shares, one of which was allotted to

[1] Catalina is Spanish, and Tryntje is Dutch; both are Catherine in English.

the heirs of Samuel Staats, to wit: Lewis Morris, Jr., Andries Coeymans, Ann Elizabeth, widow of Philip Schuyler, deceased; Isaac Gouverneur, Stephen Van Cortlandt, and Johanna (Hannah) White, widow of Anthony White, each of whom was entitled to one-sixth of the one-seventh of the 3,500 acres (*Deeds, No.* 12, *Secretary's Office*).

4. PHILIP SCHUYLER was the oldest son of Brandt Schuyler and Cornelia Van Cortlandt. The godmother was his wife.

5. ANDRIES COEYMANS was the son of Barent Coeymans, a miller, who came to Beverwyck in 1636, and had charge of Patroon Van Rensselaer's mills for about nine years, after which he prosecuted the business in different localities on his own account, until 1673, when he purchased a tract of land below Albany, having a frontage on the river of ten miles and a depth of twelve miles west into the woods. It is now known as the town of Coeymans. Andries Coeymans chose a safer locality than the frontiers, and, like many others of his neighbors, he removed to New Jersey. He settled on the Raritan, where he had purchased a large tract of land.

6. NICHOLAS GOUVERNEUR was the son of Abraham Gouverneur and Mary Leisler. Gertrude Rynders was the daughter of Barent Rynders and Hester Leisler. Soon after this date they were married. Coeyman's church probably refers to the church in which Andries Coeymans worshipped. There was no church at Coeymans on the Hudson until 1793.

7. The record of his wife's death was the last made by Isaac Gouverneur. The next was made by one of his children, recording *his* death; and that which follows notes the death of his fifth son, Gerbrant Abraham.

8. The first notice we have of CORNELIUS LOW, Sr., is the record of his marriage in the Dutch Church of New

York: "Married, July 5. 1695, Cornelius Louw of the Esopus to Margareta Van Borsum of New York, both residing here." His wife was a daughter of Tymen Van Borsum and Grietje Fockens.

His name appears only occasionally in the public records; often enough, however, to indicate that he was a prosperous merchant. His thirteen children were baptized in the Dutch Church, as follows:

1. Tymen, February 23, 1696.
2. Petrus, October 17, 1697.
3. Cornelius, March 31, 1700.
4. Johannes, September 9, 1702.
5. Margreitje, July 16, 1704.
6. Elizabeth, July 21, 1706.
7. Abraham, August 11, 1708.
8. Hendrick, May 14, 1710.
9. Elizabeth, October 1, 1712.
10. Wilhelmus, November 27, 1714.
11. Annatje, October 10, 1716.
12. Maria, July 9, 1718.
13. Helena, September 14, 1720.

There were four other families by the name of Low in New York who had children baptized in the church during the above period, and another, Anthony Low, owned a sloop plying between New York and New Plymouth, in 1690; but whether they were related I have been unable to learn.

Cornelius Low, Jr., removed to Raritan, N. J., where he resided until his death. He was a surveyor, and assisted in defining the bounds of some important estates. The names of his sons afterward appear among those of Kingston and its vicinity.

9. The church record of the baptism of CORNELIUS LOW, JR., differs in some particulars from the record made by himself. Rev. Galterus Du Bois was the pastor of the church, and not John Heermans, whose name does not appear among the ministers of the Reformed Dutch Church in the manual. Jan (John) Heermans and his wife, Elizabeth Blausjan, are recorded as his sponsors, and not grandfather and grandmother. Probably the Bible record was made from memory, which was at fault.

10. MACHTELT DE REIMER, after the death of Nicholas Gouverneur, her first husband, married Jasper Nissepat.

11. The godparents were the brother and sister of the child's mother, Magdalena Gouverneur having married John Hall.

12. LEWIS MORRIS, JR., was the second proprietor of the manor of Morrisania. His grandfather, Captain Richard Morris, came to New York in 1670, and engaged in business. He purchased a farm of five hundred acres "on the main" opposite the village of Harlem, on which he built a dwelling-house and other structures. Both he and his wife, who was a lady of fortune, died in 1672, within a few months of each other, leaving an only son not yet a year old, whom Mathias Nicoll, secretary of the province, termed "one poor blossom, of whom yet there may be great hope." The child's uncle, Colonel Lewis Morris, of Barbadoes, arrived in September, 1673, assumed the guardianship of his nephew, and administered the estate left by his brother Richard. He took possession of the farm, and made it his home. He purchased more lands of the Indians, and procured a patent from Governor Andros for about two thousand acres, including the farm of his deceased brother. Dying without direct heirs, his nephew Lewis came into possession of his estate, and, in 1697, re-

ceived letters patent from Governor Fletcher erecting it into the "lordship, or manor, of Morrisania."

In his early years Lewis Morris, now proprietor of a manor, then a "poor blossom," did not give "great hope" for the future. He was restive under control, and on one occasion his offence against his uncle's authority was so flagrant that, to escape his displeasure, he ran away. He spent some time in Virginia, and then wandered off to the West Indies, where he supported himself with his pen. After some years of Bohemian life, he returned to his uncle, and was cheerfully forgiven all his past offences. He married a daughter of James Graham, attorney-general of the province, and settled down to serious work. His education was defective, but, by the force of his genius and his strong will, he rose to eminence in the provinces both of New York and New Jersey. For nearly twenty years he was the chief justice of the one, and for many years the governor of the other, while a member of the king's Council in both. Few men, if any, exerted a greater influence among the people, or in the councils of these provinces.

Lewis Morris, Jr., inherited his father's talents, and his eccentricities as well. He was much in public life, and held several high positions. In politics he affiliated with the old Leislerians, or, as they termed themselves, the party of the people. He married, first, Tryntje, youngest daughter of Dr. Samuel Staats, by whom he had three sons and a daughter. His second son, Staats Long, entered the English army, and rose to the rank of general. By marriage with the Dowager Duchess of Gordon, he was connected to the higher nobility of Scotland, and was assured of a high position in his profession. Lewis Morris, Jr., married, secondly, Sarie Gouverneur, whose baptism is recorded in the register, and who, as godmother, stood

with him at the baptism of Cornelius Low. Their eldest son was the well-known jurist and statesman, Gouverneur Morris.

13. JOHANNA, daughter of Stephen Van Cortlandt and Catalina Staats.

14. MARIA, daughter of Lewis Morris, Jr., and Tryntje Staats. She was married, in May preceding, to Thomas Lawrence, Jr., of Philadelphia.

C.

THE SCRIBNER FAMILY.

THE name was originally *Scrivener*, a professional writer, or conveyancer. There were at least four families in England named Scrivener, who were the owners of considerable landed estates. The first of the name in America was Matthew Scrivener, a member of the Council of the Virginia colony in 1607. It does not appear that he had a family, although he was commended by Captain John Smith as "a very wise understanding Gentleman." He was drowned in the James River a year or two after his arrival.

Benjamin Scrivener, of Norwalk, Conn., is reputed to be the ancestor of the Scribners in the United States. The little we know of him and his family is contained in the Norwalk town records, from which we learn that he married Hannah Crampton, March 5, 1680, and that he had four sons, of whom Matthew, the youngest, is the ancestor of the line now to be considered.

Benjamin, the ancestor, adhered to the name Scrivener, for in a deed of land to his son Matthew, bearing date September 21, 1741, when he must have been over eighty years old, he signs Benjamin Scrivener. The town clerk, when recording the names of his grandchildren born after 1742, wrote Scribner, doubtless by direction of their parents. From that time Scrivener disappears, and Scribner becomes the surname of all of Benjamin Scrivener's descendants. Such changes were not unusual in those early times.

Although we know nothing more of Matthew Scribner than that he married Martha Smith, of Long Island, on November 10, 1742, and had nine children, whose names and dates of birth are registered among the muniments of Norwalk, we know the history of many of his descendants, much of which is exceedingly interesting, to which I shall briefly refer in my notes.

The Scribner Genealogy.

1. BENJAMIN SCRIVENER and *Hannah Crampton.*
   m. at Norwalk, Conn., March 5, 1680.
   - 2. THOMAS, b. March 31, 1681.
   - 3. JOHN, m. March, 9, 1710, *Deborah Lees.*
   - 4. ABRAHAM, m. *Sarah* ——.
   - 5. MATTHEW, m. November 10, 1742, *Martha Smith.*

3. JOHN SCRIVENER and *Deborah Lees.*
   - 6. MARY, b. March, 1711.
     m. October 9, 1744, *Micajah Nash.*
   - 7. REBECCA, b. October 12, 1712.

4. ABRAHAM SCRIBNER and *Sarah* ——.
   - 8. ABRAHAM, b. June 28, 1745.
   - 9. SARAH, b. October 15, 1746.
   - 10. RHODA, b. October 18, 1748.
   - 11. ANN, b. April 7, 1751.
   - 12. LEVI, b. June 28, 1753.
   - 13. RACHEL, b. August 28, 1755.
   - 14. MOSES, b. June 30, 1757.
   - 15. JONATHAN, b. September 5, 1759.
   - 16. EZRA, b. June 19, 1761.
   - 17. ESTHER, b. August 3, 1763.
   - 18. SILAS, b. September 15, 1765.

5. MATTHEW SCRIBNER and *Martha Smith.*
   - 19. NATHANIEL, b. December 23, 1743.
     m. *Phebe Kellogg.*
   - 20. MATTHEW, b. February 7, 1746.
     m. 1, *Abigail Rogers.*
     m. 2, —— *Porter.*
   - 21. MARTHA, b. February 20, 1748.
   - 22. ENOCH, b. August 29, 1750.
     m. March 22, 1782, *Betsy Benedict.*

23. ELIJAH, b. June 25, 1753; killed in battle in the Revolutionary War.
24. JEREMIAH, b. December 15, 1755, d. y.
25. KEZIAH, b. January 20, 1758.
m. *Thomas Hawley.*
26. ABIGAIL, b. November 9, 1760.
m. —— *Edmonds.*
27. ELIZABETH, b. December 10, 1763.
m. *Dr.* —— *Spaulding.*

19. NATHANIEL SCRIBNER and *Phebe Kellogg.*
28. JAMES, m. 1, —— ——.
m. 2, —— ——.
29. ELIPHALET, m. —— *Bradley*, of New Haven; d. s. p. at Port-au-Prince, Hayti.
30. JEMIMA, m. *Samuel Penny*, of New York City.
31. JOEL, b. 1772.
m. *Mary Bull*, of Milford, Conn.
32. PHEBE, m. 1, *William Waring.*
m. 2, *Thomas Strong.*
33. MARTHA, m. *Uriah Rogers Scribner.*
34. ELIJAH, d. in New York City, 1812, unmarried.
35. ESTHER, m. *Dr. David Morey Hale*, of Indiana.
36. NATHANIEL, m. May 1, 1815, *Elizabeth Edmonds.*
37. ANNA, d. unmarried, at Morristown, N. J.
38. ELIZABETH, m. *Dr. Jeremiah Wood*, of Indiana.
39. ABNER, m. *Mrs. Deool.*
40. LUCINDA, d. y.

20. MATTHEW SCRIBNER and *Abigail Rogers.*
41. URIAH ROGERS, d. January 7, 1853, aged 75 years.
m. 1. *Martha Scribner.*
m. 2, *Betsey Hawley*, d. December 6, 1871, aged 85 years.

20. MATTHEW SCRIBNER and —— *Porter.*
42. ELIJAH PORTER, m. *Hannah Smith*, d. s. p.
43. SARAH, d. unmarried.
44. CAROLINE, m. —— *Kirkland.*
45. ABIGAIL, m. —— *Kendall*, of Virginia.
46. SAMUEL, m. *Julia Ambler.*

22. ENOCH SCRIBNER and *Betsy Benedict.*
47. JEREMIAH, b. February 19, 1782.
48. WILLIAM, b. June 14, 1783.
49. MARY, b. September 15, 1785.
50. GEORGE, b. March 11, 1788.

51. SALLY, b. September 14, 1790.
52. CHARLES, b. March 24, 1793.
53. JOSEPH, b. October 30, 1796.

28. JAMES SCRIBNER and 1, —— ——.
2, —— ——.

54. ALANSON, d. s. p.
55. ISAAC, d. s. p.
56. A DAUGHTER.

31. JOEL SCRIBNER and *Mary Bull.*
57. HARVEY, b. August 3, 1798, d. s. p. February 11, 1836.
m. —— ——.
58. WILLIAM AUGUSTUS, b. February 19, 1800, d. April 16, 1868.
m. 1, *Caroline Matilda Chapman.*
m. 2, *Harriet P. Hale.*
59. LUCY MARIA, b. July 29, 1802, d. unmarried.
60. MARY LUCINDA, b. February 28, 1804.
m. *Dr. Asahel Clapp.*
61. ELIPHALET, b. January 6, 1806, d. y.
62. JULIA ANN, b. April 7, 1808.
m. *Rev. Leander Cobb.*
63. PHEBE, b. January 26, 1810.
m. *James C. Davis.*
64. HARRIET NAOMI, b. February, 1816, d. December 2, 1832.

36. NATHANIEL SCRIBNER and *Elizabeth Edmonds.*
65. LUCINDA, m. *William C. Shipman.*

39. ABNER SCRIBNER and *Mrs. Deool.*
66. BRADFORD.
67. BENJAMIN FRANKLIN.

41. URIAH ROGERS SCRIBNER and *Martha Scribner* (33) were married in the parish church (Congregational) at Green's Farms, Conn., October 30, 1803.
68. ABIGAIL, d. y.
69. MATILDA, b. July 26, 1809.
m. April 18, 1839, *George W. Schuyler.*

41. URIAH ROGERS SCRIBNER and *Betsey Hawley.*
70. EDWARD, b. March 28, 1813, d. January 7, 1864.
m. *E. Gertrude Brown.*
71. JANE, d. y.
72. MARIA, b. 1816.
m. *Zalmon S. Mead.*
73. JULIA, d. y.

74. WILLIAM, b. January 20, 1820, d. March 3, 1884.
m. 1, *Caroline E. Hitchcock.*
m. 2, *Julia Sayre.*
75. CHARLES, b. February, 1821, d. August 26, 1871.
m. *Emma Blair.*
76. HENRY, b. June 28, 1822, d. September 10, 1882.
m. *Abigail Farnham.*
77. JANE, b. November 28, 1824.
m. *Samuel P. Wisner*, d. 1885.
78. JULIA, m. *Clinton Hitchcock.*
79. WALTER, d. y.
80. WALTER, d. October 15, 1873.
m. *Hattie Kimball.*

46. SAMUEL SCRIBNER[1] and *Julia Ambler.*
81. JULIA, m. *Rev.* —— *Briggs*, of Baltimore, Md.
82. MARY, m. *Frederick Mead*, of New York City.
83. GERTRUDE, m. —— *Rogers*, of Baltimore, Md.
84. HENRIETTA.

NOTES ON MATTHEW SCRIBNER'S (5) GENEALOGY.

Not long after his marriage, NATHANIEL SCRIBNER (19) removed to the present town of South East, Putnam County, N. Y., where he had purchased a farm. The country, though lying so near to the provincial capital, was comparatively new; the whole tract now known as Putnam County having been in the possession of one man, Adolph Philipse, of New York, who held the land at prices too high for the encouragement of settlers. At the time Mr. Scribner settled in the place there were few inhabitants, all farmers like himself, living at long distances from each other, and having only few of the conveniences and privileges of older communities. He built a large house not far from the church in which the Rev. Elisha Kent officiated so long that the country thereabout came to be known as "Kent's Parish."

The Scribners were soon known to be very hospitable,

[1] Mr. Scribner resided in Baltimore the greater part of his life.

and their house became the gathering-place for the widely scattered members of the congregation, who came to church, not in carriages, nor even in country wagons, for there were no roads, but on foot and on horseback. In the interval between the two services they were accustomed to assemble in Mr. Scribner's comfortable rooms, and spend an hour in conversation while partaking of the lunch they had brought from home, or more frequently of that provided by their host. In this way Mr. Scribner became widely known and respected as a man and Christian.

When the War of Independence commenced, he was among the first to identify himself with the republican cause. He was commissioned a lieutenant on March 15, 1776, and a few months later was promoted to a captaincy. Having early in the struggle received a wound in battle which disabled one of his arms, he was stationed with his company on the borders of the "Neutral Ground," not far from his home, and thus lost the opportunities which occur in the regular service for further advancement. At the close of the war society was disorganized and industry paralyzed, more perhaps in that section of the State than in any other, so that Captain Scribner found it necessary in his crippled condition to resort to other means than farming to gain suitable provision for his now large family. Happily he was provided with a brain to devise other methods to secure an income, and a will to carry them out. He returned to Connecticut and built a tide-water flouring-mill at Norwalk, which he sold. He then built a larger one, and a residence for himself at Compo on the Sound. It was so successful that he and some of his relatives were encouraged to build a large one at Milford, which, on account of the mistakes of the millwright, proved a failure and his financial ruin. The law of im-

prisonment for debt was in force, and, to avoid its penalties, he concealed himself until an arrangement could be made with his creditors. This once happy and pious family was now separated, never again to be gathered under one roof.

As soon as his affairs were settled, Captain Scribner began business anew, finding new fields for his business activity. The prosecution of his plans required a journey to Georgia, and while travelling in that new and sparsely settled State he was struck down with fever. Unable to find proper accommodations, or to receive nursing and medical care, he soon yielded to the disease. He died in 1799 among strangers, far from home, with no friend to perform the offices of affection at his bedside while living, or after death tenderly and reverently to commit his body to the grave. The letter announcing his death was carefully preserved by his widow, and kept on her person until she died.

PHEBE KELLOGG, the wife of Captain Scribner, was the daughter of Epenetus, son of Samuel, son of Daniel Kellogg, who settled in Norwalk, Conn., 1655, and died in that town in 1688. The family was one of the most respectable of the many respectable families in that locality. Daniel Kellogg was a representative to the General Court.

In many respects she was a remarkable woman. She had quick perceptions, and was ready with expedients to execute what her mind conceived. She faithfully and wisely watched over the morals and habits of her numerous children, while she did not neglect her more public duties to the church and society. She was really a "mother in Israel," and a true mother in her family. She had no time for idle amusements, but was fully occupied with her domestic and other duties. The following anecdote illustrates some phases of her character :

On one occasion, in the spring of the year, her husband returned home with a leave of absence from his company of four and twenty hours. She noticed that his stockings were much worn, and immediately directed her eldest son to clip some wool from the sheep in the field near the house. The wool so procured was quickly washed, dried, carded, spun, and by her own nimble fingers knit into a pair of long stockings, which were on the captain's feet before his furlough had expired.

Some years after the death of her husband, in connection with three of her daughters, she opened a school for girls at Morristown, N. J., and was eminently successful. It was while she was thus engaged that some of her sons caught the "western fever." The territory of the northwest had been opened for settlement. Its vast rivers and rich prairies presented an inviting field to the imaginations of the young and enterprising. Some of her sons settled on the Ohio River, six hundred miles below Pittsburg, Pa., and invited their mother and sisters to join them. It was a long and fatiguing journey for a woman of her age to undertake. Nothing but a mother's love could have induced her to break up her pleasant establishment, surrounded with all the comforts of civilized life, and go so far from home to encounter the privations of a new country just rescued from the savages. She made the sacrifice, and joined her children in New Albany, Ind., in the fall of 1815. Seven of her then nine living children were with her at the close of the following year. For the first time since the death of her husband they were reunited into one family. Mrs. Scribner was soon established in a large commodious house, where for twelve years she dispensed her old-time hospitality. She and three of her family organized the church, and commenced a system of religious effort which laid the founda-

tions of a moral and educated society. She died on September 25, 1827, at the age of seventy-nine.

Four of Captain Scribner's sons at one time were engaged in the mercantile business in the city of New York. One of them, Elijah (34), died in early manhood, leaving his accumulations, which were considerable, to his mother. Another, Eliphalet (29), removed to Port-au-Prince, Hayti, and prospered in business until the negro insurrection deprived him of his property. He was one of the very few white men whose lives were saved by faithful blacks. The other two were among the founders of New Albany.

JOEL SCRIBNER (31) and his brother-in-law, William Waring, with their families, removed to Cincinnati, O., in the fall of 1811, and established a business which was broken up the next year by the war with England. Mr. Waring was an officer of a cavalry company which volunteered into the United States service and marched to the frontier. Nathaniel and Abner Scribner joined their brother Joel at Cincinnati in the fall of 1812, and together the three brothers went on horseback through Kentucky on an exploring tour, in search of a locality on which to build a town. They selected a site at the foot of the falls, or rapids, of the Ohio River, on the Indiana side, and purchased the land. It was covered with a dense forest, and had no habitation nearer than across the river at the head of the falls. Early the next year they were at work clearing the ground, laying out streets, and building a log-house, to which the families of Joel Scribner and Mr. Waring were removed before it was finished. In the fall of 1815 they were joined by their mother, their eldest brother, James, and sister Esther; and the next year by their sister Elizabeth. Together they founded the city of New Albany, Ind., organized the First Presbyterian Church

of four members, and a school since known as the Scribner High School.

The brothers Joel, Nathaniel, and Abner were the proprietors of the land on which the city was built, but the other members of the family rendered them important assistance in their enterprise. Nathaniel, the best qualified to conduct a large business, early fell a victim to fever, leaving his brothers to struggle on alone. Like many other promising undertakings, it put little money into the pockets of its projectors, who, after a few years, by an unfortunate endorsement for a large amount of money which they were obliged to pay, lost their entire interest in the lands of their original purchase.

I cannot close this part of my sketch without giving some account of PHEBE SCRIBNER (32), the twin sister of my wife's mother.

Like her mother, she was a woman of more than ordinary ability, of deep-seated piety, and high personal integrity. Her life was full of the vicissitudes of fortune, as she sometimes enjoyed a handsome competence, and at others was reduced to the verge of poverty. But, however fortune smiled or frowned, she always bore herself as a Christian gentlewoman, and never lost confidence in an all-wise Providence.

While her husband, Mr. Waring, was with the army on the frontiers she with her children accompanied her brother Joel and his family to the wilderness, where he and his brothers had resolved to build a city. It was her home for the most of her future life. At times she was possessed of considerable property, acquired by her own industry and business enterprise. Her maternal love had such a strength and fervor that she was easily deceived by the false representations of the husband of her youngest daughter. He proved a scoundrel, and caused the loss of

her whole estate. Instead of sitting down with vain lamentations, the brave woman went to work to discharge the obligations that she had incurred, and paid them in full, principal and interest, refusing all offers of a compromise; after which she again acquired a respectable property.

Like her mother, she taught her children "to fear the Lord and keep his commandments." Her eldest son, Jesse Waring, died at an early age; her second, Nathaniel, resided in New Orleans, and was a large proprietor in steamboats on the Southwestern rivers. Moses, her third son, was a prosperous merchant of Mobile, Ala. In the late civil war he was a pronounced Unionist, and when the city was captured by General Canby he was the first called in consultation by the Union general. George Waring, the youngest, settled in Little Rock, Ark., and was prosperously engaged in trade until some unfortunate endorsements ruined him. Before the outbreak of our late civil war he brought his family north and settled them in a new home, and then returned to arrange his business affairs. He died before he was able to rejoin his family.

Her daughter, Martha Ann Waring, was educated in the first schools of Cincinnati, and on her return home was married to Captain Aquila Bartow, by whom she had one son, *Morcy Hale Bartow*, now of New York City, and one daughter, who died in infancy. After the death of Captain Bartow she visited her friends in New York, where she was remarked as a beautiful and accomplished woman. She afterward married Benjamin Gonzales, an able civil engineer, by whom she had seven children, four of whom died young. Her eldest living daughter married George W. Foster, of Prairie du Chien, Wis.; Blanche, another daughter, is the wife of William M. Walker, of Logansport, Ind.; Ella, the youngest of her children, a highly gifted and interesting girl, died at the age of seventeen.

After the death of Mr. William Waring, his widow, Phebe Scribner Waring, married Thomas Strong, of New Albany, by whom she had two daughters, Maria Louisa and Cornelia. The first married Nelson Van Deventer; the second was thrice married—first, to Thomas Blum; secondly, to Rodolph Walker; and, thirdly, to James Speak.

Mrs. Phebe Scribner Strong survived all her father's family. She lived to a great age, retaining her mental faculties to the last. She died at the Tippecanoe battle-ground, Indiana, in the house of her daughter, Mrs. Gonzales, in her ninetieth year.

The descendants of Captain Nathaniel Scribner in the direct line are not numerous. Of his six sons only two, Joel and Abner, transmitted the name. Joel is now represented by his grandson, Harvey Augustus Scribner, cashier of the New Albany National Bank; Abner by his sons, Bradford Scribner and General Benjamin Franklin Scribner, of Indiana.

Of MATTHEW SCRIBNER (20) we only know that he was a graduate of Yale College, and a minister of the Gospel, settled over an orthodox Congregational church in Massachusetts. Not one of his sermons in manuscript or print is known to exist, not even a letter, so that we can form no estimate of his abilities.

Being the son of a farmer in moderate circumstances, he apparently secured the means to carry him through college by teaching. For some time before he entered Yale he was a resident of Elizabethtown, N. J., and was there a member of a society for mental improvement. When he left the place the society gave him a certificate, of which the following is a copy:

"To all to whom it may concern.

"Whereas Matthew Scribner hath been a member of

the Society called Socialis Societas in Elizabethtown and during his residence among us hath behaved himself as becomes a Christian and a useful member of that Society; and hath now removed from us, and we being willing to testify the regard and affection we have for him not only on the account of his publick Charactre but his personal merit and worth have unanimously voted that our Clerk do present this publick Testimony of our esteem and affection for him—

"By order of the Society

"John Jolive, Clerk.

"October 7th, 1771."

Mr. Scribner graduated from Yale College with the class of 1775. His diploma is on a bit of parchment eight by nine inches, and is signed by "N. Daggett, Praeses, Edwardus Eells, Eliph[t] Williams, Warharnus Williams, Noachus Wells, Nath[l] Taylor, Socii."

Rev. Matthew Scribner married for his first wife a daughter of Dr. Uriah Rogers, of Norwalk, Ct. One of her sisters married Moss Kent, son of the Rev. Elisha Kent, of "Kent's Parish," the pastor of Captain Nathaniel Scribner. Mr. and Mrs. Moss Kent were the parents of the late James Kent, chancellor of the State of New York. Mrs. Scribner died while her only child, Uriah Rogers (41), was an infant. Her widowed husband, after some years, married, secondly, Miss Porter, of whose family I have been unable to learn any particulars.

URIAH ROGERS SCRIBNER (41), when a young man, was for a time at Port-au-Prince, and was there attacked by yellow fever, from which his life was saved as by a miracle. To all appearances he had ceased to breathe, and his physician pronounced him dead. Preparations were making for his burial, when his cousin came into the room; and, not being satisfied, applied a test which proved that the doctor was deceived, and that there was yet life.

Restoratives were employed, and he was saved. With careful nursing he gradually recovered, and regained his usual health. He returned home and thence came to New York, where he engaged in the business of a jobbing merchant. With varying fortunes he continued steadily in trade, without any interruption, for more than fifty years. Sitting at his front window one day, and seeing an old gentleman passing, he remarked to me: "There is a man who, when I commenced business, was one of the most active and prosperous merchants of the city. He is now poor and dependent. Such is the uncertainty of trade in New York, that not more than one in ten of those who commence the mercantile business here are finally successful. Sooner or later the great majority drop out by the way." Fortune had moderately favored him, and when he died he was one of the few old merchants of the city.

Uriah Rogers Scribner married for his first wife his cousin Martha, daughter of Captain Nathaniel Scribner. It was said of her that she was a very handsome woman, and as amiable as she was beautiful. On the threshold of a life which was full of hope and pleasant anticipations she died, leaving an infant daughter.

Mr. Scribner married, secondly, another cousin, Betsey, only daughter of Thomas and Keziah Scribner Hawley, of Ridgefield, Ct. Mr. Hawley was of an old Connecticut family, already connected with the Scribners through the Rogers family. Betsey Hawley was the youngest of five children. One of her brothers died young. The other three and herself lived more than ten years beyond the allotted age of man. Her mother, Keziah, reached the age of ninety-seven, retaining her memory, especially of the Bible, to the last. After she was ninety-six she knitted a pair of fine cotton stockings for her daughter, then a woman of nearly threescore years.

Uriah Rogers Scribner died at his residence, No. 751 Broadway, New York City, on January 7, 1852. His wife and nine children survived him.

EDWARD SCRIBNER (70) was engaged in the mercantile business from an early age. He died in New York City on January 7, 1864, leaving a widow and seven children.

WILLIAM SCRIBNER (74) was a graduate of Princeton College, of the class of 1840, and after a regular course in theology he was admitted to the ministry of the Presbyterian Church in 1844. In a few years, however, ill health obliged him to retire from the pulpit, but not from the work of a true disciple of the Master. He was the author of several religious books, some of which had a wide circulation. He died at his residence, in Plainfield, N. J., on March 3, 1884, leaving a widow and five children.

CHARLES SCRIBNER (75) was a graduate of Princeton College, in the class with his brother William. He commenced the study of the law, but, being of a delicate constitution, he could not endure the confinement of an office, and sought a less sedentary occupation. He finally connected himself with Mr. Baker, already established in the publishing business in New York. After the death of his partner he greatly extended his business, becoming in a few years one of the most prominent men in the trade. He was thoroughly honorable in all his transactions, and, unlike many publishers, popular with authors. He established the magazine known as *Scribner's Monthly*, which had a circulation at home and abroad inferior to only one in the United States. The death of his accomplished wife so affected his delicate nervous organization that his health, never robust, was slowly undermined. Notwithstanding the best medical treatment, he was forced to leave his business and make a trip to Europe, hoping that travel and change might restore his wasting powers. At

Luzerne, Switzerland, he was attacked with typhoid fever, to which, with little resistance, he yielded up his life on August 26, 1871. His brother William accompanied him on his journey, and was with him when he died. Three sons and two daughters survived him. His high reputation as a man and Christian was a precious inheritance, and to preserve his memory his sons continued his business under the firm name of *Charles Scribner's Sons.* His wife was a daughter of John I. Blair, of Blairstown, N. J.

HENRY SCRIBNER (76) for a time was engaged in the drug business in Ithaca and Watertown, N. Y., but, as its results did not meet his expectations, he disposed of it, and with his young family removed to Des Moines, Ia., where he engaged in the lumber trade. The last one hundred and seventy miles of the journey was made in a wagon fitted up for comfort and convenience, and so arranged that he could stop on the prairies when night overtook him, and not suffer for the want of hotel accommodations. After thirty years of prosperity in his Western home he went to his rest, on September 10, 1882, leaving a widow with one son and a daughter. Like others of his family, he was a consistent Christian, being a member and an officer in one of the Congregational churches in the city of his adoption.

WALTER SCRIBNER (80) was a druggist, for a time in partnership with his brother Henry at Watertown, and afterward alone in the city of Rock Island, Ill. He eventually returned to New York City, and was employed as confidential clerk in a large printing house. He died on October 15, 1873. His wife and two sons survived him.

The direct line of Rev. Matthew Scribner is now represented by ten great-grandsons, all comparatively young, only two of whom are married. They are Charles Rogers and Rogers, sons of Edward Scribner; John Hitchcock,

Charles, and Henry, sons of Rev. William Scribner; Charles and Arthur, sons of Charles Scribner; George, son of Henry Scribner; and Frederick and Frank, sons of Walter Scribner.

For the data of the preceding sketch, relating to the Scribner genealogy and Captain Nathaniel Scribner's family, I am indebted to Mr. Morey Hale Bartow, of New York City. As a descendant of Captain Scribner, he has written *con amore* the pioneer history of New Albany, Ind., entitled "Contributions to the Pioneer History of Indiana." He kindly placed the manuscript in my hands, with permission to use any portions I wished. I have not presumed to copy, but only to use its facts and hints in my own way. The history is so full of interest that it is to be hoped it will not long remain a manuscript only. I could not anticipate the pleasure of its readers by extracts.

D.

DAVID (PIETERSE) SCHUYLER.

WHEN first I became interested in genealogy, it was my purpose to prepare a history of all the branches of the Schuyler family, but more especially those of Philip and David Schuyler, the first of the name known in America. But after two years, failing to procure answers to numerous letters, particularly from those who by their names I thought belonged to David's line, I concluded that my promise of life was much too short for such a work, and I then confined myself almost wholly to Philip's branch; preserving, however, all the letters and other information I had procured as to David's family and others, which I now put in the form of Appendices, hoping that some one may pursue and complete the work.

Nearly seven years after the marriage of Philip Pieterse Schuyler in Beverwyck, David Pieterse Schuyler, from Amsterdam, Holland, was married in New Amsterdam, on October 13, 1657, to Catalijna, daughter of Abraham Isaacse Verplanck. This is the first notice that we have of him. How long he had been in the country is not known. He was doubtless a younger brother of Philip, and had followed him, if he did not come with him, to New Netherland, a land so full of promise to young men of energy and business enterprise.

In the marriage records of the Reformed Dutch Church, New York, and in legal papers, such as deeds, contracts, bonds, etc., his name was written David Pieterse Schuyler;

but he always wrote his own name without the Pieterse, David Schuyler, differing in this respect from Philip. The handwriting of the two was very unlike—Philip's was flowing and easy, David's cramped and stiff.

In May, 1660, David was a resident of Beverwyck, engaged in trade, and signed a petition to the government that Christians should not be allowed to range the woods as brokers in the Indian trade, but that such employment should be restricted to the Indians. From this time until his death his name often appears in the records as a buyer and seller of real estate in the village, as surety for his friends, as an officer in the church, and as a magistrate in the city.

On December 22, 1660, he bought a lot on State Street of Anneke Jans Bogardus, on which he built a house; and five years later sold it to Mr. Van den Uythoff, a name which soon disappeared. In the deed, drawn by the notary, he is termed the "Honorable David Pieterse Schuyler."

On October 6, 1673, after the Dutch had retaken the province, acting Governor Colve, having changed the name of Albany to Willemstadt, appointed him a magistrate. Ten years later Governor Dongan appointed him justice of the peace, and in 1686 named him an alderman in the charter, to which position he was elected by the people three successive years. Having attained to this municipal dignity, he removed from his comparatively small and unpretentious house to one much larger and more pleasantly situated, on the bank of the river, at the corner of Broadway and Steuben Street. There were no railways, no stations, no docks, no canal basin, no pier with its mills and elevators, between his garden, planted with tulips and flowering shrubs, and the gently flowing waters of the Hudson—nothing to intercept the view of the

wooded hills beyond; nothing but the low wooden walls of the city to shut out the prospect of the river valley up to the Stein Hoeck skirted by the low western hills.

He was a member of the convention which assumed the government of the city in 1689, and gave it a hearty support in all its measures. He was in perfect accord with his nephew, Peter Schuyler, mayor of the city, and attached his name to the energetic protest against the claims and pretensions of Jacob Leisler on January 13, 1690. It was one of the last acts of his life. He died in less than a month afterward, on a day of great excitement, caused by the destruction of Schenectady, on February 9, 1690.

As a business man David Schuyler was successful. He had not the same dash and energy as Philip, and only once ventured into a speculation not directly connected with his business. In this he must have felt quite safe, when such men as Jan Jansen Bleecker, Peter Schuyler, Dirck Wesselse Ten Broeck, and Robert Livingston were his partners in the purchase of Saratoga. He was the first, however, and the only one of the partners, to dispose of his interest before a sufficient time had elapsed to estimate the real value of the venture. He sold out in 1686 for £55 16*s.* 0*d.*, which, after all, was a fair percentage on the investment.

I have said that he was a younger brother of Philip Pieterse Schuyler. For want of positive evidence to this effect the relationship has been denied, while others claim that he was the elder brother. I have two letters in my possession, one from a descendant of Philip, the other from a gentleman who some years since was much interested in the Schuyler genealogy, in which the writers pursue the same line of argument—that they could not have been brothers, because their own and their children's names were so unlike, and for no other reason. If they

had examined the reasons for the difference, and why some of them were alike, it is quite certain they would have come to different conclusions.

Their own middle names, Pieterse, son of Peter, prove that their fathers' names were the same. Each named one of his sons Peter for his father. Each named his eldest daughter Gertrude, presumably for his mother, as was the custom. Each named a daughter, the one Alida, the other Maria, for their wives' mothers. Philip named two sons Brant and Arent for his wife's father. David named one son Abraham for his wife's father, and another Jacobus, a Verplanck family name. Philip gave to one of his sons his own name, and to one of his daughters the name of his wife; so did David. Philip called his eldest son Gysbert and his youngest Johannes; and David named one son Myndert—all probably family names on one side or the other. From this it is seen that they both followed the usual custom in naming their children for persons in their own or their wives' families; and that it was the introduction of names belonging to the families into which they had married that caused the difference. It is well that they did not marry sisters, for had they done so, and had adhered to custom, the confusion caused by the same names in different families would have been inextricable.

The relations between the two men were intimate and confidential. They were sureties for each other in business transactions, and to some extent shared in the same enterprises. Their sons and daughters were sponsors for each others' children, a strong evidence of relationship. Lastly, Philip, son of Philip Pieterse, when writing to Johannes Abeel, the husband of David Pieterse's youngest daughter, addressed him, "Cousin Abeel." There are three such letters among the manuscript documents in the office of the Secretary of State.

There is no evidence, positive or inferential, that I have found showing that David was the oldest. On the contrary, it may be inferred from the facts—that Philip was in the country several years before we hear of David; that he was married seven years before him; that he died nearly seventeen years before him; that Philip's youngest child was past eleven years old when he died, while David's youngest at the same time was only five—that he was the eldest. But the question is of no particular importance, and may be suffered to rest.

David Schuyler executed his will on May 21, 1688. He gave to his eldest son, Peter, his "house and lot on the hill," on the south side of State Street, a short distance above Pearl. To his wife he gave his "great messuage wherein I now dwell, situated in this city on the east side of the street next to the north gate (corner of Broadway and Steuben Street), to have and to hold for the space of ninety-nine years, or during her natural life." He directed that each of his minor and unmarried children should receive £30, the same as the married ones; the balance of the estate he left in trust to his wife, to be divided after her death equally among his eight children—Peter, Gertrude, Abraham, Maria, David, Myndert, Cobus, and Catalyntje, the last four being minors and Maria unmarried. The will was proved on April 11, 1691.

GENEALOGICAL TABLE.

DAVID SCHUYLER AND HIS DESCENDANTS.

1. DAVID SCHUYLER, d. February 9, 1690, and *Catalyn Ver Planck*, d. October 8, 1708.
   2. PETER, b. April 18, 1659, d. March 7, 1696.
      m. *Alida Van Slichtenhorst.*
   3. GERTRUDE, b. September 19, 1661.
      m. *Willem Claes Groesbeck.*
   4. ABRAHAM, b. August 16, 1663, d. July 9, 1726.
      m. November 10, 1691, *Gertrude Ten Broeck.*
   5. MARIA, b. September 29, 1666.
      m. February 3, 1689, *Dr. Hendrick Van Dyck.*
   6. DAVID, b. June 11, 1669, d. Dec. 16, 1715.
      m. January 1, 1694, *Elsje Rutgers.*
   7. MYNDERT, b. January 16, 1672.
      m. October 26, 1693, *Rachel Cuyler.*
   8. JACOB, b. June 14, 1675, d. March 22, 1707.
      m. 1, *Cathalyntia Wendell.*
      m. 2, June 3, 1704, *Susanna Wendell.*
   9. CATLYN, b. January 14, 1678.
      m. 1, April 10, 1694, *Johannes Abeel.*
      m. 2, May 26, 1712, *Rutger Bleecker.*

2. PETER SCHUYLER and *Alida Van Slichtenhorst.*
   10. GERRIT, m. September 28, 1703, *Aagje de Grood*, in New York.
   11. JOHANNES, bp. December 3, 1684, d. s. p. ; buried July 22, 1740.
   12. CATALINA, bp. October 10, 1686.
       m. *Jacob Bogart.*
   13. DAVID, bp. December 26, 1688.
       m. 1, July 17, 1720, *Anna Bratt.*
       m. 2, —— ——.
   14. ALIDA, bp. January 21, 1693.
   15. PHILIP, bp. October 28, 1694.
       m. February 28, 1718, *Sara Roosevelt*, New York.
   16. PIETER, bp. August 9, 1696 ; living in Albany in 1764.

4. ABRAHAM SCHUYLER and *Gertrude Ten Broeck.*[1]
   17. DAVID, b. November 26, 1692.
       m. December 2, 1725, *Maria Hansen.*
   18. CHRISTINA, b. July 16, 1695.
   19. DIRCK, b. July 25, 1700.
   20. ABRAHAM, b. August 24, 1704.
       m. September 7, 1732, *Catrina Staats.*
   21. JACOB, b. March 19, 1707.
       m. November 12, 1735, *Geertruy Staats.*

6. DAVID SCHUYLER and *Elsje Rutgers.*
   22. CATHERINE, bp. November 25, 1694, d. y.
   23. DAVID, bp. April 11, 1697.
       m. May 3, 1719, *Elizabeth Marschalk,* in New York.
   24. HARMANUS, bp. July 21, 1700.
       m. December 1, 1722, in Albany, *Jannetje Bancker.*
   25. CATHERINA, bp. December 19, 1703.
   26. MYNDERT, bp. October 7, 1711.
       m. June 21, 1735, in New York, *Elizabeth Wessels.*
   27. ANTHONY, bp. October 30, 1715.

7. MYNDERT SCHUYLER and *Rachel Cuyler.*
   28. ANNA, bp. February 28, 1697.
       m. November 24, 1715, *John de Peyster.*

8. JACOBUS SCHUYLER and *Susanna Wendell.*
   29. CATALYNTJE, bp. April 21, 1706.

10. GERRIT SCHUYLER and *Aagje de Grood.*
   30. ALIDA, November 19, 1704.
   31. JANNEKE, January 29, 1707.
   32. AEGJE, January 25, 1710, d. y.
   33. PIETER, January 9, 1712.
   34. AEGJE, March 20, 1715.
   35. JOHANNA GOERDA, June 2, 1717.
   36. MARIA, February 10, 1720.

13. DAVID SCHUYLER and *Anna Bratt.*
   37. ALIDA, bp. February 12, 1721, d. y.
   38. PIETER, bp. March 10, 1723.
       m. June 9, 1743, *Elizabeth Barbara Herkimer.*

13. DAVID SCHUYLER and —— ——.
   39. JOHN.
   40. ADONIAH.
   41. DAVID.
   42. PHILIP.
   43. JACOB.

[1] These children are all mentioned in Abraham Schuyler's will.

44. ANNA.
45. MARGRETA.
46. ALIDA.
47. CATHARINA.

15. PHILIP SCHUYLER and *Sara Roosevelt.*
48. SARA, bp. August 12, 1719.

17. DAVID SCHUYLER and *Maria Hansen.*
49. ABRAHAM, bp. November 15, 1734, d. y.
50. ABRAHAM, bp. December 25, 1735.
m. December 2, 1763, *Eva Beekman.*
51. HENDRICK, bp. February 8, 1738.

20. ABRAHAM SCHUYLER and *Catrina Staats.*
52. CHRISTINA, b. June 18, 1733.
53. NEILTJE, b. November 30, 1735.
54. GETANEE, b. December 18, 1738.
55. ABRAM, b. April 8, 1741.
56. ANNA MARICIA, b. March 13, 1743.
57. ARRIETTA, b. June 7, 1746.
m. —— *Coeymans.*

21. JACOB SCHUYLER and *Geertruy Staats.*
58. GEERTRUY, bp. May 2, 1736, d. y.
59. GEERTRUY, bp. October 21, 1737.
60. DIRK, bp. March 16, 1740.
m. April 26, 1764, *Maria Van Deusen.*
61. NEELTJE, bp. August 15, 1742, d. y.
62. ANNA, bp. April 21, 1745.
63. NEELTJE, bp. November 22, 1747.
64. BARENT STAATS, bp. February 18, 1750.
65. CHRISTINA, bp. December 24, 1752.

23. DAVID SCHUYLER and *Elizabeth Marschalk.*
66. ELIZABETH, bp. in New York, March 6, 1720.

24. HARMANUS SCHUYLER and *Jannetje Bancker.*
67. DAVID, bp. February 7, 1725.
m. November 14, 1764, *Elizabeth Simmons.*
68. EVERT, bp. August 28, 1726.

38. PIETER SCHUYLER and *Elizabeth Barbara Herkimer.*
69. PETER, m. *Catherine Herkimer.*
70. NICHOLAS, m. —— ——.
71. JOHAN JOST (alias Hanyost).

50. ABRAHAM SCHUYLER and *Eva Beekman.*
72. MARIA, bp. December 23, 1764.
73. MARTIN BEEKMAN, b. March 2, 1767.

74. DAVID, bp. April 2, 1769.
m. 1, *Elizabeth Lawyer.*
m. 2, *Margaret Marselus.*
75. GEERTRUY, b. July 16, 1773.
76. HENDRICK, bp. September 10, 1775.

55. ABRAHAM SCHUYLER (Judge) and —— ——.
77. CATRIENA, b. May 25, 1762.
78. ABRAHAM, b. May 10, 1764.
79. ALTJE, b. July 13, 1767.
80. CHRISTINA, b. February 20, 1771.
81. JOHANNA, b. September 7, 1773.
84. NEILTJE, b. February 25, 1776.

60. DIRCK SCHUYLER and *Maria Van Deusen.*
85. JACOBUS, b. July 29, 1768.
86. CATHERINA, b. November 20, 1770.
87. WILLIAM VAN DEUSEN, b. May 9, 1773.
88. GEERTRUY, b. July 25, 1775.

69. PETER SCHUYLER and *Catherine Herkimer.*
89. PETER, d. in Cazenovia, N. Y.
m. *Sophia Cook.*
90. JOHN, m. *Mary McCord.*
91. ABRAHAM, d. in Ontario County, N. Y.
m. *Sarah Southerland.*
92. JOSEPH, d. in Northumberland, Pa.
m. *Margaret McCord.*
93. ELIZABETH, m. —— *Du Colon.*
94. NANCY, m. —— *Mires.*
95. MARGARET, m. *Solomon Moyer.*
96. SIMEON, m. *Sarah Evans.*

70. NICHOLAS SCHUYLER and —— — .
97. NICHOLAS.
98. PETER.
99. HENRY.
100. GEORGE NICHOLAS.

74. DAVID SCHUYLER and *Elizabeth Lawyer.*
101. ABRAHAM, b. June 7, 1797, d. at Sackett's Harbor, N. Y., March 31, 1865.
m. *Ann Maria Spraker.*
102. LAWRENCE LAWYER, m. *Cornelia K. Sadalier.*
103. ANN ELIZA, b. February 6, 1801.
m. November 23, 1822, *Peter Hynds.*

89. PETER SCHUYLER and *Sophia Cook.*
104. SOPHIA, m. —— *Helm.*

105. MARTHA M., m. *Stephen Grinnell.*
106. ELECTRA.
107. JULIETTA.

90. JOHN SCHUYLER and *Mary McCord.*
108. RENSSELAER.
109. CHARLES.
110. JOHN.
111. WILLIAM.
112. KATE.
113. SARAH.

91. ABRAHAM SCHUYLER and *Sarah Southerland.*
114. ABRAHAM.
115. NELSON.
116. JULIETTA.

92. JOSEPH SCHUYLER and *Margaret McCord.*
117. JOSEPH.
118. KATE.
119. SARAH.

96. SIMEON SCHUYLER and *Sarah Evans.*
120. EVANS.
121. WILSON W., m. *Alice Bensen.*
122. JOSEPH.

97. NICHOLAS SCHUYLER and —— ——.
123. AARON.

101. ABRAHAM SCHUYLER and *Ann Maria Spraker.*
124. MARIA, b. March 20, 1819.
m. July 18, 1838, *Dr. John W. Hinckly*, of Albany.
125. CAROLINE, b. July 27, 1822.
m. October 31, 1850, *Thomas Mulford Hunter.*
126. CORDELIA, b. July 29.
m. 1857, *William Stokes.*
127. ALONZO BEEKMAN, b. January 1, 1826.
m. August 7, 1851, *Mila G. Bishop.*
128. VAN RENSSELAER, b. March 11, 1830.
m. November 17, 1850, *Mary Hauck.*

102. LAWRENCE LAWYER SCHUYLER and *Cornelia K. Sadalier.*
129. DAVID CARLTON.
130. JAMES LAWRENCE.
131. JANE.
132. FRANCES.
133. CORNELIA.

127. ALONZO BEEKMAN SCHUYLER and *Mila G. Bishop.*

134.	BISHOP, b. March 28, 1854.	Residence, Sackett's Harbor, N. Y.
135.	JESSIE, b. April 13, 1857.	
136.	BEECHER, b. July 17, 1859.	
137.	ISABELLA, b. November 27, 1864.	

128. VAN RENSSELAER SCHUYLER and *Mary Hauck.*

138.	FRANCES, b. September 28, 1851. m. Sept. 17, 1868, *Granger Robins.*	Residence, Sackett's Harbor, N. Y.
139.	FREDERICK, b. September 28, 1851, d. 1867.	

NOTES.

PETER SCHUYLER (2) was a merchant in Albany, resident for a short time in Claverack, where his wife's father had a small tract of land. In 1685 he was appointed a judge of the court of Oyer and Terminer. He married Alida Van Slichtenhorst, daughter of Gerrit Van Slichtenhorst and niece of Philip Pieterse Schuyler's wife. She was then a widow, her first husband, Gerrit Goosen Van Schaick, having died on November 11, 1679.

The date of his marriage is not known. He died suddenly, March 7, 1696, and left no will. His widow applied to the court in May following to have Abraham and David Schuyler appointed guardians of her children during their minority.

The records of baptisms in the Reformed Dutch Church of Albany previous to 1683 are lost, else doubtless we would have known that Peter Schuyler had a son David before Gerrit, the latter being named for his wife's father. It is probable that his eldest son died young, and he then gave to his fourth son the name of his father.

ABRAHAM SCHUYLER (4) was for many years one of the most prominent men in Albany. He was much respected by the Indians of the Five Nations, with whose language he was familiar. At one time he resided among the Sene-

cas as agent of the government, and they were so well pleased with him that they asked for his reappointment. Governor Burnet, suspecting them to have been influenced by the traders, if not by Schuyler himself, refused their petition, and thus lost much of their respect. He was often employed in journeys to Canada on important public business, as also to Onondaga to attend Indian councils for the protection of English interests. He accompanied Colonel Peter Schuyler and the five Indian chiefs to England as interpreter. The day before he left Albany on his voyage he wrote his will, December 15, 1709, and made no other before his death. He made this entry in his Bible: "1709. Dec 16th I went with Colo. Schuyler to England, and returned through the grace of God, July 26. 1710." (The record, as published in the *Genealogical and Biographical Record*, viii., 166, is incorrect in so far that it turns *Colonel* into *Cornelius*.) He was an alderman and justice of the peace, and held other official positions, in the city of Albany. Governor Burnet's refusal to reappoint him Indian agent did not prevent him from visiting his old friends. Less than two years afterward he died among them, after a brief illness, on July 9, 1726, "at Sonnock's Land." His wife was a daughter of Dirck Wesselse Ten Broeck.

DAVID SCHUYLER (6) was a trader in Albany, and, being a man of better education or of more abilities than the average men of his time, when quite young was employed in the public service, both of the city and province. He was frequently in Canada on business of his own, and being quick-witted, he was enabled to communicate important intelligence on his return. Twice in one year, 1701, he was commissioned a delegate to the Indian councils at Onondaga, to divert the Five Nations from a projected alliance with the French. He held the positions of

alderman and justice of the peace in Albany several successive years. In 1705 he was sheriff of the county, and the next year was appointed mayor of the city. The highest positions in the province would have been within his reach had his life been prolonged to the usual age. He died at the age of forty-six years, on December 16, 1715.

After his death several of his sons, if not all, followed their maternal uncles, Harmanus and Anthony Rutgers, to New York.

MYNDERT SCHUYLER (7), like his brothers, was much employed in the public service. Soon after he had reached his majority he was elected constable of the First Ward in Albany. A few years earlier, while yet a lad, he had shown his interest in politics by signing the protest against the governmental claims of Jacob Leisler. In 1701 he was elected to the Eighth Assembly, and was re-elected to the four following; and again to the fifteenth, seventeenth, eighteenth, and twentieth. About twenty years of his life he thus spent in the service of the province. In 1710 he was appointed by Governor Hunter to the Indian board, of which he was a member, with two brief intervals, from that time to 1754.

In 1713 he was employed by Governor Hunter on a mission to Canada; and a few years later he and Robert Livingston, Jr., were despatched on important business to the Seneca Indians. In 1719 he was appointed by President Peter Schuyler mayor of Albany, and served two years. After an interval of two years he was reappointed to the position by Governor Burnet, and held the office another two years.

He was also an honored officer in the church, having been elected a deacon and church-master in 1706. He was a captain in the militia in 1710, and rose to the grade of colonel before 1754.

While many of his friends and neighbors were speculating largely in lands, he was serving the public or quietly attending to his business as a merchant. Philip Pieterse Schuyler and his sons were large buyers and sellers of lands, but David Pieterse Schuyler and his sons had little to do with them. Myndert had a share in 10,000 acres of land on the Schoharie Creek, known as the Hunterfield Patent, and a share in 500 acres on the upper waters of Norman's Kil. These comprise his land transactions. His brothers bought even less.

He was buried in the church on October 21, 1755, having survived all his brothers and all the sons of his uncle Philip. He was the last of the second generation of the American Schuylers.

His will is dated March 7, 1739, and was proved on July 24, 1756. He had accumulated a very respectable estate, the use of which he left to his wife; and after her death the "profits and income" to his daughter, Anna de Peyster, during life, after which it was to be divided equally among his grandchildren. He named as executors his wife and daughter, his son-in-law, John de Peyster, Rutger Bleecker, and Philip Schuyler (son of Peter). On July 28, 1741, he added a codicil. A grandson had been born, and named Myndert Schuyler. To him he left £30, a silver tankard, his wearing apparel, gun, and "sword with silver handle;" and directed that after his death "all his merchandise and shop furniture should be sold."

His daughter Anna died five years before him, and of the five executors named in the will only one, John de Peyster, qualified. With him was associated his daughter, Anna de Peyster, the wife of Volkert Pieterse Douw, in place of her mother, apparently without question, as though she were the Anna de Peyster named in the will.

JACOBUS SCHUYLER (8). Nothing more can be said of

him than that he was elected constable of the Third Ward in 1697, and collector of the same ward in 1701 and 1702; that he served as sponsor on various occasions at the baptism of his brothers' and sisters' children, and in 1704 was sponsor for Catalyntje, daughter of Colonel Johannes Schuyler; and that he was twice married. His wives were probably daughters of Captain Johannes Wendell. He died at the age of about thirty-two years, leaving an only child.

GERRIT SCHUYLER (10) removed to New York, where he married on September 28, 1703. In a deed, dated July 5, 1721, their names are written *Gerard* Schuyler and Aagie De Grove. Their children were baptized in the Reformed Dutch Church of New York.

DAVID SCHUYLER (13) was twice married. After the death of his first wife he removed to Canajoharie, where he had bought lands on which he supposed there were valuable mines. In May, 1754, he and his son Peter bought of the Mohawk Indians 43,000 acres of land on the west side of Lake Canjadarage, for which, in company with a few others, they procured a patent. The lake is now known as Schuyler Lake, situated in Otsego County near Richfield Springs.

One would infer from his will that David Schuyler was a man of extensive business and large property. He speaks of lands, mines, and minerals at Canajoharie, lands on Lake Canjadarage, his estate and claims in Albany and New York, and in the colonies of Rensselaerwyck and Surinam. His will is dated April 3, 1759, in which he names his eldest son, Peter, and his nine children by his second wife. He appointed seven executors, with Sir William Johnson at the head. When the will was proved, in April, 1764, all the executors declined to act, and Johannes Schuyler, having become the eldest son by the death of Peter, was appointed administrator.

I have been unable to procure any trustworthy informa-

tion as to his family, except about Pieter (38). John (39), was made administrator of the estate, but nothing more is known of him.

Mr. George Van Driessen, of Adrian, Mich., writes: "My grandfather on my mother's side was David Schuyler, who lived at Fort Herkimer." It is possible that he was David (41).

Mr. Van der Kemp, the translator of the Dutch colonial documents, made in 1792 a journey from Kingston, N. Y., to Lake Ontario. His route was by way of Albany and the Mohawk Valley. When he arrived at Palatinetown he was entertained at the "mansion" of Mrs. Schuyler, widow of Colonel Philip Schuyler, who seemed to be a person of intelligence and was sprightly in conversation. She gave him much information on various topics of interest, but especially as to the country through which he was travelling and the best houses on his road. She was doubtless the widow of Philip Schuyler (42).

There is no trace of PHILIP SCHUYLER (15) in Albany after his baptism, and it is probable that he joined his brother Gerrit in New York. Although there is no authority in the records for his marriage to Sara Roosevelt, the presumption is strong. At the time of the marriage, February 28, 1718, there were six others, and only six, of the same name, all of whom can be accounted for.

Philip (9), fifth son of Philip Pieterse Schuyler, was a widower residing at Schenectady, and in May, 1719, married his second wife.

Philip (136), son of Brandt Schuyler, of New York, married Ann Elizabeth Staats in August, 1713, and his wife survived him.

Philip (161), son of Arent Schuyler, of New Jersey, married Hester Kingsland in 1712, and she lived to an advanced age.

Philip (358), son of Johannes Schuyler, of Albany, died a bachelor in 1745.

Philip (13), son of Colonel Peter Schuyler, married his cousin, Margarita Schuyler.

Philip (5), son of Nicholas Schuyler, of Schenectady, was an infant.

It follows that Philip, son of Pieter Davidse Schuyler, must have been the Philip Schuyler who married Sara Roosevelt.

At the baptism of his child, *junior* is written after his name. This was done to distinguish him from Philip, son of Brandt.

After the baptism of his child in the church at New York, I find no other trace of him. It is possible he removed to New Jersey, where several descendants of David Pieterse Schuyler ultimately settled.

Maria Hansen wife of DAVID SCHUYLER (17) was the daughter of Hendrick Hansen, mayor of Albany, 1698.

DIRCK SCHUYLER (19) resided in New Brunswick, N. J., in June, 1738, and was termed a merchant in a deed conveying his mother's share in the Saratoga Patent, received from her father, which he had previously bought from his mother and brothers. He sold one-third of an original share (one-seventh) for £250 to his cousin, Dirck Ten Broeck. If married, his wife is not mentioned in the deed.

The marriage of ABRAHAM SCHUYLER (20) and Catrina Staats is recorded in the Reformed Dutch Church of Albany, as also the baptism of their first child, but nothing more. It is probable that he then removed to New Brunswick, N. J., where his father's Dutch Bible, containing his own family records, was found, in June, 1877, in possession of a female descendant.

Catrina Staats was a daughter of Barent Staats, of Albany.

HARMANUS SCHUYLER (24) was admitted freeman of New York City in 1728.

PIETER SCHUYLER (38) secured two shares, or 4,000 acres, in the land patent on Schuyler's Lake, his uncle, Peter P. Schuyler, of Albany, having transferred to him his allotment, as by agreement before the patent was issued. He seems to have been an active business man, engaged in various enterprises. He died in middle life, before his plans and business schemes were fully developed. His marriage into the Herkimer family allied him to the most influential Germans in the Mohawk Valley. His wife was the eldest of eight sisters, daughters of Johann Jost Herkimer, and was a sister of General Nicholas Herkimer of Revolutionary fame. Schuyler's marriage is recorded in the Reformed Dutch Church of Albany. He died before June, 1764, as his brother John is then termed the eldest son of David Schuyler, deceased.

JOHAN JOST SCHUYLER (71) was named for his maternal grandfather, Johan Jost Herkimer, one of the first settlers on the Upper Mohawk. The name was corrupted into Han Yost, or Honyost, by which appellation he is known in history. By several writers he is described as an ignorant, uncouth, half-witted being, but little removed from the savages with whom he mainly associated. I am inclined to doubt the truth of this description. His parentage was respectable, but, living on the borders of civilization, where there were no schools,[1] he grew up in ignorance. On the one side were the Mohawk Indians, and on the other the Oneidas. In common with all the white settlers, both Dutch and German, he must of necessity have associated more or less with the savages, with whose customs and superstitions he was well informed. Unlike

[1] His uncle John signed his name with a mark.

many, he adapted himself to the habits of the people among whom he lived. He availed himself of his knowledge to gain the confidence of the Indians and win their respect. Knowing with what awe and affection they regarded the unfortunate who had not perfect control of their reason, he may have affected the part of one deficient in intellect in order to gain their confidence for the accomplishment of his own plans and purposes.

He could not have been regarded by his friends and neighbors as the half-witted fellow painted by historians, or he would not have been enrolled in the militia and made an officer in one of the companies. In October, 1776, General Herkimer reported to his commanding officer, "Han Yost Schuyler and others have gone to the enemy." Lathrop Allen was more explicit. In a letter to General Schuyler, he said:

"Hanjoost Schuyler, a sergeant in one of the ranger companies, Hanjoost Harkamar, son-in-law of the old widow Harkamar, and several others, after a consultation at Canajoharie Castle among the Indians and Tories, absconded to the enemy."

We next hear of him in company with Walter N. Butler and other Tories at the house of Mr. Shoemaker, situated a short distance from Fort Dayton, concerting measures to detach the inhabitants of the valley from the patriots, and thus compel Colonel Gansevoort to surrender Fort Schuyler (Stanwix) to St. Leger. Colonel Weston, commanding at Fort Dayton, was apprised of the meeting, and, surrounding the house, captured Butler and twenty-eight others, Han Yost among them. Butler and Han Yost were tried by court-martial, and sentenced to death. If a fool, why was he selected from the "twenty-eight others" to suffer the penalty of treason? Why was not some promi-

nent Tory, like Shoemaker, for instance, taken in place of the "half-witted?"

General Arnold, detached from the army at Saratoga for the relief of Fort Schuyler, now arrived with his troops, and began organizing the militia for a march against St. Leger. Johan Jost's mother and brother opportunely arrived to intercede for his life. Arnold was obdurate for a time, but finally consented to spare his life, on condition that he should go to St. Leger's camp and induce him to raise the siege, but that meanwhile his brother Nicholas would be detained as a hostage for his fidelity. Whence came this apparently chimerical proposition? Arnold could not have suggested it, for he was a man of some common sense. It must have originated with the "half-witted," believing he could frighten away the Indians and thus compel the English to retire. It must have seemed to Arnold and his officers a fool's conception. What! a fool, alone and unaided, accomplish that which an army led by the brave General Herkimer had attempted in vain! For some reason difficult to understand Arnold consented, and Schuyler accepted the condition without a murmur. His only preparation for the work was to have his clothes riddled with bullets. In company with an Indian he started to perform a feat which should have won for him a nation's gratitude and covered his name with glory.

Schuyler and his Indian ally approached St. Leger's camp from different directions, and first visited St. Leger's Indians. With wise looks and gestures, more than with words, they gave the Indians to understand that an army more numerous than the leaves of the forest was approaching to destroy them. With mysterious hints they roused the imaginations of their hearers, and caused them to apprehend more danger than their words implied. There was great commotion; Han Yost was hurried off to

St. Leger's tent, followed by the Indian chiefs, where the story was repeated with additions designed for the Indian ear. The excitement increased, until great fear and dread pervaded the ranks of the soldiery. Leaving their tents and camp equipage, and throwing away their guns, the army began its retreat, which soon became a perfect rout. The army of the enemy was dissolved, and the siege was raised. According to history, it was the work of a fool. In truth, it was the work of a skilful man, who based his hopes of success upon his thorough knowledge of Indian character. His great exploit has not saved his name from obloquy, and the charge of Toryism has obliterated all sense of gratitude. His feat of heroism was one of the main factors in the victory of Saratoga. The defeat of St. Leger made it possible to capture Burgoyne.

Schuyler returned to Fort Dayton, and Arnold, having received information from other sources that the siege of Fort Schuyler had been raised, released his hostage. "But," history goes on to say, "he was so imbued with his Tory principles that he again went off to the enemy, and remained with them to the close of the war, when he returned to his former residence in the Mohawk Valley." When reading this bit of history, as related by several writers, I confess that I had my doubts as to his want of common-sense, and as to his want of loyalty to his country. I believed rather that he was shrewd and brave, a true patriot. In the Revolution, as in other wars, the generals employed confidential agents as spies, who gained access to the enemy's camp, and from time to time gave their employers important information. May not Johan Jost Schuyler have been so employed by General Schuyler or other American officers?[1] If he were a Tory, or an Eng-

[1] Mr. Lossing, in his Life of General Schuyler, changes the name from Hanyost Schuyler to Hon Yost *Cuyler*.

lish spy, he had a singular way of serving his friends. If a Tory, he was the only one of the name. Notwithstanding the character given to him, he merits a monument to his memory, as one who alone routed an army, relieved a garrison at a vital point, and made possible the victory of General Gates at Stillwater.

Johan Jost Schuyler died about 1810.

He probably married an Indian woman of the Oneida nation. Mr. Schoolcraft, in his Report to the Legislature, 1846, refers to an Oneida Indian by the name of "Moses Schuyler, son of Hon Yost," and of another man of the same nation named Abraham Schuyler. Both were living at the time he made the census of the Indians in the State of New York, in 1845.

Mrs. Cochran, youngest daughter of General Schuyler, said on one occasion that she had attended church in Utica, N. Y., and had sat at the communion-table with Oneida Indians by the name of Schuyler.[1] They were probably the descendants of Han Yost. Other persons have also mentioned meeting Oneida Indians named Schuyler. Mr. Schoolcraft also says in his Report:

"The last persons executed for witchcraft among the Oneidas suffered about forty years ago (1805). They were two females. The executioner was the notorious Hon Yost of Revolutionary memory. He entered the lodge according to a prior decree of the Council, and struck them down with a tomahawk."

This would show that he had been adopted by the Oneidas, and made one of their sachems. It is not probable that they would have intrusted the execution of a capital sentence to a stranger.

[1] Lossing's Life of Philip Schuyler, vol. i., p. 67.

DAVID SCHUYLER (74) resided for a time in Cobleskill, Schoharie County, N. Y., where he married, and where his children were born. After the death of his wife, in 1802, he removed to Albany, and thence to Johnstown, N. Y., where he died and was buried. His occupation was that of a merchant.

WILSON W. SCHUYLER (121) was elected a judge of Northampton County, Pa., November, 1881. He is a graduate of Williams College, and was admitted to the bar in 1854.

E.

THE MOHAWK VALLEY SCHUYLERS.

JACOB SCHUYLER, the ancestor of this branch of the Schuylers, with his large family of sons and daughters, emigrated from New Jersey, and settled in Florida, Montgomery County, N. Y., in the year 1790. No one of his descendants traces their pedigree farther back than Jacob, who was born on March 24, 1734. As in many other families, there is a tradition, repeated with variations, that early in the eighteenth century three persons by the name of Schuyler, supposed to be brothers, came to this country from Holland, and settled in different localities, one in New Jersey, one in Delaware, and the third in Albany, N. Y. The different versions of the story, as given by different members of the family, indicate quite clearly that it is nothing more than a tradition, without a substantial basis, such as I have heard repeated by members of the other branches time and again. There is, however, abundant evidence that Jacob came, with his family, from New Jersey to New York, at the time mentioned.

Jacob is a name of frequent use by David Pieterse Schuyler and his descendants, derived originally from the Verplancks ; and, as some of David's grandsons removed to New Jersey early in the last century, I am strongly impressed with the conviction that Jacob Schuyler, of Florida, N. Y., was a son of one of them. The date of his birth proves that he belonged to the generation of David's great-grandsons, the fourth of the American Schuylers. We know that Abraham and Dirck, sons of Abraham Davidse Schuyler,

lived in New Brunswick. Of Johannes, son of Pieter Davidse, we have no trace, except that about fifty-six years after his baptism he was buried in the church at Albany, a proof that he had had a position and an estate entitling him to such a burial. Of his brother Philip, after the baptism of his child, we know nothing. We have only glimpses of David, Harmanus, and Myndert, sons of David Davidse, and of their brother Anthony we have not the slightest trace. It is therefore quite legitimate to infer that some one of the seven or eight was the father of Jacob Schuyler, of Florida.

It is possible that Johannes, son of Pieter Davidse, emigrated to New Jersey, where many of the Albanians sought a home, that they might own lands and secure safety for their families from prowling savages. Once in that land of hope and promise, all traces of them were lost from the records, church and municipal, of Albany, and only known to future generations by Bible and other family records. The only reason why I suppose Johannes may have been his father, is the fact that he named his eldest son John. His eldest daughter and a few others may have been named for his wife's mother and her family, but the majority were given names which belonged to the Albany Schuylers.

But it is idle to speculate. The question may be solved ultimately by an old Dutch Bible, now stored away in some closet or garret waiting for an antiquarian to bring it to light. The ancestors of the Mohawk Schuylers, whoever they may be, if they now take an interest in their descendants, cannot be otherwise than gratified. They are a fine race of men. Farming has been, and is yet, their favorite business. But among them are individuals of other pursuits—merchants, bankers, manufacturers, lawyers, doctors. The Mohawk Valley was soon too small to hold their wonderful increase, and they overflowed its narrow limits into other parts of the State.

GENEALOGICAL TABLE.

1. JACOB SCHUYLER, b. March 24, 1734.[1]
   m. *Eve Swackhamer.*
   2. ELIZABETH, b. March 10, 1755.
   3. CHRISTINA, b. September 1, 1757.
   4. JOHN, b. March 2, 1758; was twice married, but to whom is not stated. He died in 1852, at his residence in Charlestown, Montgomery County, N. Y.
   5. CATHERINE, b. March 29, 1760.
   6. DOLLY (Dorothy), b. October 2, 1762.
   7. JACOB, b. February 2, 1764.
      m. *Martha Fancher.*
   8. MARGARET, b. February 13, 1766.
   9. ANN, b. July 6, 1767.
   10. PHILIP, b. October 22, 1769.
      m. *Mary Kinnan.*
   11. SAMUEL, b. May 22, 1771.
      m. *Abigail Fancher*, b. November 25, 1772.
   12. EVE, b. September 14, 1772.
   13. WILLIAM, b. March 2, 1776.
      m. *Mary Serviss.*
   14. DANIEL, b. July 30, 1779.
      m. 1, *Anna Thomas.*
      m. 2, *Elane Hitts.*

4. JOHN SCHUYLER and —— ——.[2]
   15. JACOB, b. 1782, d. y.
   16. ANNA, b. 1783, d. January, 1810.
   17. WILLIAM, b. 1784, d. 1858; moved to Geddes, N. Y., 1825, d. 1860.
   18. JOHN, b. March, 1787, d. 1875; moved to Marcellus, Onondaga County, N. Y.
   19. EVA, b. March, 1791, d. 1863.
   20. SAMUEL, b. September, 1794, d. 1870; residence, Charlestown, Montgomery County, N. Y.

[1] From the Bible records of James H. Schuyler, of Amsterdam, N. Y.

[2] Records of Daniel J. Schuyler, of Three Mile Bay, N. Y., and Records of John W. Schuyler, of Geddes, N. Y.

21. PHILIP, b. March, 1797, d. 1869; residence, 1825 and later, Geddes, Onondaga County, N. Y.
22. DANIEL J., b. 1806; residence after 1835 Three Mile Bay, Jefferson County, N. Y., d. since 1878.
23. GARRET L., b. April 6, 1809; residence, 1878, Esperance, Schoharie County, N. Y.
24. PETER, b. January 8, 1819; lived in Iowa in 1878.

Garret L. (23) had one son and two daughters. Pieter (24) had one son, named John.

7. JACOB SCHUYLER and *Martha Fancher.*[1]

26. RICHARD, b. June 8, 1788.
m. *Kate McMaster.*
27. JACOB, b. August 26, 1789.
m. *Mary Serviss.*
28. JOHN J., b. May 26, 1791.
m. *Susan Shaw.*
29. JEREMIAH, b. November 20, 1794.
m. 1, *Evalina Fredericks.*
m. 2, *Jemima Dorn.*
30. WILLIAM, b. May 27, 1798, d. y.
31. THOMAS, b. April 22, 1802.
m. *Ellen Sheppard.*

Besides these six sons, there were nine daughters whose names were not given me. In November, 1877, all were deceased, except Jeremiah, aged 83 years, and his sister Eve, aged 90 years.

10. PHILIP SCHUYLER and *Mary Kinnan.*[2]

32. JOHN, b. September 15, 1791.
33. EFFIE, b. September 23, 1793.
34. ANNE, b. December 25, 1795.
35. MARY, b. February 2, 1798.
36. ELIZABETH, b. January 8, 1800.
37. KATE, b. August 11, 1802.
38. JACOB R., b. December 24, 1804.
39. PHILEMON, b. May 31, 1807.
40. THOMAS R., b. August 18, 1809.
41. SUSAN, b. July 14, 1812.
42. EMMELINE, b. April 14, 1814.
43. GEORGE A., b. April 28, 1818.
m. *Lucy A. Bellman.*

11. SAMUEL SCHUYLER and *Abigail Fancher.*[3]

44. JACOB, b. April 17, 1796.
m. *Marilla Lockwood.*

---

[1] Bible Records. [2] Bible Records of George A. Schuyler, of Seneca Falls, N. Y.
[3] Bible Records of James H. Schuyler.

45. SARAH, b. August 1, 1798.
46. RICHARD I., b. February 24, 1800.
m. *Gertrude Veeder.*
47. EVE, b. October 26, 1801.
48. ELIZA, b. January 31, 1804.
49. WILLIAM, b. September 12, 1805.
m. *Jemima Tunnernan.*
50. SAMUEL, b. August 22, 1808, d. y.
51. ANN MARIA, b. May 15, 1810.
52. JOHN ARDEN, b. January 11, 1812.
m. *Frances Phipps.*

13. WILLIAM SCHUYLER and *Mary Serviss.*
53. WINSLOW.
54. JACOB.

14. DANIEL SCHUYLER and 1, *Anna Thomas.*
2, *Elane Hitts.*
55. JOHN.
56. JACOB, b. May 29, 1840.
57. DANIEL.
Besides these three sons, there were thirteen daughters.

17. WILLIAM SCHUYLER and —— ——.
58. JOHN W.
59. DAVID M.

18. JOHN SCHUYLER, JR., and —— ——.
He had two daughters.

20. SAMUEL SCHUYLER and —— ——.
60. JOHN S., d. about 1860.
61. GARRET L.; resided, 1878, in New York City.
62. AARON; resided, 1878, in New York City.
63. ISAAC; residence unknown.
64. JACOB; lived in Iowa, and had two daughters.

21. PHILIP SCHUYLER and —— ——.
Had one son and four daughters.

22. DANIEL J. SCHUYLER and —— ——.
65. ANNA, b. September 29, 1828.
m. *B. F. Austin*, New York City.
66. SARAH, b. October 9, 1830.
m. *E. B. Wynn*, Watertown, N. Y.
67. CLARISSA, b. December 12, 1832.
m. *C. W. McKinstry.*
68. SEMANTHA, b. April 6, 1835.
m. *James A. Austin.*
69. JOHN, b. August 19, 1837.

26. RICHARD SCHUYLER and *Kate McMaster*, of Mohawk Flats.
    70. JACOB, m. 1, *Harriet Wemple.*
        m. 2, —— *Counac.*
    71. HAMILTON, m. *Magdelain Narr.*
    72. THOMAS, m. *Maria Wemple.*
    73. HIRAM, m. *Elizabeth Narr.*
    74. JOHN, m. —— *Switz.*
    75. JAY, m. —— *Corwin.*
    76. GEORGE, m. *Elizabeth Davis.*
    77. ALONZO, m. *Sarah Wemple.*
    Besides these eight sons, there were two daughters.

27. JACOB SCHUYLER and *Mary Serviss.*
    78. GEORGE S., b. February 22, 1818.
        m. 1, *Clarissa Van Schaick.*
        m. 2, *Ann Olen.*
    79. JAMES H., b. December 2, 1819.
        m. 1, —— *Putman.*
        m. 2, *Hannah Losher.*
    80. JACOB T., b. January 15, 1821.
        m. *Abigail Martin.*
    81. WILLIAM T., b. February 4, 1823.
        m. *Ida Van Evera.*
    There is also one daughter. Family residence, Glen, Montgomery County, N. Y.

28. JOHN J. SCHUYLER and *Susan Shaw.*
    82. GEORGE.
    And three daughters.

29. JEREMIAH SCHUYLER and *Evaline Fredericks.*
    83. JAMES H., b. October 27, 1821.
        m. *Harriet A. Ingham.*
    84. JACOB, b. November 15, 1828.
        m. *Maria Mabee.*
    And four daughters.

29. JEREMIAH SCHUYLER and *Jemima Dorn.*
    85. JOHN D., m. *Anna Stewart.*
    86. ANDREW J., m. *Sarah Stearling.*
    87. FRANK H.
    And three daughters.

31. THOMAS SCHUYLER and *Ellen Sheppard.*
    88. JACOB, m. *Ann Shuler.*
    89. RALPH, m. *Harriet Herrick.*
    90. WILLIAM, m. *Margaret Lockwood.*
    And four daughters.

39. PHILEMON SCHUYLER and —— ——.
    91. JOHN.
    92. MARGARET.
    93. FATIMA.
    94. ANNA.
    95. ARCHIBALD.
    96. CHARLES.
    97. WILLIAM.

40. THOMAS R. SCHUYLER and —— ——.
    98. HARRIET A.
    99. HAMILTON.
    100. MARY ANN.
    101. CHARLES.
    102. JACOB R.
    103. NANCY.

43. GEORGE A. SCHUYLER and *Lucy A. Bellman.*
    104. MARY F., b. June 29, 1844.
    105. LODUSKY, b. March 23, 1847.
    106. GEORGE O., b. October 16, 1848.
    107. DENCY E., b. February 5, 1850.
    108. MINERVA A., b. July 22, 1854.

44. JACOB SCHUYLER and *Marilla Lockwood.*
    109. WALTER.
    110. JAMES.
    And seven daughters.

46. RICHARD SCHUYLER and *Gertrude Veeder.*
    111. HARVEY.
    112. HORATIO.
    113. WINSOR.
    114. SAMUEL.
    115. ALFRED.
    116. CHARLES.
    And seven daughters.

49. WILLIAM SCHUYLER and *Jemima Tunnerman.*
    117. WILLIAM.
    118. CHARLES.
    And three daughters.

52. JOHN ARDEN SCHUYLER and *Frances Phipps.*
    119. DUANE.
    120. SAMUEL.
    121. FRANCIS.
    122. PHIPPS.
    And three daughters.

56. JACOB SCHUYLER and *Josephine Swartwood.*
    123. JACOB, b. November 29, 1840.
    124. WILLIS B., b. September 4, 1864.

56. JACOB SCHUYLER and *Emily Sanford.*
    125. SANFORD, b. May 28, 1872.
    And three daughters.

58. JOHN W. SCHUYLER and —— ——.
    126. WILLIAM A.
    127. O. P.
    128. ADELE.

59. DAVID M. SCHUYLER and —— ——.
    129. CHARLES; resides in Van Buren, and has two children, 1878.
    130. JAMES; resides in De Witt, and has one child, 1878.

78. GEORGE S. SCHUYLER and *Clarissa Van Schaick.*
    131. NEWTON.
    132. JACOB.
    133. FREDERICK.
    134. FRANK.
    And three daughters.

79. JAMES H. SCHUYLER and —— *Putman.*
    135. JACOB.
    136. JOHN.
    137. CLARENCE.
    138. ELMER.
    And six daughters.

80. JACOB T. SCHUYLER and *Abigail Martin.*
    139. MARTIN J., b. December 14, 1851.
    140. JACOB L., b. February 9, 1857.
    And six daughters.

81. WILLIAM T. SCHUYLER and *Ida Van Evera.*
    141. PETER.
    And one daughter.

83. JAMES H. SCHUYLER and *Harriet A. Ingham.*
    142. FRANK.
    And two daughters.

84. JACOB SCHUYLER and *Maria Mabee.*
    Two daughters.

86. ANDREW J. SCHUYLER and *Sarah Stearling.*
    143. JEREMIAH.
    144. HIRAM.

88. JACOB SCHUYLER and *Ann Shuler.*
  145. FRANK.
    And two daughters.

89. RALPH SCHUYLER and *Harriet Herrick.*
  146. EUGENE.
  147. IRWAN.
    And two daughters.

90. WILLIAM SCHUYLER and *Margaret Lockwood.*
  148. THOMAS.
    And two daughters.

139. MARTIN J. SCHUYLER and —— ——.
  149. LESTER J., b. March 17, 1876.
  150. EDWARD F. T., b. September 11, 1878.

The Schuylers residing in the valley of the Mohawk are of different families, and unable for the most part to trace any kinship. Besides the known descendants of David Schuyler, and the "Mohawk Valley Schuylers," descending from Jacob Schuyler, there are the probable descendants of Rev. Johannes Schuyler, others of Arent Schuyler's line, and probably some belonging to Colonel Peter Schuyler's family. It would require much patient work to separate them and place them in their respective lines. The labor is all the more difficult because many of them have followed the tide of emigration into parts of the State lying beyond, and from thence to the States and Territories of the West. The work involved so much time and labor that I gave it up, although with much reluctance.

F.

REV. JOHANNES SCHUYLER.

SHORTLY after I became interested in genealogy, I found in the colonial documents mention made of a "Mr. Schuyler, the Presbyterian minister of Schoharie." As he was the first of the name in the ministerial profession, I was curious to know not only to which of the Schuyler families he belonged, but also to learn something of his personal history. For this purpose I wrote to a friend in Middleburgh, Schoharie County, who placed my letter in the hands of George L. Danforth, Esq., whose tastes and acquirements admirably fitted him for the work. After patient investigation, he replied to my inquiries as follows:

"I find, by searching the records (in German) of the Lutheran Church at Schoharie, and those of the Reformed (Dutch) Church (in Dutch and German), and by an examination of the foundation-stones of the present Lutheran Church, and of the old Dutch Church, now called the Fort,[1] as follows:

[1] This building was of stone, and completed in 1772–73. During the War of the Revolution it was occupied as a fort for the protection of the inhabitants from the murderous forays of the savages and their more savage allies, the Tories. It served its purpose admirably. In the raid of Sir John Johnson and the Indian chief Joseph Brant, through the Schoharie Valley, in 1780, a feeble demonstration was made against the fort, and a cannon-ball was lodged in the cornice. The sharp-shooters stationed in the tower and a discharge of grape-shot drove off the enemy, who then pursued their march down the valley to the Mohawk.

It was finally abandoned by the church, but in memory of its usefulness in the war it has been preserved, and kept in repair by a public tax, as a

"Rev. Johannes Schuyler was pastor of the Protestant High Dutch Reformed Church of Schoharie from 1736 to 1755, and from 1766 to 1779.

"Although the book containing the marriage records was destroyed when the old parsonage was burned, it appears from other records that Mr. Schuyler married Annatje Veeder, of Schenectady, in 1743.

"The book of Baptisms escaped destruction. It begins with the year 1731. Among the recorded baptisms are four children of Johannes Schuyler and Annatje Veeder, his wife, to wit: Gulielmus (William), Jan. 1. 1748; Johannes, Jan. 1751; Petrus, Jan. 3. 1753; Simeon, Augt 10. 1755.

"On one of the foundation-stones of the Lutheran Church, erected 1750, is found JOH' SCHUYLER, V.D.M. (minister of the word of God).

"In the records of the Lutheran Church it appears he baptized a child in 1746; and on October 6, 1753, he married Christian Schulekaft (Schoolcraft ?) to Elizabeth Mag. Becker.

"Here, too, is recorded his death: Died, April 16, 1779, Rev. Johannes Schuyler, at Schoharie, 69 years of age, and in the fortieth year of his service in this place.

"On the east wall of the Old Stone Fort is found, near the door, cut in the stone: Johan^{s}. Schuyler V. D. M. 1772, as also the names of Peter Schuyler and Philip Schuyler. The records show that Dominie Schuyler was buried under the pulpit.

"Johannes Schuyler was the first Dutch minister ordained in this country. Previously to 1736 all ordinations were performed in Holland. By express permission of the Classis of Amsterdam Dominies Ericksen and Haeghoort were appointed to ordain Mr. Schuyler, and the cere-

---

monument, and called the Old Stone Fort. It is finely situated on a bluff commanding an extensive view up and down the valley of Schoharie Creek, and surrounded by the graves of the fathers. The grounds are nicely kept, and shaded with native trees. It is a place of much resort, visited by strangers as one of the historical localities of the State.

mony was performed in 1736. He immediately settled at Schoharie, where he remained until 1755. Under his pastorate the church formally ranged itself with the Reformed Dutch Church. Dominie Schuyler and his elders took an active part in the efforts to form an American ecclesiastical judiciary, which finally resulted in the formation of the General Synod.[1]

"For some reason not known, he resigned from the church at Schoharie, in 1755, and accepted a call from the churches of Hackensack and Scralenberg, N. J., where he remained until 1766, when he returned to the church of Schoharie, assuming, in connection with that charge, the pastorate of the church at Beaverdam.[2] It was toward the close of his second settlement that a new church was erected, now the Old Stone Fort.

According to tradition Dominie Schuyler was a man of fine education and large attainments. He preached for an hundred miles around, and was the great Dutch dominie of this section of country; as Peter Nicholas Somers, pastor of the Lutheran Church from 1742 to 1786, was the

---

[1] The following letter from the manuscripts of Sir William Johnson (18, 56) is interesting:

"Schonactenday Feby 4th 1747. 8

"Col^l Johnson

"J^r

"Some Indians are now att my House and they Tell me that Mr Lydias Had promised they should have one Minister and they have appointed the Rev^d M^r. Schuyler of Schohary to come to them—two 3 or 4 Time In one year and they together with the Christians are willing to pay their parts and also Desired me to go with them to the maquas to assist them what some they could make out they also spoke to Mr Schuyler who is willing to Doe that service this I acquaint you and Desire your answer no more att present but am with Respect your most

"humble serv^t— to Comand

"ALBET VAN SLYCK.

"I judge in my opinion that its more hononable for you than to lett Mr Lydias thake that interest among them I leave you to judge."

[2] In the records of the German Reformed Church of Stone Arabia is this entry: "Rev. Johannes Schuyler preacher of Stone Arabia and Schoharie, Oct. 27, 1743."—*W. V. Van Benschoten.*

great Lutheran dominie. He was a faithful and beloved pastor, as well a true patriot and lover of his country. By his stirring sermons in the pulpit, and addresses on the platform, toward the close of life, he animated his brethren for the Revolutionary struggle."

Thus wrote my friend in June, 1877. Nearly a year after he gave me an address by which I was enabled to procure some information as to Dominie Schuyler's descendants. But, before entering upon that part of the subject, some reference should be made to his pastoral relations with the churches of Hackensack and Scralenberg. All that can be said is contained in Corwin's "Manual of the Reformed (Dutch) Church" and Taylor's "History of the Classis of Bergen."

It appears that before Dominie Schuyler left Schoharie his mind had undergone some change in reference to an American synod. He gradually shifted his position, and at last adhered to the opposite party in the Church. As such he received his call to Hackensack and Scralenberg, and soon thereafter organized a second church in each place. From the history of those churches, it is fair to infer that his position was not comfortable to himself or beneficial to his flock. Divisions and contentions prevailed, not only in the church, but in families. Efforts were made for reconciliation and unity without avail. The fury of passion and prejudice required time to spend itself. Before this was done, Dominie Schuyler resigned and returned to his old field of labor. We hear nothing more of church difficulties. He had learned a useful lesson among the New Jersey Dutchmen, and resolved not to thrust his hand again in the fire ecclesiastical. Political questions arose involving the freedom of the country, and to them he devoted his talents and activities.

For several years I have made persistent efforts to learn

something more than what is contained in Mr. Danforth's letter and church histories as to the parentage and personal history of Rev. Johannes Schuyler. I have written numerous letters, and have made three journeys, for the purpose of procuring information. Despite all my efforts the results are meagre. Mrs. Margaret Snell, of Herkimer, N. Y., a great-granddaughter of the dominie's; and Dr. F. H. Roof, of Rhinebeck, one of whose ancestors was a sister of Mr. Schuyler, gave me about all I have learned, but not enough to satisfy my curiosity, or to determine the place he occupies in the Schuyler genealogy.

When General Philip Schuyler was engaged in the work of the Inland Lock Navigation Company, according to Mr. J. R. Simms, the historian, he wrote a very complimentary letter to Philip Schuyler, son of the dominie, born at Hackensack, N. J., promising him special remuneration for the assistance which he had rendered to the company. Mr. Simms added that he understood they were near relatives, the general and Philip's father being first cousins. They were, without doubt, relatives, but more distant than first cousins, even had they belonged to the same branch of the Schuyler family. But I have not found it possible to place them in the same line. It is probable that the dominie was a native of New Jersey, as would appear from the fact that he was ordained by New Jersey clergymen. Such also was the recollection of Mrs. Woods, of Cato, N. Y., a granddaughter of his sister, Mrs. Van Alstyne. Mrs. Woods, in 1878, was ninety years old, but with faculties unimpaired. He cannot, however, be placed in line with Arent Schuyler's descendants, and we are hence forced to the conclusion that he belongs to the family of David Schuyler, perhaps nearly related to Jacob Schuyler's family, of Florida, N. Y.

Dr. Roof wrote to me that Elizabeth, a sister of Rev.

Johannes Schuyler, born in 1720, was the wife of a paternal ancestor of his, Gosen M. Van Alstyne, of Canajoharie, N. Y. In a book once belonging to Mr. Schuyler, but now to Dr. Roof, on the first page is the name of "Anna Schuyler," and on the last the record of the birth and baptism of Margaret, only daughter of Rev. Johannes Schuyler, who was born and baptized at Hackensack. She was married to Andries Van Wie, July 4, 1788, in Florida, Montgomery County, by Rev. John Damster. She had six children, and died in 1813.

From the data given me by Mr. Danforth, Mrs. Snell, and Dr. Roof, I am enabled to give the following

TABLE OF THE DESCENDANTS OF THE REV. JOHANNES SCHUYLER.

1. JOHANNES SCHUYLER and *Annatje Veeder.*
   2. WILLIAM, bp. January 1, 1748.
   3. JOHANNES, b. January, 1751; d. in Manlius, N. Y., aged 81 years.
      m. 1, *Jannetje Vrooman.*
      m. 2, —— ——.
   4. PETRUS, bp. January 3, 1753.
   5. SIMEON, bp. August 10, 1755.
   6. PHILIP.
   7. MARGARET, b. February 22, 1763.
      m. *Andries Van Wie.*

3. JOHANNES SCHUYLER and *Jannetje Vrooman.*
   8. JOHN, d. in Danube, N. Y.
      m. —— *Van Driessen*, of Schenectady.

3. JOHANNES SCHUYLER and —— ——.
   9. PETER, d. s. p. in Danube, N. Y.
   10. GARRIT, d. s. p.
   11. ANNATJE, m. *Hunter Van Alstyne.*

8. JOHN SCHUYLER and —— *Van Driessen.*
   12. JOHN J., m. —— ——; removed from Herkimer to Marion, and Sodus, Wayne County, N. Y.
   13. HENRY J., m. —— ——; removed from Herkimer to Syracuse, N. Y.
   14. MARGARET J., m. —— *Snell;* residence, Herkimer.

12. JOHN J. SCHUYLER and —— ——.
    15. JOHN, m. —— ——.
        And two daughters.

13. HENRY J. SCHUYLER and —— ——.
    16. A Son, d. y.
    17. ANNETTE, m. —— *Cook*, of Syracuse, N. Y.
    18. ADA, m. —— *Dennison*, of Syracuse.

15. JOHN SCHUYLER and —— ——.
    19. JOHN.
    20. GEORGE.

ANDRIES VAN WIE and *Margaret Schuyler* (7).
21. HENDRICK.
22. ANNATJE.
23. JOHN SCHUYLER.
24. ELIZABETH.
25. PHILIP.
26. MARGARET.

This table embraces only the descendants of Johannes, second son of Rev. Johannes Schuyler, and the children of his daughter Margaret. All that I have been able to learn of his other children can be told in a few words. Of William, his eldest son, I have found no trace. Peter's name appears on the wall of the Old Fort, with his father's and his brother Philip's, but nothing more is known of him. Simeon is said to have perished in a winter's storm, while on his way from his home to Albany, and to have left no descendants. Philip was probably a "master builder," who, according to the records, erected the German Church in Stone Arabia in 1788. The letter of General Schuyler, before referred to, would indicate that he had a knowledge of mechanics. It is not known that he had a family. Mrs. Snell supposed he might have removed to Booneville, N. Y., where she knew that a Philip Schuyler had been in business, but I have since learned that the Booneville Schuyler was a descendant of Arent Schuyler, of New Jersey.

G.

THE PHILADELPHIA SCHUYLERS.

In July, 1879, a friend sent to me the names of the Schuylers contained in the Directory of Philadelphia. I wrote to three of the nine, and received an answer from one, Mr. David H. Schuyler. He informed me that his family was the only one in the city of Dutch extraction, the others being German, spelling their name in the same way as ours, but pronouncing it *Shuler*. He said that he was connected with the Albany Schuylers, but could not give me the names of the particular families with whom he claimed affinity. Subsequently his mother gave me more particulars. She said that the name of her late husband's grandfather was John Schuyler, whose wife was an Englishwoman named Jane Swain. That their eldest son, Philip Rensselaer, was born in Albany, moved with his father to Philadelphia, where he married Margaret May, had three sons, and died in 1857, at the age of seventy-six years. The names of his sons were John, William, and Philip Rensselaer, of whom the latter was her husband, and that her son's full name was David Henry Schuyler. This was all I could learn in reference to the Philadelphia Schuylers.

In connection with this family there is an anecdote which it may not be amiss to relate.

In the battle of the Brandywine, September, 1777, the Honorable John Theophilus Rawdon, brother of Lord Rawdon, afterward Lord Hastings, Goverhor-General of

India, was severely wounded. His leg was amputated, and for six months he was an inmate of Schuyler's house, in Philadelphia, where he received the best of care until he was fully recovered. More than an hundred years after, a grandson of this officer, Lord Arthur Russell, brother of the Duke of Bedford, met a member of the Schuyler family, and related the story, saying that the kindness of the Schuylers had not been forgotten, and that he had always been desirous of knowing the identical family, as gratitude to them had been inculcated in him from his infancy.

Knowing these facts, I mentioned to Mr. David Henry Schuyler, in my correspondence with him, that I wished to learn the name of the Schuyler who had entertained a wounded English officer after the battle of the Brandywine, without giving any name or other clue to his identity. He replied that his great-grandfather, John Schuyler, had married an Englishwoman, and that his house had been open to more than one sick or wounded officer, and added that he had an engraving of the house in which they had been entertained.

In contrast with this, there is another fact which should be told. In the war of 1812–15, Philip Schuyler, eldest son of the man who had taken such good care of the Honorable John Theophilus Rawdon, unfortunately was taken prisoner by the English, and sent to Dartmoor prison. He was enabled to survive its horrors, and return to his family, without meeting with any particular kindness from his captors. The Dartmoor prisoner, on his return, resumed his business in Philadelphia, and accumulated a fine estate, which remains with his descendants.

H.

OTHER SCHUYLERS.

THERE are still other Schuylers who can trace no relationship to the families mentioned in this book. Such perhaps are the Oneida Indians named Schuyler, whom I have thought possibly the descendants of Han Yost. Such certainly are the Schuylers living in several parts of the State of New York, who derive their descent from manumitted slaves of various branches of the family. Some of these are, to their credit, men of wealth and influence.

THE END.

INDEX.

Abeel, John, i. 398—ii. 131, 132, 379, 459, 461.
Abenakis, the Indians, ii. 117, 228—Sachems visit Albany, 230—refuse to stop the war, 235.
Abercromby, General (Abercrombie) i. 153—ii. 123, 211.
Abrahams, Timothy G., ii. 402.
Adams, John Quincy, i. 95, 96.
Addison and the Spectator, ii. 38, 39.
Adjutant of French Army, his journal, ii. 114.
Adrian, Mich., ii. 471.
Africa, i. 84.
Albany, Fort at, i. 10, 314, 337—records of, 100, 101—fort below, 102—Dutch of, 109—first church, 109—second church, 110—ii. 419—a frontier town, 304, 305—William and Mary proclaimed, 344—dread of Leisler, 345—Leisler attempts to gain control, 349 *et seq.*—Rumors of the French, 346—appeal to New England, 347—preparations for defence, 348—convention of, 352—reinforced by Connecticut, 352—militia reorganized, 368—smallpox, 372—expedition against, 396—council at, 415—convention, 421 *et seq.*—census, 1689, 427—importance of post, 430—alarms, 433—fortified, 434—conference, 443—consternation, 452—council, 476—decay of fortifications, 487—conference with Bellomont, 492—Common Council of, 50—authorities of, address President Schuyler, 76—privileged to buy part of Schaghticoke, 100—buys all Schaghticoke, 101—convention, 126—Common Council excited, 137—Rural Cemetery, 157, 273—not a desirable residence, 187—centre of Indian trade, 317—name changed to Willemstadt, 457—Albany County, 267, 269, 282—ii. 320.
Albanians arrest French refugees, ii. 108.
Aldrich, ii. 397, 398.
Alexander, James, ii. 81.
Algonquins, overwhelmed by Iroquois, i. 312.
Allan, John, ii, 174.
Alleghany County, ii. 281.
——— River, i. 310.
Allen, Ethan, ii. 124, 265.
———, Lathrop, ii. 474.
———, Mary H., ii. 201.
———, Judge William, i. 284.
Allerton, Isaac, i. 91.
Allyn, John, i. 366—Secretary of Connecticut, 368, 375, 376.
Alofsen, S., i. 181—ii. 284.
Alrichs, Director, i. 50, 51, 52, 53, 54, 55, 57, 58.
Altona, i. 52, 53, 61.
Ambler, Julia, ii. 441, 443.
Amboy, ii. 208.
America, i. 34, 239, 243, 276, 316, 355.
American Lady, the, i. 155-6—ii. 159, 278, 280.
Amersfoort, i. 28, 207.
Amherst, General, ii. 123, 212, 320, 321.
Amory, John, ii. 397.
Amstel, Fort, 51.
Amsterdam, i. 49, 52, 57, 60, 62, 78, 99, 118, 178, 206, 208, 214.
———, Classics of, i. 239—ii. 420, 489.
———, Fort, surrender of, i. 84.
———, merchants of, i. 6, 8, 101, 102.
Ancram, i. 283.
Anderson, Smith W., ii. 197.
Andros, Sir Edmund, Governor of New York, 1674-1682, 1688, i. 86, 87, 108, 193ff, 218, 219, 238, 243, 274, 293, 333, 334, 336, 337, 507—ii. 166, 292, 331, 349, 436—letter to Schuyler, 109—arrives in New York, 334—arrested in Boston, 335.
Andryesse, Myndert, i. 113.

Angelica, N. Y., ii. 281.
Annapolis, ii. 31.
Ann, Fort, i. 236, 316.
Anthony, Allard, i. 293.
Anthony's Nose, i. 182, *n.*, 198.
Anti-Leislerian, i. 260, 262.
Anti-Remonstrants, i. 239.
Anti-Rent Agitation, i. 284, 285.
Antwerp, i. 208.
Apache Campaigns, ii. 393, 394.
——— Indians, ii. 394.
Aquadarondes, Onondaga Sachem, i. 412.
Aravaipa Mountains, ii. 394.
Archbishop of Canterbury, i. 265.
Arizona, ii. 393.
Arminians, the, i. 9, 239.
Arms, Schuyler, i. 111. Van Rensselaer, 206.
Arnhem, i. 207.
Arnold, General Benedict, ii. 17, 266, 267, 325, 475, 476.
———, Thomas, ii. 411.
Arondeus, Pastor, ii. 431, 432.
Argal, Governor, i. 89.
Ashhurst, Sir William, i. 483.
Ash Island, ii. 114.
Asia Minor, ii. 373.
Aspinwall, Angelica, ii. 153.
Assembly, Provincial, i. 226, 262, 267, 268, 269, 270, 271, 273, 279, 294.
Assembly of New York, ii. 468.
Atagaronche, ii. 116.
Atchin, i. 208.
Atlantic Ocean, the eastern boundary of Massachusetts, i. 78.
Atwood, Justice, ii. 10, 11.
Auditor-general, a sinecure, i. 430.
Aunt Schuyler, ii. 160.
Australia, ii. 216.
Austrian Succession, War of, ii. 113.
Autocrat of the Breakfast Table, ii. 319.

Babbington, Samuel, ii. 67.
Backer, Jacobsen, i. 140.
Baker, Mr., ii. 453.
———, J. P. ii. 410.
Baldwin University, ii. 201.
Baltimore, Lord, i. 53, 54, 55, 56.
———, Md., ii. 443.
Bambar, Louisa, ii. 200.
Banca, Sarah, ii. 406.
Bancker, Evert, i. 453, 465—ii. 101, 135, 136, 137, 138, 144, 235—character of, 141.
———, Gerrit, ii. 141.
———, Jannetje, ii. 462, 463.
Bancroft, George, i. 304—ii. 265, 271, 272.
Bangs, Anson, ii. 379.
Bangs, Bleecker, ii. 379.
———, Isaac, ii. 217—his journal, 218, 221.
Barbadoes, i. 64—ii 436.
Barneveldt, i. 208.
———, Olden, i. 6, 9, 10, 28, 207.
Barre, de la, M. i. 318—expedition against Iroquois, 319, 320—relieved by Denonville, 325.
Barrington, Jonah, Sir, ii. 318.
Barton, Philip, ii. 411.
———, Rufus, ii. 348.
———, Captain Aquile, ii. 449.
———, Morey Hale, ii. 449, 455.
Bates Creek, ii. 394.
Bath, ii. 281.
Batten Kill, ii. 96, 98, 107, 120, 125, 127, 135, 247, 274.
Baxter (Stuyvesant's secretary), 73.
———, Gervis, ii. 95.
———, Major, ii. 109, 110.
Bayard family, ii. 133, 343.
———, Ariantje, 293.
———, Balthazar, i. 293, 338—ii. 11, 342.
——, Maritje Lookermans, i. 293.
———, Nicholas, i. 193, 194, 197, 201, 341ff, 344, 378, 379—ii. 110, 285, 295, 342, 347—arrested, 195, 344, 167—sketch of, 10—sentenced to death, 12.
———, Peter, ii. 11, 196, 339.
———, Samuel, i. 201—ii. 190, 193.
Beauharnois de, Marquis, ii. 112—as to Peter Schuyler's children, 92—organized an expedition, 114.
Beauvais, ii. 116, 117, 118.
Beaverdam, ii. 490.
Beavers, as currency, i. 104.
Becker, Elizabeth, Mag. ii. 489.
Bedford, Duke of, ii. 496.
Beeckman, Eva, ii. 463.
———, Gerardus, i. 203, 377, 508—ii. 205.
———, Peter, ii. 400.
Beekman, Col. Henry, i. 203, 290.
———, Hester (Wendell), ii. 152, 414, 419.
———, Johannes, ii. 419.
———, William, i. 53, 54, 58, 61, 62, 203.
Beeren Island, i. 311.
Begum, East Indian, ii. 172, 433.
Belleville (N. J.), i. 226—ii. 205, 217.
Bellman, Lucy A., ii. 482, 485.
Bellomont, Earl of, Governor of New York 1698-1701, i. 117, 192, 196, 199, 234, 255-277, 427, 491, 508—ii. 11, 23, 95, 110, 138, 139, 140, 141, 143, 146, 149, 167, 226, 228, 285, 350, 427—appointed governor, 461—antipathy to Fletcher, 461—letter to Mon-

sieur de Callières, 463—letter from Frontenac, 465—complaints, 466—reorganizes Board of Commissioners, 467—at Albany, 468—sharp letter to Frontenac, 469, 473—in Boston, 475, 481—letter to Lords of Trade, 482 *et seq.*—instructs Indian Board, 484—troubles, 487 *et seq.*—perquisites, 494—complaints of Albany people, 495—wishes increase of salary, 496—lack of tact, 497—a blunder, 499—stupidity, 503—complaint against Schuyler, 505—slanders Col. Schuyler, ii. 1—thought the Five Nations lost, 2—died, 2—thinks New England should be grateful, ii. 230.
Bemis' Heights, 291.
Benckes, Gov., 507.
Benedict, Betsy (Scribner), ii. 440.
Bennewe, Eva, ii. 372.
Bennington, ii. 27, 326.
Bensen, Alice, ii. 465.
Benson, Egbert, ii. 274.
Bergen, classis of, ii. 491.
Bergentown, ii. 189.
Berkeley, Lord, i. 426.
Berry, ii. 197.
Besemer, George, ii. 310.
Bethlehem, i. 32, 225.
Beverwyck, i. 99, 102, 106, 107, 108, 116, 137, 138, 152, 171, 172, 175, 176, 178, 211, 214, 215, 217, 218, 219, 225—ii. 246, 283, 434, 456, 457—church of, i. 110.
Beversrede, Fort, i. 40.
Bible Records of Nicholas Schuyler, ii. 413—of Harmanus Schuyler, ii. 415—of Low Family, ii. 426.
Bigelow, Louisa, ii. 307.
Biggs, John, i. 340.
Big Horn Expedition, ii. 394.
Birmingham, ii. 392.
Bishop, Mila G., ii. 465, 466.
Black Mesa River, ii. 394.
Blairstown (N. J.), ii. 454.
Blair, John I., ii. 454.
———, Emma, ii. 443
Blausjan, Elizabeth (Heermans), ii. 436.
Blawbeck visits New York, ii. 79—speech to Gov. Burnet, ii. 79—restored, ii. 74.
Bleecker, Ann Eliza, her book, ii. 174-179.
———, Blandina, ii. 380.
———, Elizabeth, ii. 379.
———, Frances E., ii. 199.
———, Harriet, ii. 379.
———, Henry, ii. 378.
———, Jacob, i. 301.
———, James, ii. 380.
———, Jan Jansen, ii. 95, 96, 104, 105, 126 131, 133, 138, 175, 377, 378, 458.
Bleecker, Capt. Johannes (John), i. 347, 356, 473, 474—ii. 3, 4, 7, 42, 378.
———, John, ii. 379.
———, John J., ii. 171, 175, 177, 275, 380—in the hands of tories, ii. 178.
———, John R., 301—ii. 105, 380.
———, Margaret, i. 297, 300—ii. 379.
———, Margarita, ii. 379
———, Maria, ii. 379.
———, Mary, ii. 380.
———, Nicholas, i. 474—ii. 308, 378.
———, Nicholas Jr., ii. 377-379.
———, Rutger, i. 297, 300—ii. 379, 380, 461, 469.
Block, Adriaen, his explorations, i. 7, 8, 65.
——— Island, i. 8.
Bloem, Rev. Harmanus, i 129, 143.
Bloemmart, Samuel, i. 12, 13, 210, 212.
Blount, General, ii. 383.
Blum, Thomas, ii. 450.
Board, ———, ii. 197.
——— of Control, for Palatines, i. 277.
——— for Indian affairs, ii. 22. *See* also Five Nations.
Bodle, George W. ii. 309, 411.
Boel, Pastor, ii. 430.
Bogardus, Anneke Jans, ii. 337-362, 457.
———, Cornelis, ii. 339, 340, 346, 348.
———, Cornelius, ii. 352, 353, 354, 357.
———, Rev. Everardus, i. 190—ii. 337 343, 344, 345, 347.
———, John, ii. 353, 354, 355.
———, Jonas, ii. 339, 340, 346, 355.
———, Lewis, ii. 353.
———, Nathaniel, ii. 354.
———, Pieter, ii. 339, 340, 346.
———, William, ii. 339, 340.
Bogart, ——— ii. 197.
———, Catherine Nicholas (334), ii. 400, 402, 407, 417.
———, Jane, ii. 400.
———, Dr. Nicholas N., ii. 307, 364, 407, 408, 417.
Bohemia, i. 56, note.
———, Viscount Felyps of, i. 127.
——— Manor, i. 56, note.
Boisson (brandy), i. 125.
Bolton, Rev. John, ii 244—History of Westchester County, i. 200.
Bonnell, ——— ii, 400.
Bonney, ——— ii. 401.
Booneville, N. Y., ii. 494.
Booth, Mrs., ii. 284, 298.
Boots, Teunis Willemse, ii. 367.
Bordentown, ii. 192, 193.
Basch, i. 208.

Bosch, Wyntia, ii. 340.
Boston, i. 66, 70, 72, 82, 83, 84, 168, 247, 259, 289, 335, 432, 453—ii. 19, 234, 265.
Boston & Albany Railroad, ii. 129.
Bostwick, Harriet, ii. 201.
Boucherville, i. 440.
Bouweries, i. 137.
Bowier, Jonkheer Jan, i. 208.
———, Jonkheer, Hugo Jan Jacob, i. 218.
———, Jonkheer Martin, i. 208.
Bowman's Farm, i. 201.
Boyd, ii. 199.
Boyd, Catherine, ii. 152.
———, Catherine, W. V., ii. 171.
———, Rev. Joshua, ii. 406.
Boyle, Secretary, ii. 31.
Braddock, Gen., ii., 122, 209.
Bradstreet, Col., ii. 249, 251, 255, 259, 260, 321—captures Fort Frontenac, ii. 211.
Brandt, an Indian, i. 293, 493.
Brandywine, battle of, ii. 495.
Brannan, Fanny Kemble, ii. 310.
Brant, Gerritie, i. 114, 115.
———, Joseph, (Indian chief), i. 298—ii. 174, 488.
Bratt, the family, ii. 371.
———, Alida, ii. 399, 400.
———, Anna, ii. 461, 462.
———, Arent, ii. 247.
———, Dirck Arentse, ii. 370.
Brazil, i. 48.
Breecker, i. 207.
Breese, Catherine, ii. 397, 398.
Bridgeford, Samuel, ii. 361.
Bridgen, Eliza, ii. 380.
Brinckerhoff, Peter, ii. 379
British Channel, i. 264.
Broad, Mrs., ii. 354.
Broadway, New York, i. 118—ii. 305, 457, 460.
Brocas, ——— ii. 197.
Brockholles, Anthony, i. 507—ii. 190, 191, 193.
Brodhead, Rev. Jacob, ii. 379.
Brodhead, J. Romeyn, ii. 298, 379.
Brook, Lord, i. 68.
Brooke, Chidley, i. 192, 429.
Brookhaven, L. I., ii. 133.
Brooklyn, i. 28, 84, 192.
Bromeling, Martin, ii. 354.
Brother, Caroline, ii. 199.
Brotherhood of St. John, ii. 222.
Broughton, Att'y Gen., ii. 12.
Brouwer, Ritsert, i. 186—ii. 306.
———, Thomas, ii. 414.
Brower, Cornelius, ii. 352, 357.
———, Jacob, ii. 352.
Brown, Elizabeth Gertrude, ii. 442.
———, Martha Vincent, ii. 152.
Browne, William Hand, i. 56, *n.*
Brudnell, Richard, ii. 347.
Bruyas, Father, ii. 6.
Bruyn, Jan Hendrix, ii. 129.
Bucarest, ii. 392.
Buffalo, i. 230.
Bukhara, ii. 393.
Bulgaria, ii. 392, 393.
Bull, Captain, i. 168, 352, 356, 357.
———, Mary, ii. 441.
Bullard, Mr., ii. 241.
Buren, village of, i. 100—ii. 336.
———, Counts of, i. 100—ii. 336.
Burgoyne, General, i. 204, 236, 287—ii. 124, 125, 126, 175, 269, 270, 403, 404, 476.
Burgundy, Dukes of, i. 93.
Burk, John, i. 390.
Burlingame, Kanzas, ii. 391.
Burnet, William, Governor of New York, i. 1720-28, 267, 270, 271, 272, 273, 286, 290, 294, 297, 300, 508—ii. 78, 79, 106, 142, 194, 234, 235, 313, 467, 468—problem of his administration, 79—complains of the Council, 80—reasons for suspending Schuyler and Philipse, 81—purposes to carry presents to Indians and build forts, 83—conference with Indians, *ib.*—married, 84—at Livingston's manor, 85—letter as to Peter Schuyler, Jr., *ib.*—second conference with Indians, 87—Indian policy, 88, 90—in a dilemma, 314.
Burr, Aaron, ii. 282, 353.
Burritt, Abel, ii. 308.
Burroughs, John, ii. 155.
Bushwick, i. 29.
Butler, Walter N., ii. 474.
Buyck, Cors Jansen, i. 99.
Buzzard Bay, i. 8.

Cabots, expedition of, 2.
Cadaraqui (Kingston), i. 355, 424, 435, 437, 438, 440, 441, 476.
Callières, M. de, Governor of Canada, i. 448, 463, 473, 478, 490—ii. 3, 4, 6, 18, 19.
Calumet, pipe of peace, ii. 89.
Calvinists, i. 239.
Cambridge, N. Y., ii. 372.
Camden, Ark., ii. 381.
Canaan, Conn., 376.
Canada, i. 92, 136, 155, 194, 224, 247, 248, 249, 262, 264, 271, 276, 288, 290, 291, 297, 304, 305, 306, 315, 317, 318, 324, 325, 328, 331, 332, 333, 334, 337, 349, 353, 367, 368, 374, 382-384, 395, 459—ii. 264, 468—war a necessity for, 326—invasion by Schuyler, 383 *et seq.*—expedition against Albany,

396—retreat to, 398—negotiations with Five Nations, 414—mat of, 419—Jamine, 451—conquered, ii. 124, 212—Creek, i. 118—ii. 247.
Canadian French, ii. 266.
Canadians incite Abenakis to war, ii. 235.
Canals, Erie and Champlain, i. 230.
Canajoharie, ii. 160, 162, 470, 474.
Canastagione, ii. 367, 370, 374, 375.
Canby, General, ii. 449.
Cane Hill, ii. 383.
Caneenda, ii. 4.
Canjadarage, Lake, ii. 470.
Canoes, ii. 300.
Capellen. See *Van der Capellen*.
Carpenter, Cynthia, ii. 243, 283.
———, Mr., i. 283.
Carr, Sir Robert, i. 63, 64.
Carter, Amanda, ii. 401.
———, Lydia, ii. 400, 402.
Carteret, Sir George, i. 426.
Casimir, Fort, i. 42, 43, 44, 46, 47, 48, 49, 51.
Cassilis, Earl of, ii. 194.
———, Earldom of, ii. 215, 341.
Caswell, Clarissa, ii. 402.
Catalina, Tryntje-Catherine, ii. 433.
Catskill, i. 22, 177—ii. 383.
———, Indians, i. 130, 225, 311.
Catholics, only to settle in Canada, ii. 99.
Caughwawaga, Cochniwaga, i. 298, 299.
Cayenquirago, i. 402, 403, 412, 415.
Cayuga County, ii. 362.
——— Lake, i. 306.
Cayugas, the Indians, i. 306, 307, 309, 317, 328, 409, 411.
Cemetery (Schuyler's), i. 155—ii. 156.
———, Forest Hill, ii. 252.
Census of Albany, i. 427—of Five Nations, *ib.*—Superstition, 429.
Central Asia, ii. 392.
Chalke Hook, ii. 347.
Chambers, Thomas, i. 121, 123, 128, 131.
Chambly, Fort, i. 384, 385, 386, 396.
Champlain, his first voyage on the St. Lawrence, i. 1.
———, on the lakes, 310, *ff.*
———, canal, i. 230.
———, Lake, i. 247, 272, 305, 316, 346, 367, 373, 384, 395.
Chancery, Court of, ii. 313.
Chapman, Caroline Matilda, ii. 442.
Charles I., i. 80.
Charles II., i. 78, 80, 237, 238.
Charles Scribner's Sons, ii. 454.
Cherry Valley, ii. 422.
Chesapeake Bay, i. 4, 310.
——— River, i. 56.
Chester, Pa., ii. 251.
Cheyenne, ii. 395.
Christina, Queen, i. 34, 35.
———, Fort, i. 35, 36, 38, 42, 44, 45, 46, 47, 49, 52.
Church, first in Albany, i. 109—on North Pearl Street, 110—on Beaver Street, *ib.*—bell, 111—of 1656, 110, 111—Dutch, of Albany, 111.
——— windows, i. 111.
——— and State in New Netherland, i. 112.
——— funds, i. 112.
——— of Albany, ii. 419.
——— of England, i. 237, 239, 240.
———, English, built by Mr. Schuyler, ii. 220
——— Episcopal, ii. 352.
——— of New York, action as to burial of Leisler, ii. 169.
———, Reformed Dutch, endowed, ii. 194.
———, Reformed Dutch, arrangement with John Schuyler, ii. 195.
———, John Barker, ii. 242, 274, 280, 281, 365.
———, Mrs., ii. 275.
———, Philip, ii. 281.
———, William A., ii. 309, 412.
Cincinnati, O., ii. 447, 449.
Clapp, Abby, ii. 308.
———, Dr. Asahel, ii. 442.
Clarendon, Earl of, i. 268.
Clark, John, i. 81.
Clarke, George, i. 508—ii. 133, 247.
Clarkson, Secretary, i. 405.
Clarksville, Ark., ii. 381.
Classis of Amsterdam, ii. 489.
——— of Bergen, ii. 491.
Clausen, Laurence, interpreter, ii. 42.
Claverack, i. 149, 177, 178, 224, 232–237, 245, 274, 280–282, 290, 346—ii. 132, 158, 253, 283, 335, 466.
Clermont, i. 280, 287—ii. 334, 335.
Clifton Park, ii. 367.
Clieter, Jan, i 179.
Clinton, DeWitt, i. 142—ii. 174.
———, Governor, writes that Saratoga is destroyed, ii. 119.
———, controversy with Assembly, ii. 120.
———, ordered fort to be rebuilt, ii. 120.
———, George, Governor, i. 204, 281, 508—ii. 113, 121, 158, 208, 254, 262, 364, 375.
Clopper, Elizabeth, ii. 171.
Closter, ii. 405.
Cluet, Benjamin, ii. 183.
Clute, Anna Barber, ii. 371.
Cobb, Rev. Leander, ii. 442.
Cobleskill, N. Y., ii. 478.

Cochran, James, ii. 243, 251, 283.
———, Dr. John, ii. 242, 251-52, 283.
———, Mrs., ii. 366, 477.
Cod, Cape, i. 65.
Coens, Rev. Cornelis, ii. 429.
Coeymans, Andries, ii. 427, 428, 433, 434.
———, Barent Pieterse, i. 225—ii. 434.
———, Gertrude, Jr., ii. 431.
Coeymans' tract, i. 231—ii. 434.
Coeymans village, ii. 177, 434.
Coeyman's Church, ii. 428, 434.
Cohasset, i. 91.
Colden, Cadwallader, i. 118, 282, 299, 388, 421, 508—ii. 36, 37, 69, 70, 71, 76, 81, 106, 214, 215, 320, 321—an enemy of Peter Schuyler, 93—as historian, 354—land speculations, i. 300—obnoxious, ii. 159.
———, Mrs., i. 300.
Colendonck, i. 22, 23
Colfax, Schuyler, ii. 198.
———, William, ii. 198.
Collindale, i. 299.
Collins, Edward, i. 296, 298, 300—ii. 379—death, 301.
———, John, i. 170, 186, 296-301—ii. 379, 414.
———, Margaret (Schuyler), i. 296, 297, 298 *ff.*—ii. 414—married, 301.
———, Samuel, 296.
Colombière, de la, ii. 116.
Colonial documents, error of, ii. 215.
Colonies, English, i. 421—on the Delaware, 33 *et seq.*—quotas of men, 432.
Colonists resist unjust taxation, ii. 260.
Colonization, early, 1.
Colony, Zwaanendal, i. 13, 14, 16.
———, Rensselaerwyck, 14, 15.
———, Pavonia, 15.
Colored troops, ii. 383, 384.
Colve, Anthony, Director-General, 1673-74, i. 293, 507—ii. 328, 457.
Columbia College, ii. 281, 362, 392, 426.
Commissioners, boundary, i. 333.
Committee of Ways and Means, ii. 315—of Safety, i. 340—ii. 214, 353.
Common School Fund, ii. 358.
Communipaw, 31.
Company, Commercial, for settling America, i. 2.
———, London, i. 3.
———, Plymouth, i 3.
———, Dutch East India, i. 4.
———, for settling America, i. 6, 7, 8.
———, West India, chartered, i. 10—its powers and privileges, *ib.*—its field of operations, *ib.*
Compo, Conn., ii. 444.
Comtemanche, ii. 117.
Congress at New London, ii. 45.
———, Continental, ii. 262, 266.
Congreve, Mr., ii. 111.
Connecticut, i. 69, 71, 76-79, 81-85, 96, 141, 168, 247-249, 347, 352, 369, 370, 374, 394, 454—ii. 122, 295—claims of jurisdiction, i. 30—colony, 67, 68, 80—colonists seek removal of Dutch, 70—contribution to war, 431—quota, 432—delegates, 422—denies assistance to retake Cadaraqui, 442—fear of Dutch, 482—General Court of, 87—reinforces Albany, 352, 366, 367, 368.
——— River, i. 7, 65, 66, 71, 73, 85, 86, 89, 304, 313—ii. 114.
Conrad, Captain, ii. 383.
Consistory, i. 240, 242.
Constantinople, ii. 392.
Convention of Albany, i. 349, 350, 351, 352—provincial, ii. 262.
Cook, Sophia, ii. 464.
Cooper, Rev. Charles D., ii. 154.
———, General, ii. 382.
———, John Taylor, ii. 153.
Coote, Richard, see Bellomont, Earl of.
Copper Mine, Schuyler's, ii. 192, 217.
Cork, Ireland, ii. 256.
Corlaer, Indian name for Governor of New York, ii. 184.
———, i. 322, 355, 390, 470, 475, 477.
Corlaer's Hook, ii. 294.
Cornbury, Viscount (Edward Hyde), Governor of New York, 1702-08, i. 263-268, 296—ii. 7, 11-13, 16, 22, 101, 131, 133, 142, 350, 351, 357—appointed Governor, 12—conference with Five Nations, 13—visits Saratoga, 111.
Cornelis (Indian), 298.
Cornell University, i. 466—ii. 395, 412.
Cortlandt, see Van Cortlandt.
———, Col., i. 483.
———, Mr., i. 496.
——— Manor, i. 199, 201, 294—ii. 432.
Cornwall, ii. 216.
Corwin, Manual of the Reformed (Dutch) Church, ii. 491.
Cosby, Colonel William, Governor of New York, 1732-1736, i. 508—ii. 112.
Cossacks, the, ii. 393.
Coster, Magdalina, ii. 245.
Cottered, Sir Charles, ii. 34.
Coudewater, Manor of, 208.
Council, the, i. 239, 241, 242, 245, 252, 254, 255, 256, 259, 260, 261, 262, 263, 266, 267, 268, 269, 270, 272, 273, 275, 286—address Governor Clinton, ii. 159.

Counts Buren, ii. 336.
County of Buren, i. 208, 209.
Courcelle, M. de, invades Mohawk country, i. 315—failure, 316, 317, 318.
Courland, Dukes of, 187-189.
Court of Appeals, ii. 383.
——— of Common Pleas, ii. 357.
——— of Errors, ii. 357.
Coventry, ship, ii. 213, 214.
Coveville, ii. 97.
Cowboys, i. 202, 204.
Cox, Daniel, ii. 131, 133.
Craggs, Secretary, ii. 67, 68, 69.
Craig, Henry S., ii. 200.
Crailo, i. 206, 207, 208, 223, 224.
——— (Greenbush), i. 235.
Crampton, Hannah (Scrivener), ii. 430, 450.
Crawford, Captain, ii. 382.
Cregier, Martin, i. 54, 55, 144, 145, 146, 147.
Crevier, M., tortured, i. 433.
Cromwell, Protector, i. 76, 77.
Crook, George, General, ii. 394, 395.
———, John, ii. 166.
Croon, Dirk Janssen, i. 110.
Crown Point, i. 368, 463—ii. 30, 112, 121-123, 224, 259, 374—captured, 124—soldiers stationed at, 182.
Crowningshield, ii. 200.
Crosby, Clarkson, ii. 153.
Croton River, i. 198.
Crystal Hill, ii. 279, 363.
Curaçoa, i. 135, 339—ii. 296.
Curler, *see* Van Curler.
Cushing, General, ii. 152.
———, Miss, ii. 153.
Cuyler, Anna, ii. 151.
——, Catherine, ii. 151, 243.
——, Charles, ii. 251.
———, Charles Henry, ii. 251.
———, Cornelis, ii. 240, 242—his family, 250, 251.
———, Cornelis, Jr., General in British Army, ii. 251.
———, Cornelius, ii. 278.
———, George Augustus, ii. 251.
——, Hendrick, ii. 250.
——— Jane, ii. 151.
———, John, ii. 256.
———, Nicholas, ii. 151.
———, Philip, ii. 256.
——, Rachel, ii. 461, 462.
——, R. M., ii. 401.
———, Sarah, ii. 339.
Cuypers, Gerardus, Rev., ii. 171.

Daggett, N., ii. 451.
Dakota, ii. 366, 383.
Dale, Sir Thomas, i. 88.
Danforth, George S., ii. 488.
Dankers, i. 56, note.
——— & Sluyter, journal of, i. 56.
Dan's Chamber, Danskamer, Dance-chamber, i. 147—ii. 190.
Dartmoor Prison, ii. 496.
Dartmouth, i. 268.
Date Creek, ii. 394.
D'Aux, Chevalier, i. 372.
Davenport, Rev. John, i. 66, 80, 89.
David Hook, ii. 130.
Davids, Christopher, i. 121.
Davis, James, ii. 154.
———, James C., ii. 442.
———, J. S., Rev., ii. 171.
Davitt's, ii. 183.
Davos-Platz, ii. 385.
Dean, Mary, ii. 152.
Declaration of Independence, signers of, i. 287—the instrument, i. 227.
De Decker, John, i. 176.
Deerfield, destroyed, ii. 234.
De Grood, Aagje, ii. 461, 462.
De Hulter, farm, i. 170—*see* Hulter.
Deivertje, ii. 305.
Dekanissora, Onondaga sachem, i. 415, 416, 418, 424 *ff*, 437, 458, 469, 475, 501—ii. 5, 6, 51, 55, 61, 62, 64, 228—at Quebec, 419—indignation, 444—cause of agitation, 476—ill-assorted marriage, 489—fearful of poison, 495—in disgrace, 504—relates his experience in Canada, 4, 5—degraded, 94.
De Kay, Thomas, ii. 169.
De Key, Teunis, ii. 339.
Delabogtealn, ii. 429.
De Laet, Johanna, i. 155, 219, 220.
———, Johannes, the historian, i. 14, 210, 212, 219.
———, Johannes, Jr., i. 213, 219.
Delafield, Maturin L., ii. 284.
De la Fortune, ii. 108.
De Lancey family, ii. 342.
———, Bishop, ii. 356.
———, James, Lieutenant-Governor of New York, i. 202, 281, 508—ii. 108, 128, 158, 259.
———, Oliver, i. 202, 204.
———, Stephen, i. 201.
De la Noye, Peter, i. 191.
Delavan, Edward C., ii. 154.
Delaware, i. 56, 78, 394—*see* Swedes.
——— Bay, i. 4, 8, 13, 33, 34, 58, 79, 201—colonies on, 33-65—discovered by Hudson, 4.
——— country, i. 59, 60.
——— River, i. 8, 14, 31, 38, 41, 45, 46, 48, 49, 53, 55, 56, 63, 64, 71, 74, 85, 92, 112, 132, 141, 292, 391—ii. 134, 184, 193, 209, 289.
———, fort on the, i. 10, 33.
Delawares, the, i. 121, 134.

Delline, Henry, ii. 411.
Dellemont, Marte, i. 160.
Dellius, Dominie Godfrey, i. 299, 303, 351, 407, 408, 453, 459, 461, 465, 493—ii. 134, 148, 285—takes refuge in New England, 375, 381—petition, 134, 135—land patent, 135—prohibited from preaching, 139—missionary work, 143—appeared before Assembly, 144—suspended, 145—learned Mohawk language, 146—farewell to Indian converts, ii. 148—Commissioner to Frontenac, i. 462, 466.
De Luze, C. H., ii. 245.
De Meyer, Anna Catrina, ii. 293.
———, Deborah, ii. 293.
———, Elizabeth, i. 186—ii. 293, 306.
———, Henricus, ii. 293.
———, Nicholas, ii. 284—marriage, 288—wedding festivities, *ib.*—merchant and miller, 289—complains of lawyers, *ib.*—breaks the law, 289, 290—prosecuted, 290—active in surrendering New York to English, 290—alderman, *ib.*—he and his wife obtain notoriety, *ib.*—house to be plundered, *ib.*—extent of property, 291, 292—appointed mayor, 292—appointed councillor, *ib.*—dead, *ib.*—his will, 293.
———, William, ii. 293.
Dempster, James, ii. 417.
Denonville, Marquis, ii. 353—arrives in Canada, 325—prepares for war on Senecas, 326—at Frontenac, 327—expedition against Senecas, 328—report to French ministry, 328, 329, 330, 334—at Fort Frontenac, 435.
Denver, ii. 384, 386.
——— & Rio Grande Railroad, ii. 384.
Deool, Mrs., ii. 441, 442.
De Peyster family, the, ii. 342.
———, Anna, ii. 469.
———, Catherine, i. 202.
———, Johannes, ii. 10, 41, 247.
———, John, ii. 462, 469.
———, Pierre, ii. 196.
Depue, William, ii. 406.
De Reimer, Machtelt, ii. 426.
De Rider, Killian, ii. 105.
De Ronde, Rev. Lamburtus, ii. 417, 424, 425.
De Ruyter, i. 135.
Dervall, Johannes, i. 190.
Des Moines, Ia., ii. 454.
De Sille, Nicasius, ii. 302, 340.
———, Walburga, ii. 340.
Detroit, i. 483.
Deventer, i. 207.
Devendorf, Charles A., ii. 407, 408.
De Vries, David Pieterse, i. 16–18, 27, —manager of Zwaanendal, 13, 14—protest of, 19—ruined by Indian war, 18—returns to Holland, *ib.*
De Waag, man-of-war, i. 46.
De Wandelier, Sara, ii. 371.
De Winter, Bastiaen, i. 158.
De Witt, John, i. 142.
———, Rachel, ii. 341.
———, Tjirck Claessen, i. 142—ii. 131.
Dey, Esther, ii. 198.
———, Teunis, ii. 197.
Dickinson, ——, ii. 405.
———, Ann Eliza (332), ii. 406.
———, Charles, ii. 406.
———, Cornelia R. (333), ii. 406.
———, Cornelius, ii. 406.
———, Dorcas (321), ii. 406.
———, Dorcas (326), ii. 406.
Dieskau, defeated, ii. 122.
Dimick, Deborah Palmer (Schuyler), ii. 418.
———, Ira, ii. 308, 418.
———, Philip Schuyler, ii. 418.
———, Susan Ann, ii. 418.
Directors of New Amsterdam, i. 26.
———, list of, i. 507–509.
Dirk, called Rode, ii. 136.
Dirkse, Cornelis, ii. 341.
Dix, Lucy M., ii. 307.
———, Rev. Morgan, ii. 359.
Doane, Bishop, ii. 222.
———, John, ii. 153.
Dominie's Bouwery, ii. 346.
——— Hoeck, ii. 346.
Dominion of New England, i. 333, 335.
Dongan, Colonel Thomas, Governor of New York, 1682–1688, i. 87, 166, 192, 219, 245, 250, 274, 275, 277, 283, 285, 293, 319, 323, 325, 327, 330, 337, 363, 427, 507—ii. 96, 107–9, 129, 130, 140, 165, 292, 293, 319, 323, 325, 327, 330, 331, 341, 457—spends winter at Albany, 331-3—relieved by Andros, 333.
Doove Gat, ii. 97, 125, 126.
——— Kill, ii. 97.
Dordrecht, ii. 373.
Dorn, Jemima, ii. 482, 484.
Dort, Synod of, ii. 359.
Doughty, Rev. Francis, i. 29, 91.
Douw, i. 138, 143.
———, Anne, ii. 416.
———, Volkert Pieterse, ii. 416.
Dovecot, ii. 97.
Dragon, man-of-war, ii. 37.
Drake, i. 304.
———, Ella, ii. 155.
———, Susan, ii. 154.
Duane, James, ii. 214, 353.
Dubeau, Captain, defeated, i. 455.
Du Bois, Rev. Galterus, ii. 427, 428, 430.

Du Bois, Louis, ii. 285.
Dubo, Louis, i. 140.
Dudley, Charles E., ii. 380.
———, Governor, ii. 19, 24, 41—wants assistance, 53.
———, Mr., son of the Governor, visits Montreal, ii. 236.
——— Observatory, ii. 380.
Dug Springs, ii. 383.
Duke of Cambridge, ii. 216.
——— of York, i. 218—ii. 164, 349.
Duke's farm, ii. 349.
Duncan, Anna, ii. 400, 402.
Dunkerkers, i. 13, 19.
Dunscomb, William E., ii. 359.
Dunstable, a fort burned at, ii. 234.
Duryea, ii. 197.
Dutch, the, i. 24, 32, 36, 38, 39, 40, 42, 44, 47, 54, 63, 106, 107, 125, 126, 129, 130, 131, 135, 148, 149, 151, 152, 163, 305, 306, 308, 314, 320, 322, 330, 335, 417—ii. 300—influence of, on American history, i. 87—supply Indians with weapons, 312.
——— Bible and Records, ii. 315, 316.
——— Colonial Records, translated, ii. 471.
——— Church, i. 239, 240, 244—ii. 337, 419, 420—at Albany, i. 158, 293, 303—church property, 303—ii. 466 - at New York, 380—ii. 456—of Schenectady, 286—at Schoharie, 488–491—at Westminster, i. 238.
——— Collegiate Church of New York, ii. 424, 425.
——— language, i. 180.
——— merchants, i. 4.
——— minister, first ordained in America, ii. 489.
——— towns on Long Island, i. 30.
——— East India Company, i. 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 39, 40, 41, 43, 44, 49, 50, 52, 54, 55, 57, 58, 59, 60, 62, 65, 70, 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 77, 93, 94, 96—buys lands from the Indians on the Delaware River, 42—orders the Swedes to be driven from the river, 45—furnishes a man-of-war, 46—on the verge of bankruptcy, 48.
Dutchess County, i. 270, 282.
Duval, Judie Henrietta, i. 208.
Dyckhuyse, Swantie, ii. 191, 192, 205.
Dyckman, Johannes, i. 103, 113, 175, 176—ii. 330.

East Indies, i. 258.
Eastman, Clara, ii. 201.
Eaton, Theophilus, i. 66.
Ebbing, Jeronimus, i. 220—ii. 290.
Ecker, Thomas, i. 179.
Eddy, Samuel, ii. 153.
Edick, Elizabeth, ii. 244.
Edmonds, Elizabeth, ii. 441, 442.
Edward, Fort, i. 272, 373.
Edwards, Susanna, ii. 200.
Eells, Edward, ii. 451.
Egypt, ii. 276, 373.
Elbertsen, Elbert, ii. 339.
Elimburg, Fort, i. 38, 39, 42, 46.
Elizabeth Island, i. 2.
Elizabethtown, N. J., ii. 183, 192, 193, 450, 451.
Elizabethtown Point, ii. 192, 193—ferry, 216.
Elk River, i. 55, 56.
Elliott, Andrew, i. 509.
Elmendorf, Catharine, ii. 379.
———, Peter, ii. 401.
———, Peter E., ii. 400.
Elting, John, ii. 171.
Embassy, Dutch, to London, i. 238.
Emden, ii. 316, 420.
Emigration from Holland, i. 27.
Endicott, i. 96.
England, i. 71, 119, 194, 201, 205, 237, 250, 251, 252, 254, 255, 257, 261, 262, 263, 268, 269, 270, 277, 278, 289, 304, 350, 384—begins to appreciate her colonies, ii. 122—escape to Holland of non-conformists, i. 88—King and Queen, 335—meagre supplies, 460—Protestant, 335—sends out a fleet, ii. 122—small aid to province, i. 430–1—strengthens military forces, 432—visit of Mohawk chiefs, ii. 33–39—war with, of 1812, 447—war with France, i. 336.
English, the, i. 9, 32, 37, 39, 41, 44, 45, 47, 58, 60, 151, 153, 305, 306, 314, 320, 325, 330.
——— army, surrender, ii. 125.
——— colonies, taught some lessons, ii. 124.
——— competition for influence with Indians, i. 480.
——— Government, i. 323, 342—appoints boundary commissioners, 333—policy with Five Nations, i. 321, 322, 325.
——— prisoners returned, i. 464.
———, profligate, ii. 141.
——— traders captured by Denonville, i. 327.
——— treatment of Indians, ii. 77.
——— towns on Long Island, i. 30.
Entail, laws abrogated by the Revolution, i. 231.
Episcopal Church, i. 203.
Ericksen, Dominie, ii. 489.
———, Reinhart, ii. 414.
Eries (Indians) destroyed by Iroquois, i. 313.
Erie Canal, i. 230.

Erie, Lake, i. 261, 307, 313.
Ernst Casimir of Nassau-Dillenburg, i. 43.
Esopus, i. 31, 117, 169, 178, 190, 203, 220, 247, 302, 347—ii. 289, 435.
——— (Kingston), situation of, i. 31, 62.
———, the new village, i. 120, 152—first fight at, 131—siege of, 132—treaty of peace, 135.
———, Great, i. 137, 138.
———, massacre, i. 141-143.
———, war, i. 216.
———, threatened, i. 438.
———, Indians, i. 78, 134, 145—attack on, 147, 148—treat for peace, 150, 151.
Europe, i. 321.
Evans, George, i. 296.
———, Sarah, ii. 464, 465.
Evening Post, ii. 385.
Evertse, Jacob Cornelis, Jr , i. 507.
Evertsen, Elsie Cuyler, ii. 154.
Exchange Place, i. 118.
Ezras (Indian), i. 298.

Falmouth, ii. 216.
Fancher, Abigail, ii. 481, 482.
———, Martha, ii. 481, 482.
Far Indians, in Albany, ii. 89.
Farmer, sheriff, ii. 67.
Farmon, Nellie M., ii. 309.
Fathers and Sons, ii. 392.
Fauconier, Peter, ii. 131-133.
Faugeres, Margaretta, ii. 174.
Fendall, Governor, i. 53, 54, 55, 56.
Fenwick, George, i. 69, 70, 79.
Fifth Cavalry, ii. 393.
Fire Island Inlet (L. I.), i. 50.
Fish Creek, ii. 104, 117, 238.
Fish Kill, outlet of Saratoga Lake, ii. 97.
——— Creek, i. 201.
Five Nations (Indians), i. 9, 136, 199, 247, 248, 253, 260 261, 263, 264, 265, 268, 288, 353, 354, 380, 381, 390 *ff*, 395, 402, 406, 408, 463, 465—ii. 7, 23, 32, 61, 122, 146, 157, 378, 466, 467—Iroquois confederacy, 305, 306—origin, 307—description, 308—numbers, 309—war practices, 310—fight with Champlain, 311—acquire firearms, 312—overwhelm Algonquins, 312—destroy the Hurons and Eries, 313—treaties with Dutch and English, 314—invasion of Courcelle, 315—invasion of de Tracy, 316—conquests south and west, 318—invasion of de la Barre, 318 *et seq.*—claimed as vassals by French and English, 320—conferences with English 321—conciliated by French, 321 *et seq.*—policy, 322—importance of board of commissioners, 324, 325, 326—as galley slaves, 327—supplied with guns by the English, 328—attack Fort Frontenac, 329—torture of prisoners, 329—invade Montreal, 329—invade Montreal again, 330—island of Jesus invaded, 330, 332, 333—conference with Andros, 334, 337—message to Frontenac, i. 371—council at Albany, 381 *et seq.*—letter from Fletcher, 409—council with Wessels, 411, *et seq.*, 414—mode of making presents to, 422—convention at Albany, 423—peace with French, 424—census, 1689, 427—conference at Albany, 443—memorandum of casualties, 446—destitution, 453—presents from English, 454—demoralized, 456—report on, 457—to bury the hatchet, 459—friendship for Schuyler, 467—Bellomont's correspondence, 469—negotiations with French, 472 *et seq.*—release of prisoners, 476 *et seq.*—threatened, 481, 482, 483—reasons for deserting the Dutch, 484—estimate of French and English, 485—camp rumors, 486—complaints of the French, 490—ask for Protestant minister, 493—children under control of wives, 494—sullen, 497—project of a fort among, 501 *et seq.*—lost, ii. 2—in good disposition, 3—tribal divisions, 36—in council, 43—a jolly crew, 46—related to the Tuscarora Indians, 50—going to war, 51—excited, 52—wish to punish Flatheads, 53—to hold secret meeting, 54—shelter Tuscaroras, 56—only barrier, 62—danger of being lost, 74—relations with, serious, 76—becoming weaker, 86—seven hundred in Canada, 107—a belt to be sent, 183—give lands to Shawanoes, 190—to restrain Eastern Indians, 234—urged to war on Abenakis, 235—they decline, 235, 236.
Flatbush, i. 29—ii. 205.
Flathead Indians, ii. 53, 61, 86.
Flatlands (L. I.), i. 28.
Flatts, the, i. 101, 154, 162, 224, 225, 373—Mrs. Grant's description, 156—bill of sale, 157—deed, 158.
Flax Mill, ii. 258.
Fletcher, Colonel Benjamin, Governor of New York, 1692-1698, i. 196, 199, 250, 251, 252, 253, 254, 255, 257, 258, 265, 339, 393, 413, 421, 427, 442, 443, 451 *ff*, 453, 466, 508—ii. 100, 137, 140, 141, 145, 186, 349, 437—gov. of Penn. and Del., i. 394—

at Schenectady, 402—recommends Schuyler, 403—energy, 404—councils with Indians, 405, 406—restores English prestige, 407—Schuyler's letter, 408—letter of Indians, 409—council at Albany, 420—convention at Albany, 421 *et seq.*—changes in commissions, 431—writes of Indians, 434—promises, 438—indignation, 444—council at Albany, 454—painful journey, 455—returns to New York, 458—entertains Indians, 459—sends flag of truce to Canada, 459—appoints day of thanksgiving, 460—end of administration, 460—antipathy of Bellomont, 461—visited by long-absent Indians, ii. 186.
Flodder, Janse, i. 104.
Florida, i. 318.
———, N. Y., ii. 479, 492, 493.
Flushing, i. 29.
Fockens, Grietje, ii. 435.
Fonda, i. 298.
Ford, ii. 374.
Foreman, Mary G., ii. 401.
Forest Hill Cemetery, ii. 252.
Forsyth, ii. 383.
Fort, at Albany, i. 8—ii. 16, 111.
——— Anne, at Albany, ii. 17.
——— Ann, ii. 237, 403.
——— at Canastagione, ii. 111.
——— Chambey, i. 384, 385, 386, 396—ii. 114, 224.
——— Chambly, skirmish at, i. 440.
——— Clinton, ii. 120, 123, 127, 158, 209, 254, 315—burned, 121—destroyed, 159.
——— Crown Point, ii. 266.
——— D. A. Russell, ii. 393.
——— Dayton, ii. 474, 476.
——— Edward, i. 272, 273—ii. 115, 122, 123, 128, 211, 259, 269, 325.
——— Elsinburg, i. 38, 39, 42, 46.
——— at Esopus, i. 31.
——— Fetterman, ii. 394.
——— Frontenac, ii. 16, 211—to be abandoned, 29.
——— George, ii. 403.
——— Half Moon, ii. 111.
——— Hardy, ii. 127, 128, 129.
——— Hays, ii 394.
——— Herkimer, ii. 471.
——— Laramie, ii. 395.
——— McKinney, ii. 395.
——— Miller, ii. 128, 248.
——— Nassau, i. 10, 33.
——— Niagara, ii. 75, 83, 122.
——— Nicholson, ii. 30.
——— Onondaga, ii. 83.
——— Orange, i. 32, 215, 216—ii. 328.
——— Peter Schuyler, ii. 30, 31.
Fort Saratoga, ii. 17, 112, 128, 238—abandoned, 113—well built, 118.
——— at Schaghticoke, ii. 17.
——— at Schenectady, ii. 111.
———, the, at Schoharie, ii. 488, 489.
——— Schuyler, ii. 235—relief of, 474-476.
Fort Sidney, ii. 394.
——— Stanwix, ii. 134, 266, 270, 474-476.
——— St. Frederick, ii. 112, 114, 119, 122, 374—to be captured, 113.
———, at Stillwater, ii. 123, 128.
——— Ticonderoga, ii. 265—taken, 124—abandoned, 269.
——— Wayne, ii. 381.
——— William Henry, ii. 123.
Fort, Family, the, ii. 367-376—their genealogy, 371.
———, Abby Rogers, ii. 373.
———, Abraham (4), ii. 370, 371, 375.
———, Abraham (12), ii. 372.
———, Abraham (23), ii. 372.
———, Anna (2), ii. 370, 371.
———, Annatje (2), ii. 371.
———, Annatje (20), ii. 372.
———, Annatje (30), ii. 307, 367, 372, 373, 376.
———, Daniel (8), ii. 370, 371.
———, Elizabeth (10), ii. 371.
———, Eveline (24), ii. 372.
———, Harman (14), ii. 372, 373, 374, 375.
———, Henderika (25), ii. 307, 367, 372, 417.
———, Isak (9), ii 370, 371.
———, Jacob (6), ii. 370, 371, 372, 374, 375.
———, Jacob (19), ii. 372.
———, Jacob (27), ii. 372, 374.
———, Jane (22), ii. 372.
———, Jenny (21), ii. 372.
———, Johannes (3), ii. 370, 371, 375.
———, Johannes (11), ii. 371.
———, Leendert (15), ii. 372.
———, Margaret (13), ii. 372.
———, Margaret (16), ii. 372.
———, Maritje (28), ii. 372.
———, Maritje (31), ii. 372.
———, Margriet, ii. 370, 371.
———, Margreta (29), ii. 372.
———, Mary (7), ii. 370, 371.
———, Nicholas (5), ii. 370, 371, 375.
———, Saartje (Sara) (18), ii. 372.
———, Sara (26), ii. 151, 372.
———, Simon, ii. 375.
Forte, Jean, alias Liberté (1), ii. 367, 369, 370, 371, 374.
Forts at Saratoga, where located, ii. 126-129.
Foster, George W., ii. 449.
Four Peaks, ii. 394.

France, i. 325, 326, 353, 383, 384.
———, New, i. 315, 318, 319, 324, 325.
———, King of, relieves de la Barre, i. 325—instructions to Denonville, 326.
———, Indians sent to, i. 334.
———, war with England, i. 335.
———, Wessel's story of invasion, i. 411.
———, help to Canada, i. 430.
———, annual supplies from, i. 460.
Fransorra, ii. 100.
Fredericks, Evalina, ii. 482, 484.
Frederickstadt, i. 138.
Freeman, Rev. Mr., i. 492.
Freedoms and Exemptions, statute of, i. 11, 171, 177, 209, 212.
Frelinghouse (Frelinghuysen), Elizabeth, ii. 422.
Frelinghuysen, Theodore, ii. 422.
———, Theodore, chancellor, ii. 421.
———, Rev. Theodorus, ii. 415, 416, 419-422.
———, Rev. Theodorus Jacob, ii. 419, 420.
Fremont (Frymoet), Joh. Casparus, ii. 416, 419.
———, General John C., ii. 423.
French, the, i. 136, 155, 161, 167, 169, 194, 304, 305, 306, 313, 314, 316, 317, 329, 336, 337, 352, 391, 483—in Canada, 32—explorations, 320—policy with Five Nations, 321, 322, 326—expedition against Senecas, 326 *et seq.* — in consternation, 330 — prepare to attack Albany, 331—prisoners, 334—scenes at Onondaga, 372—at La Prairie, 385 *et seq.*—loss, 388 — enterprise, 395 — attack Mohawks, 397, 399 — loss in Mohawk expedition, 402, 407 *et seq.*—repair forts, 487—insincerity, 490—peace with, 423, 424—order of march, 448—the emissaries, 458 — prisoners, 462—continue the war, ii. 122.
——— and Indians, i. 346, 348.
——— agents, ii. 6.
——— Canadians, i. 32, 247, 264, 291.
——— Church, New Rochelle, ii. 149.
——— government, claimed Lake Champlain, ii. 112—appoints boundary commissioners, i. 333.
——— proselytes, ii. 18—commit murders at Schaghticoke, 48.
——— Protestants in Bushwick, i. 29.
——— refugees, ii. 108.
——— Indians, ii. 158.
——— reported in Minisink, ii. 188.
——— and Indian War, ii. 259.
———, proposed Indian alliance with, ii. 467.
———, Roger, ii. 430.
Friesland, i. 43, 207.
Frontenac, Count de, i 318, 330, 349, 353, 355, 358, 371, 375, 383, 389, 391, 395, 397, 407, 408, 413, 415, 418, 424, 462—ii. 143, 226, 227—sends delegation to Onondaga, 372 — receives Iroquois deputation, 419—influence over Indians, 420—sends envoys to Onondaga, 425—alarms Albany, 434—restored to Canada, 436—activity, 438—scouting parties, 439 *et seq.*—roast Iroquois, 440—reoccupies Cadaroqui, 441—success of, 445—prepares winter campaign, 446 *et seq.*—bodily weakness of, 449—inhumanty of, 450—retreats, 450—roasts an Indian, 451 — designs against New York, 453 — receives flag of truce, 459 — receives commissioners, 464—to Bellomont, 465, 468—receives letter by Johannes Schuyler, 470—death of, 472—dreams of, ii. 78.
———, Fort. *See* Kingston and Cadaraqui, i. 319, 326, 371, 419—Denonville at, 327—attacked by Iroquois, 329—established, 435—destroyed, 436—famine, 482.
Frote, Jean de, ii. 369.
Frymoet, Johannes Casparus, ii. 422.
Frymuth, ii. 422.
Funerals, 112.
Fur trade, the, 136.

Gale, John C., ii. 406.
Gallows Hill, ii 278.
Gansevoort, Ann, ii. 401.
———, Ariantie, ii. 401.
———, Catherine, ii. 401.
———, Colonel, ii. 474.
———, Elizabeth, ii. 401.
———, Elsie, ii. 401.
———, Eveline, ii. 400, 401.
———, Harme, ii. 130.
———, Johannes, ii. 401.
———, Leonard, ii. 400, 401.
———, Maria, ii. 401.
———, Rachel, ii. 401.
———, Rensselaer, ii. 401.
Gardenier, i. 104.
Gardiner, Fanny Foy, ii. 409.
———, Henrietta Schuyler, ii. 409.
———, Lion, i. 66, 68, 69, 89—ii. 412.
———, Mary Miller, ii. 310, 395, 409.
———, Samuel H., ii. 409, 412.
Gardiner's Island, ii. 412.
Garmo, Pierre de, ii. 109.
Garrison, ———, ii. 198.
Gates, General, i. 287—ii. 125, 126, 268, 270, 326, 404, 477 — appointed to army of Canada, 268.
———, Sir Thomas, 88.

Gassam, George G., ii. 152.
Gelderland, i. 28, 163, 171, 206—ii. 336—History of, 171.
Genealogical and Biographical Record, ii. 195.
——— table, Fort Family, ii. 371—Arent Schuyler, ii. 196—Brant Schuyler, ii. 171—David Schuyler, ii. 461—Jacob Schuyler, ii. 481—Johannes Schuyler, ii, 242-245—Peter Schuyler, ii. 150—Philip Pieterse Schuyler, i. 185—Philip Schuyler second, ii. 306—Philip Schuyler second in the female line, 396—Scribner Family, 440.
Genesee River, ii. 281.
Genet, Maria, ii. 400.
Geneva, ii. 395.
George of Hanover, King, ii. 56.
———, Lake, i. 312, 316, 395.
Geographical Societies, ii. 393.
Georgias, i. 92—ii. 86, 445.
Gerard, J. W., ii. 347.
German Flats, i. 306.
Germans in the Mohawk Valley, ii. 473.
Germany, i. 276.
Gerritse, Goosen. *See* Van Schaick.
Ghyse, Joachim, Rear-Admiral, ii. 173.
Gideon, ii. 286.
Gila River, ii. 394.
Gilbert, Sir Humphrey, i. 2.
Giltnar, Eleanor, ii. 307.
Gladding, Emeline L., ii. 407.
Glen, Jacob, ii. 240, 247, 257.
———, Jacob S., ii. 400.
———, Johannes, i. 474.
———, John, ii. 105.
———, Capt. Sander, i. 359, 362, 363—ii. 224.
Godyn, Samuel, i. 12, 13, 58, 210.
Goes, Jan Tysen, ii. 332.
Golden Otter, the ship, i. 338.
Gomarists, the, i. 9.
Gonzales, Benjamin, ii. 449, 450.
Good Hope, Fort of, 65, 67, 77.
Goods seized by guard, ii. 314.
Goose Creek, ii. 394.
Goossen, Geertjien, i. 115.
———, Gerrit, i. 115.
———, Sybrant, i. 115.
———, Anthony, i. 115.
Gordon, Dowager Duchess of, ii. 437.
Gosnal, Capt. Bartholomew, i. 2.
Gourley, Maria, ii. 397.
Gouverneur, Abraham, i. 340, 428—ii. 342, 426, 428, 432, 434—elected speaker, ii. 8—reports on grievances, 144—recorder, 168.
———, Alida, ii. 427.
———, Gerbrant Abraham, ii. 428, 434.
Gouverneur, Gertrude, ii. 428.
———, Isaac, ii. 173, 426, 428, 429, 431, 433, 434.
———, Johanna (Low), ii. 429, 429, 432.
———, Magdalena (Hall), ii. 429, 436.
———, Magdalina, ii. 426.
———, Margrita, ii. 426, 430.
———, Maria, ii. 427, 432.
———, Maria Matilda, ii. 431.
———, Mary (Leisler), ii. 434.
———, Nathaniel, ii. 431.
———, Nicholas, ii. 342, 427, 428, 429, 434.
———, Samuel, ii. 426, 427, 428, 431.
———, Sarah, ii. 430.
———, Sarie (Morris), ii. 427, 437.
Governor's Island, i. 11.
Governors of New York, list of, i. 507-509.
Graham family, ii. 216.
———, James, Attorney-General, i. 192, 259—ii. 437.
———, Augustine, ii. 68—suspended, i. 496.
Grande, Marie, ii. 368.
Grant, Chauncy L., Jr., ii. 310.
———, Mrs., of Laggan, i. 155-156—ii. 161, 250.
Gravesend, i. 28, 91, 291.
Great Carrying Place (Fort Edward), ii. 111.
Greece, ii. 392, 393.
Greek Church, ii. 360.
Green, Joshua, ii. 369.
——— Mountain boys, ii. 124, 265.
Greenbush, i. 225, 235, 346—ii. 159.
Greenwich, i. 82—ii. 295.
——— Bay, i. 73.
Griffin, Martha A., ii. 309.
Groenendyck, Peter, ii. 85.
Groeneveld, manor of, i. 207.
Groesbeck, Catherine, ii. 150.
———, Gerardus, ii. 105.
———, William Claes, ii. 461.
Groesbeeck, Rev. David, ii. 359.
Groot, Hester, ii. 414.
———, Symon, ii. 369.
Grosvenor, ———, ii. 245.
Ground Briefs, i. 116.
Guard House at Carrying Place, ii. 313.
Guiana, i. 16.
Guilder, the, i. 11—value of, in Massachusetts, 2s. in 1646 = $5 now.
Gustavus Adolphus, i. 34.
Haarlem, i. 30.
Hackensack, N. J., i. 17—ii. 490, 491, 492, 493.
——— River, ii. 217, 220.
Haekinsackys, the, i. 135.
Haeghoort, Pastor, ii. 430, 431, 489.

Haerlem, ii. 289.
Hague, The, i. 70, 208.
Hale, Dr. David Morey, ii. 441.
———, Esther (Scribner), ii. 441.
———, Harriet P., ii. 442.
Halfmoon, the ship, i. 4—Half Moon, the estate, i. 152, 153, 302, 390—ii. 16, 370, 371.
Hall, John, ii. 436.
——— (Gouverneur), Magdalena, ii. 429, 436.
Hamilton, Alexander, ii. 242, 273, 274, 281, 283.
——— County, i. 232.
———, Eliza, ii. 244.
———, Governor of New Jersey, i. 422—ii. 208.
———, James A., ii. 283.
———, Mary Morris, ii. 244.
Hancock, John, ii. 319.
Hand, Sally, ii. 400.
Handsome Savage, the, ii. 278.
Hannah, an Indian, ii. 136.
Hanover Square, i. 338—ii. 207, 342.
Hansen, Hendrick, i. 499—ii. 53, 137, 472.
———, Maria, ii. 462, 463, 472.
Hanyost (Schuyler), ii. 463, 473-477, 497.
Hardy, Governor, ii. 128, 129.
Haring, ship, i. 187.
Harison, Francis, ii. 69, 70.
Harlem, ii. 436.
Harper's Monthly, ii. 347.
Harper's Weekly, ii. 222.
Harson, George, ii. 171.
Hartford, i. 65, 66, 67, 71. 74, 77, 80, 83, 190, 348—convention at, i. 73, 76—treaty of, i. 41.
Hartgers, Peter, ii. 340, 348.
———, Sytje, ii. 345.
———, Peter, ii. 348.
Harvard College, i. 93, 227—ii. 217—students captured, 166.
Hastings, Lord, ii. 495.
Hauck, Mary, ii. 465, 466.
Haukens, Leonora, i. 208.
Haverstraw, i. 295.
Haverstroo, i. 201.
Haviland, Colonel, ii. 123.
Hawley, Betsey (Scribner), ii. 441, 442, 452.
———, Thomas, ii. 441, 452.
Haywood, George, ii. 399.
———, Melissa, ii. 402.
Hazen, Colonel, ii. 326.
———, Moses, ii. 362.
Heathers, Mrs., i. 300.
Heemstede, i. 29
Heermans, Augustine, i. 55, 56.
———, Ephraim, i. 56, *n*.
———, Jan (John), ii. 436.
Heermans, John, ii. 429, 436.
Hell Gate, ii. 346.
Hendrick (Indian), i. 298, 299, 493—ii. 36, 128, 138—secret agent, 54, 55—visits Governor, 56—wishes to go to England, 57—restored, 76—his Indian name, 143.
Hendrikus, Rev., ii. 428.
Henlopen, Cape, i. 12, 13, 53.
Henry, John V., ii. 274.
Herbitsen, Andries, i. 110, 137, 138.
Herkimer, Catherine, ii. 463, 464.
———, Elizabeth Barbara, ii. 462, 463.
———, Johann Jost, ii. 473, 474.
———, General Nicholas, ii. 473, 474, 475.
Herrick, Harriet, ii. 484, 487.
Heyes, Captain, i. 13.
Hieronimus, ii. 318.
Highlands, the, i. 5, 201, 295.
Hill, Col., ii. 403.
———, General, ii. 47.
Hillhouse, Harriet, ii. 153.
Hilliche, ii. 147.
Hilts, Lydia, ii. 199.
Hinckly, Dr. John W., ii. 465.
Hinoyossa, i. 57, 58, 59, 60, 61—i. 62, 63.
History of Redemption, ii. 363.
Hitchcock, Caroline E., ii. 443.
———, Clinton, ii. 443.
———, Ira, ii. 244.
Hitts, Elane, ii. 481, 483.
Hobart College, ii. 222.
Hoes, ———, ii. 332.
Hollaendare, Peter, i. 37.
Holland, i. 36, 43, 45, 49, 57, 58, 59, 62, 64, 67, 70, 74, 84, 85, 87, 88, 89, 90, 109, 112, 114, 153, 157, 163, 171, 175, 176, 177, 178, 180, 210, 243, 293—ii. 149, 291, 329, 345—contest with Spain, i. 4, 5—party strife in, 9—a refuge for the persecuted, 88—its educational system, 89—its enlightened political and religious views, 90—its commercial supremacy, 92—municipal privileges of, 92, 93—love of learning in, 94, 95—Schuylers in, 99—baptismal names in, 100.
———, University of, i. 237.
———, Henry, Captain English army, i. 297.
———, Hitchen, English officer, i. 301.
———, Stadtholder of, i. 335.
Holmes, George, i. 35.
———, Oliver Wendell, ii. 319.
———, Robert, ii. 402.
Holy Land, ii. 373.
Honduras, ii. 251.
Honyost. *See* Hanyost.
Hooges, Antoni de, i. 182.
Hooker, Rev. Mr., i. 67, 89.

Hoosac River, i. 233, 305.
Horchill, Fort, i. 58, 64.
Horekill, 13.
Hottest month, 1775, 1793, ii. 418.
Hough, Alexander H., ii. 403.
Housatonic River, ii. 131, 332.
House, Hendrick, i. 467.
Howe, Jemima, Mrs., ii. 211.
———, Lord, i. 155—ii 249.
Hoyt, William, ii. 201.
Hudde, Andries, i. 39, 40, 48.
Hudson, Henry, i. 4, 5, 304, 310.
——— City, i. 237.
——— River, i. 5, 7, 12, 14, 31, 38, 74, 78, 79, 86, 87, 102, 121, 201, 209, 219, 229, 232, 235, 245, 272, 274, 281, 305, 306, 310, 311, 395, 401, 402, 426—ii. 264.
Hughs, Colonel, ii. 319.
Huguenot, French, i. 201.
Huguenots, i. 31, 49, 324—ii. 373.
——— banished, ii. 99.
——— settle near Albany, ii. 99.
Hull, George, ii. 409.
Humbert, Jonas, ii. 357.
Hun, Abraham, ii. 401.
———, Elizabeth, ii. 400.
Hungerford, Diecy, i. 192, 196.
Hunt, Eliza L., ii. 154.
Hunter, Grace, ii. 243.
———, Mary, ii. 197.
———, Col. Robert, appointed governor, ii. 40—his first conference with Five Nations and others, ii. 40—holds conference with Indians, 46—directs forts to be built, 48—loaded supply ships, *ib.*— not surprised, 49—protects the borders, *ib.*—hurries to Albany, 51—built forts, 54—at Indian conference, 56—alarmed, 57—unhappy, *ib.*—replies to Hendrick, *ib.*—makes a compromise, 58—last conference, 63—goes home, 63—alarmed, 67—arrangement with Burnet, 79.
———, Brigadier Robert, Governor of New York, 1710-1719, i. 267, 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 276, 277, 278, 279, 280, 283, 289, 290, 299, 508—ii. 33, 42, 45, 47, 60, 64, 66, 72, 75, 81, 142, 215, 258, 286, 351, 468.
———, Thomas Mulford, ii. 465.
Hunterfield patent, the, ii. 469.
Hurd, Edgar H., ii. 201.
———, Lucy S., ii. 309.
Hurley, i. 139, 162.
Huron, lake, i. 261, 311.
Hurons, the, i. 311, 312—overwhelmed by Iroquois, 313.
Hutchings, John, ii. 10, 12.
Hutchinson, Mrs. Ann, i. 28, 91.
———, the historian, ii. 233.
Hulter, Johan de, i. 105, 122, 220.
———, Mme. de, i. 158.
Hyde, Edward, i. 508.

Iberville, M. d', ii. 16.
Illinois River, i. 318.
Indiana, ii. 447, 449, 450—pioneer history of, 455.
Indian affairs, i. 322, 324, 331—commissioner of, 297—board of, 420—board of commissioners reorganized, 452—board of commissioners, report, 457—board of commissioners, 472—commissioners report to Bellomont, 485 *et seq.*—cost of expedition, 487—board of commissioners, new instructions, 496—board, 297—ii. 468.
Indians, chiefs in England, ii. 34—their address to the Queen, *ib.*—names of, 36—farewell addresses, with their tokens, 35, 36—couriers, 418—deeds, 117, 258—ii. 131, 133, 135, 136, 140—defiance, 450—fights, 439 *et seq.*—fisheries, 485—invasion, 1655, 298—mail carriers, 232—names, 274—nations of New England, annihilated, 228—orators, 466—proselytes, camels of the desert, 313—slaves, 193—speeches, 412, 413—trade, 102—ii. 457—war of 1643, i. 18, 28—ii. 294—aid the Dutch against the Swedes, i. 40—sell lands on the Delaware to the Dutch, 42—Abenaki, 447—Christian, 489—increase, 492—Connecticut, 155—Delawares, 314—drunken, 140—expensive soldiers, 393—raids in Canada, 396—the Five Nations, 247—fond of news, ii. 54—Highland, i. 198—Huron, 447—Illinois, march to attack Iroquois. 319—Long Island, 146, 148—Mohawk, 102—Mohegan, 245, 274—of New England, 312—Onondagas and Senecas, 288—praying, 416—raids of, 31, 32—sale of lands in New Jersey, 24—Schaghticoke, 233—Senecas, 290—survey of the, with whom the Dutch had to deal, 304-335—want ministers, ii. 490.
Ingham, Harriet A., ii. 484, 486.
Ingoldesby, Richard, Lieutenant-Governor of New York, i. 296, 377, 378, 390, 395, 397, 398—ii. 26, 47, 351—council at Albany, i. 390—bad military policy, 399, 407—absence without leave, 495, 508—commission revoked, ii. 39—Acting Governor, ii. 182.
Ingnosedah, i. 299.
Intolerance of New England, i. 28-30.

Ireland, ii. 256.
Irish, ii. 264.
Irondequoit Bay, i. 327, 328—ii. 85.
Iroquois, sovereignty over, i. 471—must be destroyed—ii. 16—termed Six Nations, ii. 90—confederacy, 305. *See* Five Nations—and Shawanoes bury the hatchet, 186.
Irving, Washington, ii. 271, 328.
Island, Great, of the Flatts, i. 161.
Israel, ii. 374.
Ithaca, N. Y., ii. 366, 367, 454.

Jackson, James, ii. 354.
Jacobites, i. 248,
Jacob (Indian), i. 493.
Jacobs, Maurice, his aliases, John Binchson and Long Finn, i. 64.
Jacobsen, Rutger, i. 110, 111.
Jacquet, Jean Paul, i. 47, 48.
Jamaica, i. 205.
———, L. I., i. 29—ii. 25.
James I., i. 254.
James II., i. 193, 194, 330, 332, 333, 334, 335, 336, 337, 350.
James River, i. 3—ii. 439.
Jans, Anneke, i. 235, 286, 338—ii. 327, 335, 342, 399, 457—and her Bouwery, 337-361—a widow, and marries a second time, 337—and sister Maritje families connected with others, 338, 342—removed to Albany, 345—death and will, *ib.*—patent of her farm, 347—her heirs sell her bouwery, 348—her heirs get a new patent, *ib.*—suits by her heirs to recover the farm, 352, 361—her heirs send out agents, 355—her Bible and rings, 360.
———, Maritje, i. 338—ii. 338, 340, 342.
Jansen, commissary, i. 37, 38, 39.
———, Roelof, ii. 337, 346.
———, Tryntje, ii. 338.
———, Tymen, i. 338—ii. 338, 340, 342, 343.
———, Volckert, i. 138.
Jarret, Allan, ii. 68, 70, 71.
Jauncy, Elsie A., ii. 154.
Jay, ii. 265.
———, the family, ii. 342.
Jealousy of English merchants, i. 191.
Jenkins, Anna, ii. 409.
Jersey Blues, ii. 212.
——— City, i. 292.
Jerusalem, ii. 378.
Jessup, Sarah, ii. 398.
Jesuits, the, i. 249, 313, 322, 324, 334, 381, 407, 408—ii. 145—influence on Indians, i. 479—false reports, 492.
Jesuit missionaries, i. 298.
Jesus, Island of, i. 330.
Johnson, Captain, i. 373.
———, Elenor, ii. 201.
———, Sir John, i. 236—ii. 266, 488.
———, Sir William, i. 118, 299, 453—ii. 36, 76, 122, 123, 259, 264, 320, 321, 470, 490.
Johnsons, the, ii. 264.
Johnston, Andrew, i. 203.
———, Dr. Mayor, ii. 67.
Johnstown, N. Y., ii. 478.
Jolive, John, ii. 451.
Jonas, Tryn, ii. 338.
Joncaire, builds a fort in Seneca country, ii. 44.
Jones, David, ii. 352.
———, Judge, i. 280—ii. 254, 255.
———, Richard, ii. 212.
———, Samuel, ii. 243.
———, Thomas, ii. 352, 356.
———, William, i. 338.
Jonkman, D., ii. 373.
Joris, Adriaaen, Director-General of New Netherland, 1623-24, i. 26, 507.
Joseph (an Indian), ii. 138.
Judiciary Committee, i. 284, 285.
Jurian, i. 408.

Kansas, ii. 381.
——— River, ii. 386.
Kellogg, Daniel, ii. 445.
———, Epenetus, ii. 445.
———, Phebe (Scribner), ii. 440, 445-447.
———, Samuel, ii. 445.
Kelly, William S., ii. 406.
Kemble, Gouverneur, ii. 172.
———, Peter, i. 201.
Kennebec River, i. 3, 305—ii. 235.
Kennedy, Archibald, Receiver-General, ii. 194, 215, 341.
———, Archibald, Captain, ii. 197, 213, 214, 341.
Kent, Rev. Elisha, ii. 443, 451.
———, James, Chancellor, ii. 254, 271, 274, 451.
———, Moss, ii. 451.
Kent's Parish, ii. 443, 451.
Kentucky, ii. 447.
Kenyon, Nellie, ii. 155.
Kerr, Walter, ii. 412.
Ketcham, Julia McChain, ii. 307.
Kettell's biographical sketches, ii. 174.
Kettle, the Great, i. 447.
Khokand, ii. 393.
Kidd, Captain William, i. 251, 256, 257, 258, 259, 261.
Kieft, William, Director General of New Netherland, 1638-47, i. 189, 211, 215, 292, 507—ii. 293, 368—directs Indians to be killed, 294—in-

dignant, 344—lost at sea, 345—i. 18, 19, 22, 26, 27, 28, 29, 34, 35—Indian War, 19—recalled, 20—orders the expulsion of the English from New Netherland, 37, 38, 91—complains of the Connecticut colony, 71.
Kierstede, ii. 357.
———, Blandina, ii. 339.
———, Elizabeth, i. 290.
———, Dr. Hans, i. 339—ii. 339, 348.
———, Hans, Jr., ii. 342.
———, the family, ii. 343.
Kievet's Hoeck, i. 65.
Kimball, Hattie, ii. 443.
Kinderhook, i. 346, 455—ii. 129, 130, 131, 132, 140, 336.
——— Creek, ii. 129, 246, 332.
——— Lake, ii. 335.
King, Charles, ii. 393, 426.
———, Gertrude Wallace, ii. 310, 393.
———, Hendrick, ii. 286.
———, Henrietta Liston, ii. 426.
———, Rufus, ii. 273, 393.
——— of France, i. 410—treatment of Indians, ii. 77.
——— of Spain, dead, ii. 5.
——— William III., i. 192, 266, 267—ii. 170.
Kings County, i. 377.
King's farm, ii. 349.
Kingsland, Hannah C., ii. 171.
———, Hester, ii. 196, 205, 471.
———, Isaac, ii. 192, 196, 205.
———, Mary C., ii. 199
Kingston, Canada, *see* Cadaraqui and Fort Frontenac, i. 31, 120, 179, 247, 304, 318, 319, 355—ii. 131, 189, 282, 284, 328.
———, N. Y., ii. 435, 471.
Kinnan, Mary, ii. 481, 482.
Kinsale, ii. 251.
Kintekoye, i. 140.
Kip, Eliza, ii. 198.
———, Jacobus, i. 294.
———, Johannes, ii. 169.
———, Leonard, ii. 403.
———, the family, ii. 339.
Kispauw, Ann, ii. 308.
Kling, Moens, i. 37.
Kneeland, Bessie, ii. 202.
Knickerbaker, Johannes, i. 234.
Knickerbacker, ii. 424, 425.
———, Herman, ii. 401.
———, Jannetie, ii. 340.
Knickerbackers of Schaghticoke, ii. 130.
Knickerbocker, Dr., ii. 409.
———, Harmen Janse, ii. 130.
Königsmark, Count, i. 64.
Kouassaden, Oneida Sachem, i. 411.
Krom Kil, i. 154, 159.
Kuer, Jacob, ii. 373.
———, Pieter, ii. 373.
Kuldja, ii. 393.
Kurney, Mercy, ii. 244.

Labadists, i. 56 *n.*—ii. 339.
Lachine, i. 446.
Lady of the Flatts, ii. 321.
Laet, Johanna de, i. 120.
La Famine, i. 319, 327.
La Fleur, ii. 108, 109.
Lafort, Marcus, ii. 369.
La Fourt, Bartholomew, ii. 369.
Lake Champlain, ii. 123, 135, 237, 264, 267.
——— George, ii. 37, 114, 115, 123, 259, 267, 269, 274 327.
——— St. Sacrament, ii. 114, 122.
Lamb, Mrs. Martha J., ii. 284, 298.
La Montagne, Johannes, i. 114, 115, 144, 216—ii. 299, 300, 302, 304.
La Motte, Isle, i. 373.
Lancaster, ii. 251.
Langdon, Eugene, ii. 245.
Lansing, Abraham A., ii. 400, 401.
———, Abraham Douw, ii. 401.
— ——, Angelica, ii. 153.
———, Ariantia, ii. 401.
———, Catherine, ii. 400, 401.
———, Elsie, ii. 405, 406.
———, Gertrude (Schuyler) (16), i. 161—ii. 151.
———, Gertrude (Schuyler), (33), ii. 160.
———, Isaac D. F., ii. 153.
———, Jacob, ii. 405.
———, John (Johannes), ii. 132, 150.
———, John A., ii. 416.
———, John Jacob, ii. 306, 396, 404, 405.
———, Killian V. R., ii. 401.
———, Lena, ii. 406, 407.
———, Maria, ii. 400.
———, Rev. Nicholas, ii. 405.
———, Peter, ii. 160.
———, Philip, ii. 105.
———, Sanders, ii. 153.
Lansinburgh, ii. 176.
La Prairie, i. 155, 374, 384, 385—ii. 224,—Schuyler's fight, 385.
La Salle, i. 435—ii. 109.
Law prohibiting Canada trade, ii. 83, 87, 88—to preserve Dutch records, 261—for division of estates, ii. 104, 106.
Lawrence, Thomas, ii. 347.
———, Thomas, Jr., ii. 431, 438.
———, Warren, W. H., ii. 310.
Lawyer, Elizabeth, ii. 464.
Lee, Charles, ii. 263.
———, General, ii. 265.

Lees, Deborah, ii. 440.
Le Fort, La Fort, de Fort, ii. 368, 369. *See* Fort, the family.
Le Forte, Jacob, ii. 373.
Legal fees, and fees charged, ii. 289.
Leggett, Barthia, ii. 397, 398.
Leisler, Catherine, i. 340—ii. 341.
———, Francina, i. 340.
———, Hester, i. 340—ii, 342, 434.
———, Jacob, i. 167, 168, 169, 191, 193 *ff.*, 201, 202, 203, 241, 242, 245, 246, 247, 249, 250, 255, 337 *ff.*, 348, 349, 460, 461, 508—ii. 11, 108, 110, 139, 143, 164, 166, 172, 182, 223, 225, 285, 292, 293, 328, 332, 340, 343, 396, 426, 428, 432, 458, 468—letter to Albany, 355 *et seq.*—fails to gain Albany, 357, 359, 366, 367—his commissioners at Albany, 368—patriotism, 369—fits out man-of-war, 369—alliance with New England, 370, 372, 375—arbitrary policy, 376 *et seq.*—trial, 379—execution, 380—assumes to be lieutenant-governor, 341—proclamation, 342—arrest of Bayard, 344—dread in Albany, 345—express from Albany, 346—history of, 337—captain of the fort, 339—commander-in-chief, 340—letter to convention, 350, 351, 352, 354—his burial, 169—made a map, 213—possessed attractions and ability, 341.
———, Mary, i. 340—ii. 341, 434.
———, Susanna, i. 340—ii. 341.
Leislerians, i. 255, 256, 262, 263, 354.
Lespinarde, Antoni, i. 331.
Lespinard, Anthony, of Albany, ii. 108, 109, 369.
———, A., intimate with Governor of Canada, ii. 109.
Lewis, Governor Morgan, i. 290.
———, Morgan, ii. 353.
———, Thomas, i. 340.
———, Thorn, ii. 429.
Lexington, ii. 263.
Leyden, i. 88, 95.
———, University of, i. 95.
Lievens, Annetje, i. 114, 115, 116, 153.
———, Janssen, i. 114.
Limburg, i. 100.
Lindenwald, ii. 335.
Ling, Matthew, ii. 9.
Linn, Hetty, ii. 380.
Lisbon, ii. 216.
Lispenard, Abigail, ii. 380.
——— Street, New York, i. 331—ii. 109.
Little Falls, i. 486—ii. 247.
——— Rock, Ark., ii. 381, 449.
Livingston, the family, i. 243, 286—ii. 264, 295, 335.
———, Alida, i. 164, 296.
Livingston, Angelica, i. 290.
———, Brockholst, i. 287.
———, Captain, ii. 121.
———, Catherine, i. 227.
———, Edward, i. 288.
———, Engeltie, i. 236—ii. 339.
———, Gilbert, i. 287—ii. 103, 105.
———, James, i. 290.
———, Janet, i. 290.
———, John, i. 286, 287, 290.
———, Rev. John H., i. 287.
———, Katharine B., ii. 203.
———, Margaret, ii. 105, 106, 132.
———, Margarita, ii. 414, 419.
———, Maturin, i. 290.
———, Mrs. Chancellor, ii. 284.
———, Peter, i. 290.
———, Peter R., i. 290.
———, Peter Van Brugh, i. 287.
———, Philip, i. 160, 227, 243, 271, 280, 286, 288—ii. 103, 111, 132, 133, 247, 340.
———, Philip (second), i. 287.
———, Philip, signer of Declaration of Independence, ii. 132, 423.
———, Robert, i 166, 170, 179, 185, 243-291, 296, 348, 352, 366, 367, 381, 383, 392, 405, 407, 417, 460, 461, 465, 466, 467, 478, 482, 483, 496, 498—ii. 2, 17, 19, 22, 26, 94, 96, 99, 103, 105, 126, 127, 138, 238, 285, 286, 315, 458—his career and family, 243-291—to Onondaga, 484—end of career, 273—history of Livingston Manor, 274-282 *et seq.*—his great prosperity, 285 *et seq.*—arrival in Albany, 243—marriage, 243 *et seq.*—prominent in Dutch church, 244—acquires an estate, 245—financial success, 246—advances money for defence of Albany, 247—in New England, trouble with Leisler, 248—returns to Albany, 249—shipwrecked, 250—in England, *ib.*—presents claim to the Lords of Trade, 251—cold reception in Albany, 252—complains to Duke of Shrewsbury, 253—reply to report of the Council, 254—changes his politics, 255—relations with Capt. Kidd, 256 *et seq.* — Bellomont's charges, 258 *et seq.*—skill in Indian affairs, 260 *et seq.*—Indians ask that he be sent to England, 262—sails for England, 263—captured by privateer, 264—reinstated by Queen Anne, 266—befriended by Governor Hunter, 267—elected to Assembly, 267 *et seq.* — manor repatented, 269—claims paid, 270—elected speaker, *ib.*—his son appointed secretary of Indian affairs, 271 — friendship of Governor Burnet, 272 — sends to

President Schuyler a memorial, 74.
Livingston, Robert, Jr., i. 161, 288, 291—ii. 67, 73, 104, 150, 257, 419, 468.
———, Robert, third proprietor of manor, i. 280, 281, 282, 283, 286, 287—ii. 132, 133, 217.
———, Robert James, i. 290.
———, Robert R., Justice of the Supreme Court of the Colony, i. 287.
———, Robert R., Jr., Chancellor of the State of N. Y., Minister to France, i. 287, 288.
———, Rosanna, ii. 243.
———, Walter, ii. 151.
———, William, i. 285, 287, 288—war governor of New Jersey, ii. 132, 134. 352.
——— Manor, i. 297—ii. 130, 140, 323, 331—history and description of, i. 273-285.
Lockwood, Margaret, ii. 484, 487.
———, Marilla, ii. 482, 485.
Lodwick, Charles, ii. 59, 60, 329.
London, i. 66, 237, 238, 258, 264, 268.
———, Bishop of, i. 265.
——— Company, i. 3.
Long House, i. 307, 308, 310.
Long Island, i. 7, 24, 41, 50, 70, 73, 77, 82, 83, 84, 85, 86, 91, 132, 141, 151, 199, 245, 257, 337, 426—ii. 281, 294, 302, 440—Dutch towns on, i. 427—settlement of, 28-30—English towns on, i. 30.
——— Sound, i. 65, 66, 70, 85, 86.
Longueil, M. de, i. 483.
Lookermans, Anneke, wife of Olof Stevense Van Cortlandt, i. 188—ii. 339.
———, Govert, i. 188, 338—ii. 339, 340, 341, 342, 343, 348.
———, Jacob, i. 339—ii. 341, 342.
———, Jenetje, ii. 342.
———, Maritje, ii. 342.
Lords Majors, the directors of the West India Company, i. 15, 18.
——— Superiors, ii. 297.
——— of Trade, i. 197, 251, 256, 258, 259, 260, 261, 263, 264, 265, 268, 271—recommend a present, ii. 62.
Lossing, Benson J., ii 254, 256, 271, 280, 284, 476, 477.
Lost River, ii. 394.
Louis XIV., i. 333, 334, 396, 431, 436.
Lovelace, John, Lord, Governor of New York, 1708-1709, i. 267, 508—ii. 26, 27, 40, 351.
———, Colonel Francis, Governor of New York, 1667-1673, i. 152, 225, 507—ii. 129, 130, 348, 349, 352, 354.
Lowressen, Sergeant, i. 129, 130.
Low, families, ii. 435.
———, Abraham, ii. 430, 435.
———, Annatje, ii. 435.
———, Anthony, ii. 435.
———, Cornelius, Sr., ii. 430, 432, 434, 435.
———, Cornelius, Jr., ii. 426, 429, 435, 436.
———, Elizabeth, ii. 397, 435.
———, Gertrude, ii. 431.
———, Helena, ii. 435.
———, Hendrick, ii. 435.
———, Henrietta Liston (King), ii. 426.
———, Isaac, ii. 429, 432.
———, Johanna, ii. 431, 432.
———, Johanna (Gouverneur), ii. 426, 429, 432.
———, Johannes, ii. 435.
———, John, ii. 430, 431.
———, Margaretta, ii. 430.
———, Margareta (Van Borsum), ii. 432, 435.
———, Margreitje, ii. 435.
———, Maria, ii. 435.
———, Nicholas, ii. 426.
———, Nicolas, ii. 430.
———, Petrus, ii. 435.
———, Samuel, ii. 430.
———, Sarah, ii. 430, 432.
———, Tymen, ii. 435.
———, Wilhelmus, ii. 430, 435.
———, William, ii. 431, 432.
——— Countries, the "University of war," i. 89.
Louwrens, Andries, i. 127.
Lowndes, Harriet, ii. 245.
Lucas, Earl, ii. 309.
Ludlow, William H., ii. 399.
Lupton, William, ii. 171.
Lutheran Church, ii. 490, 491—at Schoharie, i. 488.
Luttrell, Narcissus, account of Indian kings, ii. 38.
Luycas, Evert, ii. 129.
Luzerne, Switzerland, ii. 454.
Lydius, Rev. John Henry, ii. 115, 419, 490
Lyman, Col., ii. 122.
Lynn, ii. 206.
Lyon, General, ii. 383.
———, Lucy, ii. 412.
———, Marcus, ii. 309, 412.

Mabee, Maria, ii. 484, 486.
McCartey, Abby, ii. 400.
———, Rebecca, ii. 400.
McCord, Margaret, ii. 464, 465.
———, Mary, ii. 464, 465.
McConn, Maria, ii. 151.

McDonald, John, ii. 276.
McDowell, C. E., ii. 309.
——, Camp, ii. 393.
McEnroy, Archibald, ii. 256.
McGregor, i. 203.
McMaster, Kate, ii. 482, 484.
——, Robert P., ii. 154.
Machin, Thomas, ii. 199.
Maestricht, i. 100.
Magazine of American History, ii. 275, 365.
Magdalen Island, ii. 130.
Maine, i. 92, 305, 335, 375—ii. 18, 122.
Malcolm, Richard M., ii. 354.
——, Samuel, ii. 243, 283.
——, William, ii. 354.
Manchester, Earl of, i. 79.
Manchini, Kate, ii. 200, 202.
Mandeville, ——, ii. 197.
——, Esther, ii. 307.
Manhattan, i. 5, 7, 12, 18, 29, 30, 35, 39, 45, 46, 83, 91, 92, 96, 117, 128, 137, 144, 145, 151, 172, 175, 188, 210, 211, 302, 426—ii. 246, 299, 304, 347—fort on, i. 10, 27—purchase of, 11—diversity of languages in, i. 27.
Mann, Rev. Duncan C., ii. 201.
Map of Saratoga Patent found, ii. 105.
Maquas, i. 298 *et seq.* *See* Mohawks.
Marcellus, J. W., ii. 309.
Maricour, M., i. 472, 479, 491—ii. 4, 5, 6, 228.
Marin, M., ii. 114-117, 125, 127—commands an expedition, 114—retreats, 119.
Mars, ii. 245.
Marschalk, Elizabeth, ii. 462, 463.
Marselis, Esther Ann, ii. 411.
——, Frances, ii. 411.
Marselius, Anne, ii. 400.
Marselus, Margaret, ii. 464.
Marshall, Chief Justice, ii. 271.
Martin, Abigail, ii. 484, 486.
——, Ira Kingsley, ii. 154.
Maryland, i. 29, 52, 56, 62, 339, 369, 370, 372, 391, 393, 405, 409, 412, 424, 483—contribution to war, 431—quota, 432.
Mason, Capt. John, i. 68, 89.
Massachusetts, i. 66, 71, 73, 76, 77, 78, 80, 82, 91, 93, 230, 231, 235, 248, 280-282, 335, 347, 375, 394, 395—ii. 18, 24, 26, 122, 323, 450—delegates, i. 422—frontier of, ii. 112—General Court of, i. 79, 83—proposes a conference, ii. 234—quota, i. 432—war contributions, 432, *n.*, 438—Schuyler's letter about Schenectady massacre, 360 *et seq.*, 366, 367, 369, 370 seeks aid from Five Nations, ii. 87.
Massacre at Schenectady, i. 358.
Mathews, Capt., i. 399, 401—ii. 187.
Matiset, Indian sachem, ii. 184.
Maurice, Prince of Nassau, i. 9, 239.
May, Cape, i. 12.
——, Cornelis, Director-General of New Netherland, 1624-1625, i. 26.
——, Margaret, ii. 495.
Mayflower, the, i. 91.
Matazal Mountains, ii. 394.
Mead, Frederick, ii. 443.
——, Zalmon S., ii. 442.
Mechanicsville, i. 153—ii. 96, 98.
Mechanics and Farmers' Bank, ii. 330.
Megapolensis, Rev. Johannes, i. 27, 109, 129, 182, 214—ii. 246, 344.
Melyn, Cornelis, i. 17, 18, 24—arrives, 17—patent for Staten Island, 18, 19—ruined by Indian war, 19—banished, 20, 21—returns, 20, 21—compromise, 21.
Memoirs of an American lady, ii. 250.
Memphis, ii. 222.
Mennonites, i. 58, 64.
Meppel, ii. 378.
Mercurius, ship, i. 48.
Merrimack, ii. 234.
Mersalis, ——, ii. 199.
Merselius, Guisbert, ii. 320.
Mexican Central Railroad, ii. 385.
Mexico, city of, ii. 385.
Michilimakinac, ii. 89.
Mico, John, ii. 318.
Middleburgh, N. Y., ii. 488.
Milborne, Capt. Jacob, i. 169, 241, 242, 249, 340, 367-380—ii. 341, 432—Jacob, arrives at Albany, i. 349—calls on the convention, 350—attempts to get possession of the fort, 351, 352—appointed Commander-in-chief, 370, 377—trial, 379—execution, 380.
Milet, Jesuit missionary, i. 406, 408, 409, 411, 414, 425, 450—ii. 146.
Milford, Conn., ii. 444.
Military Academy, ii. 393.
Militia, i. 439.
Milk Creek, ii. 395.
Miller, Ann, ii. 198.
——, Catharine, ii. 398.
——, David, ii. 171.
——, John, i. 202.
——, Morris S., ii. 380.
——, Mrs., ii. 273.
——, Rutger B., ii. 358.
Millick, Harriet A., ii. 202.
Mincees, i. 120.
Minisink country, ii. 183.
——, village, ii. 189.
Minister, insult to a, ii. 421.
Ministers licensed in Holland, ii. 420.
Minnesota, ii. 280.
Minuit, Peter, Director General of

New Netherland, 1626-1632, i. 26, 33, 42, 507—ii. 328—appointed director of Swedish West India Company, i. 34—erects a fort, 35—death, 37.
Minqua Kill, i. 34.
Minquas, the, i. 135.
Mispath, i. 29.
Missionaries, Protestant, i. 492.
Missionary, among Mohawks, ii. 54.
Mississippi River, i. 310, 318.
Moanagh, i. 201, 295.
Mobile, Ala., ii. 449.
Mohawk Castles, i. 395—attack on, 397.
——— chiefs in England, ii. 467.
——— Indians, excited, ii. 51—uneasy, 55—selling land, 135.
——— lands, ii. 134.
——— patent, ii. 140.
——— proselytes, ii. 234.
——— River, i. 118, 209, 211, 298, 306, 311—ii. 133, 134, 264.
——— Valley, i. 236—ii. 206, 471, 473, 476, 488.
Mohawks, the Indians (Maquas), i. 8, 32, 106, 118, 121, 133, 135, 144, 145, 150, 190, 211, 298, 306-15, 351, 354, 357, 358, 360, 367, 372, 373, 382, 383, 384, 395-99, 466, 484—ii. 419, 470, 473—invasions from Canada, 315 *et seq.*—removal to Canada, 324, 329, 332—Christian, 381—action with French, 400—refuse to advance, 401—decrease, 491—Protestant, 493—disappearing, ii. 145.
Mohegan Indians, i. 65, 68, 120, 133, 135, 155, 211, 245, 274—ii. 229.
Mompesson, Roger, ii. 58, 60, 133.
Monckton, Major Gen. Robert, Governor of New York, 1761-1763, i. 508—ii. 215, 320, 321.
Monroe, Amina, ii. 308.
Montcalm, ii. 123, 209.
Montgomerie, John, Governor of New York, 1728-1731, i. 508—ii. 106.
Montgomery County, N. Y., ii. 195, 479.
———, General, i. 291—ii. 124, 266, 267, 408.
Montreal, i. 290, 305, 319, 321, 322, 326, 330, 346, 357, 367, 375, 383, 389, 391, 395, 407, 410, 459—ii. 27, 109, 123, 224, 266, 313—base of operations, i. 430—Captain Schuyler's visit, 471—return of Cadaraqui expedition, 442—prisoners burned, 447.
———, Island of, invaded by Iroquois, i. 329—second invasion, 330.
Moody, Lady, i. 28, 91.
Moolman, Arie, ii. 431.
Moore, Sir Henry, i. 508—ii. 261.
Morehouse, Harriet, ii. 407.
Morris family, ii. 342, 427.
———, Catherine, ii. 244.
———, Gouverneur, ii. 438.
———, Colonel Lewis, ii. 436.
———, Lewis, Jr., ii. 59, 60, 430, 433, 436, 437, 438.
———, Lewis, on Cornbury, ii. 25—appointed judge, 58.
———, Maria, ii. 431, 438.
———, Captain Richard, ii. 436.
———, Richard, ii. 436.
———, Sarie (Gouverneur), ii. 427, 437.
———, Staats Long, ii. 437.
———, William, ii. 10.
Morrisania, ii. 427, 436, 437.
Morristown, N. J., ii. 446.
Morton, Washington, ii. 243, 273.
Moscow, ii. 392.
Mother Barbara, ii. 279.
Motley, J. L. (the historian), i. 92.
Muhlenburgh, Rev. Mr., ii. 417.
Muldrow, Samuel C., ii. 152.
Munsell, Joel, i. 182—ii. 262.
Munster, ii. 328.
Murray, John, Earl of Dunmore, i. 509.

Naarden, i. 206.
Nagle, Peter, ii. 433.
Names of children, ii. 459.
Nanfan, John, Lieutenant-Governor of New York, i. 260, 261, 262, 263, 268, 470, 476, 478, 480, 481, 488, 508—ii. 2, 6, 7, 8, 12, 22, 165, 233.
Narragansett Bay, i. 8.
——— Indians, i. 75.
——— River, i. 66, 69, 80, 81.
Narrows, the, i. 4.
Nash, Micajah, ii. 440.
Nassau, i. 102—ii. 334, 336.
———, Dillenburg, i. 43 *n.*
———, Fort, i. 33, 35, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42.
———, Prince Maurice of, i. 9.
Nederhorst, Herr, i. 16.
Negro, the, i. 137.
——— slave, who wished to live with Massa, ii. 192.
———, Schuyler's, ii. 497.
Nelson, John, i. 388.
Nether Dutch Church, ii. 164, 169.
Netherlands, the, i. 3, 89—ii. 378.
Neutral Ground, ii. 444.
Neutrals (Indians), i. 313.
Nevis, Island of, ii. 281.
New Albany, Ind., ii. 446, 450, 455—foundation of, 447, 448.
New Amstel, i. 52, 53, 55, 58, 61, 63.
New Amsterdam, i. 16, 25, 27, 31, 32,

33, 34, 36, 38, 40, 44, 45, 47, 48, 51, 52, 59, 63, 72, 73, 74, 84, 91, 110, 118, 120, 121, 132, 135, 175, 176, 187, 189, 215, 216, 292—ii. 283, 294, 304, 316, 337—population of, i. 33—becomes New York, 85—Indian outbreak, 122—surrender of, 190—invaded, ii. 298.
Newark, bay of, i. 17.
New Barbadoes Neck, ii. 192, 205.
New Brunswick, ii. 251, 422.
Newburg, i. 201.
New England, i. 65, 72, 74, 76, 78, 84, 88, 90, 92, 96, 194, 247, 248, 249, 258, 304, 320, 333, 335, 406, 412—ii. 18, 24, 269, 304—education encouraged, 93, 95—intolerance of, 28-30.
——— path, ii. 129.
——— colonies, i. 169.
———, colonies form a confederation, i. 71—confederacy of, 89.
———, Albany appeals to, i. 347 *et seq.*
Newenhuysen, Dominie, i. 239, 240.
New Gottenburg, i. 38, 39.
New Hampshire, i. 91—ii. 18, 322—frontiers of, 112.
New Haven, i. 37, 41, 67, 71, 72, 74, 76, 77, 79, 80—colonists aggressive, 70.
New Jersey, i. 24, 31, 80, 121, 195, 199, 201, 203, 287, 333, 394, 454—ii. 27—churches of, 420—contribution to war, i. 431—quota, 432—quota of, ii. 208.
——— Historical Society, i. 180, 181.
New London, i. 79.
New Netherland, i. 23, 27, 32, 33, 34, 37, 52, 58, 60, 63, 64, 65 *ff.*, 90, 91, 96, 112, 127, 137, 151, 171, 207, 210, 214—ii. 288, 295—named, i. 7, 8, 10—directors of, 26—toleration in, 30—population of, 31-33—limited educational privileges, 93, 94—council of, 137, 152.
New Orleans, ii. 449.
New Plymouth, i. 66, 73.
New Rochelle, ii. 147, 258.
Newspapers, substitute for, i. 104.
New Sweden, i. 35, 36, 37, 38, 44, 47, 61.
Newtown, i. 29.
New Utrecht, i. 24.
New Village, i. 137-142, 147, 151-52.
New York, a defence to colonies, i. 394—always the frontier, ii. 62—a royal province, 264—builds forts, 28, 29—capture of, 63, 64—census, 1698, i. 427, 428.
——— Bay, i. 4.
———, Central, i. 307.
——— City, i. 367, 368, 372.
New York, colony of, burden of defence on, ii. 207—condition of province, 426—contribution to war, 432—council in, 462—history of, 280.
——— frontiers, ii. 112.
——— Historical Society, ii. 93, 255.
———, not recovered from last war, ii. 28.
———, the province, i. 322, 323, 325—Denonville's plan for conquest, 329, 330, 331—boundary question, 333—added to Dominion, 333, 335—population Protestant, 336, 337—revenue, 429—rumors of war, 451.
——— State, i. 80, 86.
———, the city, i 331, 332, 334.
———, the revolution, i. 341 *et seq.*, 346, 347, 348.
——— Times, ii. 222.
———, Western, i. 204.
——— World, ii. 222.
Niagara, ii. 78—block-house at, 100.
———, fort, i. 325, 327, 328—abandoned, 329.
——— River, i. 313.
Nicholson, Fort, ii. 31.
———, Francis, Lieutenant-Governor of New York, i. 336, 338, 340, 356, 508—ii. 27, 32, 34, 35, 36, 45, 46, 48, 49, 59, 94, 111.
Nicoll, Anna, i. 224, 225.
———, Mathias, ii. 436.
———, William, i. 195, 197, 224, 344, 378—ii. 8, 167, 331.
Nicolls, Richard, Governor of New York, 1664-1667, i. 84, 86, 103, 152, 190, 303, 507—ii. 129, 290, 347, 348.
Nieuwport, battle of, i. 207—medal of, 208.
Nieverville, ii. 117.
Nine men, the, i. 189.
Nipissings, ii. 117.
Niskayuna, i. 179, 369, 390—ii. 16, 370.
Nissepat, ii. 429, 436.
Noble, Robert, i. 282.
Noel, Thomas, Mayor, i. 198—ii. 8, 168.
No Popery, ii. 165.
Normand's Creek, ii. 279.
Norman's Kill, i. 102—ii. 469.
North America, i. 308.
Northampton County, Penn., ii. 478.
North Carolina, i. 309—ii. 50.
Northern Department, ii. 264, 270.
North Pacific Coast Railroad, ii. 384.
Norton, Sophia E., ii. 201.
Nova Scotia, i. 305—ii. 122.
Norwalk, Conn., ii. 439, 440, 444, 445, 451.
Nutten Island, ii. 299.
Nyack, ii. 405
Nykerk, i. 100, 171, 178, 206, 207.

Oaken cabinet, history of, i. 104, 105.
O'Callaghan, E. B., i. 176, 179—ii. 298.
Ogden, Catherine, i. 205.
———, David, ii. 431.
———, Gertrude, ii. 430.
———, Mary, ii. 197.
———, R. H., ii. 244.
———, T. W., ii. 244.
Oghreeghhoonge, i. 299.
Ohio, i. 92.
——— River, i. 310, 318, 484—ii. 122, 280, 446, 447.
Olden, Barneveldt, John of, i. 207. *See* Barneveldt.
———, Manor of, i. 207.
Old Jan's land, ii. 337, 347.
Oliver, Charles, ii. 196.
———, James, ii. 318.
———, Margaret, ii. 193.
———, Sarah, ii. 318.
Oneida, i. 353.
——— Indians, i. 306, 307, 309, 317, 406, 407, 408—ii. 473, 477, 497—submit to Vaudreuil, 450.
——— Camping place, ii. 133.
——— County, ii. 280.
——— Lake, i. 306, 309, 502.
——— River, ii. 134.
Onion River, i. 481.
Onondaga, i. 307, 334, 352, 353, 370, 371, 408, 410, 418, 425—ii. 312, 467—burned, i. 449—council fire, 322—council at, 372, 468, 475—fort at, 498.
——— County, ii. 362.
——— Indians, i. 288, 306, 307, 309, 311, 317, 319, 328, 330, 332, 346, 409, 411—excited, 481.
——— Lake, i. 449.
——— salt spring, i. 499—seeking site for fort, 500.
Onontio, Indian epithet for Governor of Canada, i. 322, 355—ii. 235.
Ontario Lake, i. 261, 306, 307, 311, 318, 319, 326—ii. 471.
Oosterhout, Maritje, ii. 371.
Oothout, Abraham, ii. 405, 406.
———, Lansing, ii. 406.
Orange, Fort, i. 32, 78, 102, 108, 113, 116, 120, 126, 130, 133, 137, 144, 172, 176, 178.
———, house of, i. 100.
———, Prince of, i. 40, 43, 89, 208, 238, 248, 335 *ff.*, 339, 350.
Orangien, Jan Fort, ii. 368.
Ordinations, ii. 489.
Orehaoué, Iroquois chief, i. 436.
Oriskany Creek, ii. 133, 134.
———, battle of, ii. 134.
——— patent, ii. 133.
Osborn, Augusta, ii. 349.
Osborn, Catherine, ii. 407, 408.
———, Elizabeth, ii. 407, 408.
———, James H., ii. 407.
Osborne, Sir Danvers, i. 508.
Oswego, i. 301—ii. 123, 208, 255, 259.
———, captured, ii. 209.
———, trading house at, ii. 314.
——— River, i. 448.
Ottawa Indians, i. 410, 448.
——— River, i. 313.
Otter Creek, i. 368, 395—ii. 135.
——— River, ii. 114.
Oyster Bay, i. 30, 73.

Paauw, Director Michael, i. 12, 15, 30.
Pacific Ocean, i. 281—the western boundary of Massachusetts, 78.
Packwood, Sarah, ii. 152.
Paine, M. F., ii. 410.
Palatine, N. Y., ii. 252.
——— settlement, i. 268, 277, 278.
——— town, ii. 471.
Palatines, the, i. 276, 277, 278, 297—ii. 63.
Palls, kept by Dutch church, i. 302.
Palmer, Beriah, ii. 376.
———, Mary, ii. 307, 376.
———, William, ii. 244.
Parkman, Francis, i. 355 *n.*
Parliament, ii. 262.
Passaic River, ii. 192, 212, 220.
Patcoke (Claverack), i. 455.
Patroon, i. 226, 227, 228, 231—last patroon, 231.
Patroons, i. 11-27, 30, 31.
———, charter granted, i. 209.
———, colony, i. 24.
Patterson, Cornelia, i. 231.
———, Judge William, i. 231.
Patuxent River, i. 55.
Pawcatuck River, i. 81, 86.
Paulus Hook, i. 292.
Pavonia, i. 12, 17, 31—ii. 294—destruction of, 31.
Peace of Ryswyk, i. 459.
Pearl Street, New York, i. 200—ii. 342.
Pearson, Prof. Jonathan, ii. 172, 261, 368.
Pedrom, ii. 251.
Pelham, i. 91.
Pels, Evert, ii. 348.
Penn, William, i. 64.
Pennsylvania, i. 64, 92, 201, 394, 404, 406—ii. 86, 87, 122, 190.
——— militia, ii. 268.
Penny, Samuel, ii. 441.
Pequannock, ii. 190, 193.
Pequod Indians, i. 65, 67, 89, 96—the nation destroyed by the Dutch, 68.
Perrot, Isle, i. 448.
Perth Amboy, i. 203—ii. 190.

Peter the Great, ii. 393.
Peterboro, N. Y., i. 291—ii. 212.
Philadelphia, i. 33, 37—ii. 495.
——— Schuylers, ii. 495, 496.
Philipsburg, i. 23, 127.
Philipse, Adolph, i. 273, 341 *ff.*—ii. 315, 443—suspended from council, 80—loyal, 82.
———, Eve, i. 190.
———, Frederick, i. 23, 87, 127, 190, 193—ii. 290, 291.
Phillips, Wendell, ii. 319.
———, E. E., ii. 203.
Phil Sheridan, town of, ii. 386.
Phipps, Frances, ii. 483, 485.
———, Sir William, i. 422.
Pieterse, Philip, i. 110.
Pinchon, Colonel, i. 422.
Pinhorne, William, ii. 135, 136, 137, 140, 144.
Pinto Creek, ii. 394.
Pirates, i. 257, 258.
Pitt, Secretary, ii. 210.
Pittsburg, Pa., ii. 446.
Place of graves, ii. 157.
Plains of Abraham, ii. 267.
Plainfield, N. J., ii. 453.
Planck (Verplanck), i. 292.
Platt, Hetty, ii. 397, 398.
Ploeyden, Edward, i. 5.
Plot, the great, i. 147.
Pluck money, ii. 347.
Plymouth, i. 3, 73, 76, 78, 79, 93, 95, 114, 370, 372—ii. 216.
——— Company, i. 3.
Pocahontas, ii. 38.
Pomeren, ii. 369.
Pompton, N. J., ii. 193, 205.
Poppegaya, John, i. 43.
Port-au-Prince, ii. 441, 447, 451.
Porter, Caroline, ii. 397.
———, Miss, ii. 440, 451.
Port Royal, i. 286, 367, 375.
Portugal, i. 250.
Post, ——, ii. 198.
———, Symon Janse, ii, 100.
Potthook, i. 274.
Poughkeepsie, ii. 131.
Powder River, ii. 394.
Powhatan, ii. 38.
Powis, George, ii. 200.
Prairie Grove, ii. 383.
Praul, Jane, ii. 197.
Praying Indians, or proselytes, ii. 107.
Presbyterian Church, ii. 447, 453.
Presbyterians, ii. 352.
Pretty, Richard, i. 356.
Price's Across the Continent, ii. 395.
Priens, Captain, ii. 339.
Prince Maurice, i. 208, 209—ship, 50.
——— of Wales, ii. 216.
Princess, the ship, ii. 345.
Princeton, i. 227—college at, ii. 453.
Printz, Lieut. John, i. 38, 44—appointed Governor of New Sweden, 38—successful administration, 39—controversies with the Dutch, 40—council with the Dutch Governor, 42—his retirement, 43.
Prisoners tortured, i. 449.
Proselytes, or praying Indians, ii. 32, 107, 108.
Protestant Church, ii. 165.
Protestants, i. 239—ii. 99, 360—banished, ii. 99.
Providence, i. 91.
Provincial Congress, ii. 263.
Provoost, David, ii. 10.
———, Johannes, i. 115, 243.
———, William, ii. 342.
———, Sarah, ii. 430.
Putman, — —, ii. 407.
Putnam County, ii. 443.
———, Israel, ii. 212, 263.
Pynchon, Col., i. 365.

Quackenboss, the family, ii. 371.
———, Jan, ii. 370.
———, Reynier, ii. 370.
Quackenbush, ———, ii. 199.
Quadraques, ii. 430.
Quakers, i. 405—persecution of, by Stuyvesant, 90, 91.
Quebec, i. 248, 286, 291, 305, 317, 319, 321, 322, 327, 355, 366, 367, 375, 391, 408, 412, 418 *ff.* 459—ii. 16, 31, 47, 123, 124, 266, 408—Captain Schuyler's visit to, i. 470.
Queen Anne, i. 264, 265, 266, 269—ii. 13, 25, 162, 349—fitting out an expedition against Canada, 26—Indian medals, 41—dead, 56.
Queen's farm, ii. 357—and garden, a patent for, to Trinity Church, 351.
Queen's County, i. 376, 377.
Queenstown, ii. 404—battle of, i. 230.
Queen Street, New York, i. 200, 203.
Quidor, Indian name of Peter Schuyler, i. 304, 354, 355, 415, 474, 477, 488—ii. 14, 35, 36, 43, 79, 93, 157, 162—confidence of Five Nations in, 75—portrait of, 163.
Quincy, Edmund, ii. 319.

Rab's battery, ii. 381.
Radclift, Jacob, ii. 274.
Rahway River, ii. 193.
Raleigh, Sir Walter, i. 2.
Ramesay, de, ii. 30.
Raritan, N. J., ii. 183, 420, 435.
——— River, ii. 213, 434.

Rawdon, Hon. John Theophilus, ii. 495, 496.
———, Lord, ii. 495.
Rawlins, Wy., ii. 395.
Reading, Indian murders at, ii. 234.
Recorder of Albany, ii. 327.
Rector Street, New York, i. 118.
Red Hook, ii. 176.
Reimer, Machtelt de, ii. 426, 429, 436.
Relations of Anneke Jans, ii. 348.
Remington, Sarah Ann, ii. 203.
Remonstrants, i. 239.
Rensselaer. *See* Van Rensselaer.
——— Manor (Gelderland), i. 206, 207, 224.
——— County, ii. 362.
——— Institute, i. 230.
Rensselaerwyck, i. 14, 15, 21, 26, 32, 101, 116, 120, 157, 167, 171, 172, 177, 190, 211, 212, 214, 216, 217, 218, 220, 228, 245, 302—ii. 129, 131, 132, 157, 253, 344, 370, 470.
Republican Forks, ii. 386.
Resolution of Assembly, ii. 33.
Restless, the ship, i. 7, 8.
Reval, ii. 392
Revolution of 1688, i. 335.
———, the American, i. 120, 180, 202, 204, 227, 228, 231, 237, 283, 287, 288, 290.
Reynders, Barent, ii. 342.
———, Mientje Seeger, ii. 428.
Rhinebeck, i. 203, 290.
Rhode Island, i. 21, 79, 80, 81, 82, 85, 86, 369—quota, 432.
Rich and noble, did not emigrate, ii. 317.
Richards, Elizabeth, ii. 416, 424.
Richelieu River, i. 316.
Richfield Springs, ii. 470.
Ricketts, Mary Walton, i. 205.
Ridge, Susan, ii. 199.
Ridgefield, Conn., ii. 452.
Rinckhout, Daniel, ii. 369.
———, Gertrude, ii. 369, 371.
———, Jan, ii. 369.
———, Juriaen, ii. 369.
———, Margaret, ii. 369, 371.
River Indians, i. 427.
Roberts, Colonel, ii. 121.
Robertson, James, i. 509.
Robinson, Rev. John, i. 88, 95.
Rock Island, Ill., ii. 454.
Rode, Mohawk chief, i. 423—ii. 143.
Rodenburgh, Lucas, ii. 339.
Roelof Jansen's Kill, i. 245, 274, 275—ii. 285, 333, 235.
Roelofs, Annatje, ii. 338, 340.
———, Jan, ii. 338, 340, 355.
———, Sara, ii. 338, 339.
———, Sytje, ii. 338, 340.
———, Tryntje, ii. 338, 339, 340.
Roelofse, Catherina, ii. 399.
Rogers family, ii. 452.
———, Abby, ii. 372, 373.
———, Abigail (Scribner), ii. 440, 451.
———, Dr. Uriah, ii. 451.
Roman Catholics, ii. 360.
Rome, City of, ii. 134.
Romer, Colonel, engineer, i. 499—ii. 4, 13, 110—experience among Indians, 500 *et seq.*—glad to get away, 503.
Romeyn, Rev. John B., ii. 379.
Roof, Dr. F. H., ii. 492, 493.
Roosevelt, Lelia, ii. 203.
———, Lydia E., ii. 201.
———, Nicholas, ii. 9, 10.
———, Sara, ii. 461, 463, 471, 472.
Roseboom, Captain, ii. 42.
———, Margarita, ii. 379.
Rosendale, ii. 238.
Rosie, the family, ii. 371.
———, Jean, i. 459—ii. 109, 370.
Rosmalen, i. 208.
Ross, Martha, ii. 400.
———, T., ii. 401.
Rotterdam, i. 253.
Roumania, ii. 392, 393.
Roumanian Academy, ii. 393.
Roun, B. A., ii. 410.
Rowes, J. T., ii. 203.
Royal Asiatic Society, ii. 393.
"Royal Grant," i. 118.
Russell, Joseph, ii. 403.
——— , Lord Arthur, ii. 496.
Rust Dorp, i. 29.
Rutgers, the family, i. 106.
———, Anthony, ii. 468.
———, Elsje, ii. 461, 462.
———, Harmanus, ii. 468.
Rutse, Major Jacob, ii. 131.
Rutsen, Jacob, ii. 282.
———, Sarah, ii. 243, 282.
Rye, township of, i. 87.
Ryers, George, ii. 350.
Rynders, Barent, i. 340—ii. 434.
———, Gertrude, ii. 428, 434.
———, Hester (Leisler), ii. 434.
———, Johanna, ii. 173.
Rysingh, Johan, i. 44, 45, 46, 47.
Ryswyk, treaty of, i. 459, 478—commissioners, i. 479.

Sadakanahtie, Onondaga chief, i. 355, 418, 458, 488, 493, 504—ii. 4—in Albany, i. 420—visits Fletcher, 438—visits Albany, 471—speech, 477—a match for Bellomont, 495, 496.
Sadalier, Cornelia K., ii. 464, 465.
St. Clair, General, ii. 269.
St. Helen's Island, i. 326.
St. Jan, church of, i. 207.

St. John, Henry, Capt., the Honorable, ii. 197, 216.
———, John, Baron of Bletsho, ii. 197, 216.
———, Secretary, ii. 47.
St. John's Square, ii. 353.
St. Lawrence County, i. 232.
——— River, i. 155, 305, 310, 312, 314, 332, 366, 374, 391.
St. Leger, Col., ii. 178, 275, 474-476.
St. Louis, ii. 222, 383.
St. Luc de la Corne, ii. 116, 121.
St. Martyn, Yacht, i. 188.
St. Mary's, Burlington, ii. 206.
———, Md., i. 56.
St. Michel, Cape, settlers carried off, i. 440.
St. Ours, de, ii. 117.
St. Petersburg, ii. 392.
St. Pierre, M., de, ii. 115, 116.
St. Sacrement, Lake, i. 316, 384.
Salem, N. Y., i. 37, 38.
——— Creek, N. Y., i. 38.
Saline River, ii. 381.
Salisbury, Bishop of, i. 238.
Salmon Falls, N. H., i. 433.
Salt River, ii. 304.
——— Springs, i. 449.
Sanders, Laura, ii. 153.
———, Margareta, ii. 400.
———, Maria, ii. 399, 400.
———, Robert, i. 347, 354, 371, 398, 410—ii. 130, 131.
———, Robert, 2d, ii. 150.
———, William N. S., ii. 407.
Sandford, Sarah, ii. 201.
———, Vice-Chancellor, decides for Trinity, ii. 355, 356.
San Francisco, ii. 393.
Santa Maria, ii. 393.
Santen, Lucas, i. 192.
Saratoga, i. 373, 426—ii. 140—men killed, i. 347—a few families at, ii. 111—attacked, 113, 114—destroyed, 119—battle at, 476.
——— County, i. 153.
——— Lake, ii. 238, 374.
——— Patent, i. 287, 290—ii. 95, 106, 238, 247, 257, 378, 458, 472—proprietors divide, 96—partners' shares, 98—renewed, 102—new owners, 103—to be divided, 104—general history, 107—decisive battle, 126.
Saugerties, i. 149.
Saulsbury, Mallykin, ii. 396, 397.
———, William, ii. 396.
Sauthier's Map, ii. 127, 133.
Savages murdering Dutch, ii. 299.
Savings Bank Law, ii. 377.
Savoy, Waldenses of, i. 49.
Sawyer, Mary A., ii. 243.
Sawyer's Creek, ii. 130.
Say and Sele, Lord, i. 68.
Say-Brook, i. 66, 68, 69, 89.
Sayre, Julie, ii. 143.
Schackelton, Robert, ii. 308.
Schaeffer, Charles Ashmead, ii. 310, 413.
———, Rev. Charles W., D.D., ii. 412.
———, Elizabeth Ashmead, ii. 412.
———, Eugene Schuyler, ii. 412.
———, George Schuyler, ii. 412.
———, Gertrude King, ii. 412.
Schaets, Rev. Gideon, i. 241, 303—ii. 142.
Schaghticoke, ii. 175, 312, 371, 424—murders at, 46—Indians, i. 233, 305, 405-406, 427, 480, 481—ii. 96, 229—scouts, 110—flee to Canada, 111, 112.
Schenck, Rev. G. C., ii. 284.
Schenectady, i. 32, 109, 158, 168, 169, 178, 194, 246, 296, 297, 304, 315, 316, 347, 351, 352, 357, 376, 380, 381, 390, 393, 394, 396 *ff.* 492—ii. 16, 134, 319—destruction of, i. 358 *et seq.*, ii. 458—Schuyler's letter, 360, 366—survivors provided for, i. 368—deserters, 446—petition to Bellomont, 468.
——— Patent, ii. 286.
——— River, ii. 135.
Schermerhoorne, Jacob Jansse, i. 110, 113.
Schermerhorn, Cornelius, ii. 400.
———, Ryer, ii. 138.
Schieffelin, Sidney E., ii. 202.
Schierph, Catharine, i. 186—ii. 306.
Schoenderwoert, Rutger, Jacobsen van, i. 105.
Schoharie, ii. 422, 478, 488, 489, 490, 491.
——— Creek, ii. 469, 489.
——— Tract, ii. 433.
——— Valley, ii. 238.
Schoolcraft, ii. 477.
Schools, i. 302 *et seq.*
Schoonmaker, Cornelia, ii. 401.
Schuiler, hamlet, i. 100.
Schuiller, Pieterson Philip van, i. 100.
Schulekraft, Christian, ii. 489.
Schuyler, Aaron (201), ii. 206.
———, Aaron (297), ii. 221.
———, Abraham (4), 459—ii. 27, 28, 33, 87, 89, 103, 182, 195, 333, 459, 461, 462, 466, 467, 479—in Onondaga country, 27, 28—accompanies Mohawk chiefs to England, 33—in Seneca country—87.
———, Abraham (20), ii. 462, 463, 472, 479.
———, Abraham (50), ii. 463.
———, Abraham (91), ii. 464, 465.
———, Abraham (101), ii. 464, 465.

Schuyler, Abraham, an Oneida Indian, ii. 477.
———, Aeltie van, 99.
———, Adoniah (167), ii. 216.
———, Adoniah (191), ii. 216.
———, Adonia Graham, ii. 216.
———, Alexander H. (42), ii. 380.
———, Alida (Alyda), i. 4, 183, 184, 185, 206, 243, 244—ii. 459.
———, Alonzo Beekman (127), ii. 465, 466.
———, Andrew J. (86), ii. 484, 486.
———, Angelica (71), ii. 152.
———, Angelica (373), ii. 280.
———, Anna, ii. 199.
———, Anna (28), ii. 462, 469.
———, Anna Maria (69), ii. 152, 153.
———, Annatje (Van Alstyne) (11), ii. 492, 493.
———, Ann Eliza (Stoddard) (66), ii. 309, 411.
———, Ann Elizabeth (Bleecker) (145), the poetess, ii. 173, 179, 380.
———, Ann Elizabeth (Staats), ii. 428, 433, 434.
———, Anne H. (65), her children, ii. 411.
———, Rev. Anthony (301), ii. 201, 203, 222.
———, Arent (7), i. 163, 164, 183, 185, 226, 244, 401—ii. 150, 180, 195, 340, 341, 459, 471, 487, 492, 494—Biography, 180-195—Married, 180—bought a house where the eagle hangs out, ii. 180—his will, 181—supported Albany Convention, *ib.*—scouts in Canada, 182—sent to meet Southern Indians, 183—conducts the Shawanoes to New York, *ib.*—interview with Shawanoes, 184—organizes a company, 186—in pursuit of French, 187—removes to New York, *ib.*—goes to Minisink country, 188, 189—removed to Pompton, 190—receives land from Minisinks, 191—makes a second will, 191—removes to Passaic River, 192—his copper mine, *ib.*—third will, 193—codicil to will, 194—will proved, *ib.*—ancestor of New Jersey Schuylers, 195—descendants numerous, 196—notes on his descendants, 205—widow married Archibald Kennedy, 215.
———, Arent (171), ii. 196, 197, 221.
———, Arent (183), ii. 197, 198, 217-219—description of his house and farm, 220—ancestors rendered service to New England, 220.
———, Ariaantje (Ariantia) (6), i. 236—ii. 306, 339, 399, 414.
Schuyler, Aunt, i. 155. *See* Schuyler, Margarita (360).
———, Barent (392), ii. 280.
———, Brandt (Brant) (6), i. 164, 167, 183, 185, 190—ii. 164, 170, 171, 434, 459, 471—a politician, 164, 165—marriage, 164—biography, 164-170—arrested by Leisler, 166—aldermanic contest, 9, 10, 169—member of court-martial, 167—an alderman, *ib.*—recommended to the council, 168—church officer, 169—death and will, *ib.*—notes on the table, 172-179—few descendants, 171.
———, Brandt (140), ii. 171—notice of his death, 173.
———, Casparus (164), ii. 196, 197, 206.
———, Casparus (181), ii. 197, 198, 206.
———, Caroline, (125), ii. 465.
———, Catalijna (Verplanck), ii. 456, 461.
———, Catalina (12), ii. 461.
———, Catalyntje (361) (Cuyler), ii. 242, 250, 470.
———, Catalina (Catlyn) (9), ii. 379, 461.
———, Catherine (8), ii. 306, 404, 405, 414, 416.
———, Catherine (60), ii. 309, 412.
———, Catherine (185) (Kennedy), ii. 197, 212-215.
———, Catherine (383) (Cochran), ii. 243, 283.
———, Catherine (Van Rensselaer), i. 236, 290—ii. 242, 340, 417, 484.
———, Catherine A. (33), ii. 377, 378, 379.
———, Catherine Elizabeth (80), ii. 152.
———, Cheery Ann (47), ii. 308, 410.
———, Christina (Ten Broeck), ii. 306, 327, 415, 417, 418.
———, Cordelia (126), ii. 465.
———, Cornelia, ii. 407.
———, Cornelia (52), ii. 308, 410.
———, Cornelia (381) (Morton), ii. 243, 273.
———, Cornelia (Van Cortlandt), i. 200—ii. 434.
———, Cornelius (72), ii. 153, 154, 163.
———, Cortlandt (369), ii. 242, 243, 256, 278—an officer in the English army, 278—the "handsome savage," *ib.*
———, Daniel (14), ii. 481, 483.
———, Daniel J. (22), ii. 481, 482, 483.
———, David Pieterse, i. 100, 179, 293—ii. 3, 96, 98, 99, 100, 103, 175,

379, 456-460, 479, 492—his life. 456-460—his descendants, 461-478.
Schuyler, David (6), i. 349—ii. 3, 4, 6, 7, 137, 461, 462, 466, 467, 468—mayor of Albany, i. 349—ii. 468.
——, David (13), ii. 461, 462, 470, 471.
——, David (17), ii. 462, 463, 472.
——, David (23), ii. 462, 463, 480.
——, David (41), ii. 462, 471.
——, David (67), ii. 463.
——, David (74), ii. 464, 478.
——, David M. (59), ii. 483, 486.
——, Deborah (37), ii. 376.
——, Dirck (Derick) (15), ii. 307, 326, 365, 416, 418.
——, Dirck (19), ii. 195, 462, 472, 479.
——, Dirck (60), ii. 463, 464.
——, Edward E. S., ii. 216.
——, Elizabeth (4), ii. 396, 414.
——, Elizabeth, ii. 492.
——, Elizabeth (347), (Hamilton), ii. 242, 281.
——, Elizabeth (De Meyer), i. 186—ii. 287, 306, 413.
——, Elizabeth (Staats), i. 186, 200, 296—ii. 428, 434.
——, Elsie (Van Rensselaer), i. 236—ii. 307, 327, 364, 407, 408, 419.
——, Elsie (Wendell), ii. 419.
——, Eugene (81), ii. 310, 391, 392.
——, Evelyn (81) (Schaeffer), ii. 310, 412.
——, Frederick (77), ii. 310, 382, 383.
——, Garret L. (61), ii. 483.
——, George A. (43), ii. 482, 485.
——, George L. (404), i. 181—ii. 35, 163, 244, 245, 272, 283.
——, George S. (78), ii. 484, 486.
——, George Washington (32), ii. 308, 310, 377, 442.
——, Gerrit (of Cologne), i. 99.
——, Gerrit (10), ii. 461, 462, 466, 470, 471.
——, Gertrude (Van Cortlandt) (3), i. 167, 183, 185, 186, 187, 190, 203—ii. 461.
——, Gertrude (Groesbeck), ii. 459, 461.
——, Gertrude, ii. 415.
——, Gertrude (362), ii. 150, 242, 251, 256, 283
——, Gertrude Wallace (King), ii. 392.
——, Gysbert (2), i. 183, 185—ii. 459.
——, Harmanus (21), ii. 307, 308, 417.
——, Harmanus (24), ii. 462, 463, 473, 480.
Schuyler, Harmanus (7), ii. 306, 414, 415, 418.
——, Harmanus (10), ii. 85, 163, 306, 307, 319-327, 364, 366, 367—ii. 402, 407, 414, 415—Asst. Alderman and Sheriff, 320, 321—removes to Stillwater, 321—captures three trespassers, 322—fight with rioters, 323—captures a desperado, *ib.*—Asst. Deputy Com. General, 324—letters to General Schuyler, *ib.*—stationed at Lake George, *ib.*—at Whitehall, *ib.*—his letters to Gen. Schuyler, 324, 325—at Stillwater, 325—death and will, 326, 327.
——, Henrietta Ann (26), ii. 307, 363, 408, 409.
——, Henry (43), ii. 308, 310, 380.
——, Henry Ten Broeck (29), ii. 307, 309.
——, Henry Ten Eyck (389), ii. 243, 244, 283.
——, Hester (Walter), ii. 196, 197, 216.
——, Hetty (200) (Colfax), ii. 198, 206.
——, Howard (79), ii. 310, 311, 383-392.
——, Jacob (1), ii. 479, 481, 487, 492.
——, Jacob (7), ii. 481, 482.
——, Jacob (8), ii. 459, 461, 462, 469, 470.
——, Jacob (21), ii. 462, 463.
——, Jacob Fort (22), ii. 307, 377.
——, Jacob (27), ii. 482, 484.
——, Jacob (44), ii. 482 485.
——, Jacob (56), ii. 483, 486.
——, Jacob (84), ii. 484, 486.
——, Jacob (88), ii 484, 487.
——, Jacob T. (80), ii. 484, 486.
——, James (80), ii. 310, 385.
——, James H. (79), ii. 481, 482, 484, 486.
——, James H. (83), ii. 484, 486.
——, James Van Rensselaer (28), ii. 307, 309.
——, Jane (53), ii. 308, 410.
——, Jeremiah (19), i. 154, 161—ii. 88, 150, 151, 156, 161.
——, Jeremiah (29), ii. 482, 484.
——, Jeremiah (41), ii. 151, 153, 163.
——, Johan Jost (Hanyost), (7), ii. 463, 473-477, 497.
——, Rev. Johannes, ii. 487, 488-494.
——, Johannes (3), ii. 489, 493, 494.
——, John (4), ii. 481.
——, Johannes or John (10), i. 155, 163, 164, 170, 183, 186, 203, 244, 374, 395, 398, 469-474—ii. 28, 29, 101, 105, 127, 147, 157, 223-242, 283, 286, 318,

459, 470, 472 — bears despatches, 469 *et seq.*—returns, 471, 472—delegate to Onondaga, 473, 474—sings the war song in Onondaga, 28—buys share of Saratoga Patent, 99—knew Indian character, 224—volunteered to invade Canada, *ib.* — his fight with the French, 225—amused with the enemy's alarm guns, *ib.*—invades Canada again, 226—lieutenant of cavalry, *ib.*—sent to Canada—*ib.*—argues with Frontenac, 227—Indians present charges against him, 228—to be employed by Bellomont, 229—messenger to New York, 230 — receives letters from Bellomont, 231—is urged to have Abenaki sachems visit Bellomont, *ib.*—writes to Bellomont, 231, 232—Bellomont is satisfied with him, 232—his messengers to eastern Indians return, 233—commissioner of Massachusetts, 234—gives notice of Indian raids, *ib.*—in Canada, 236—visited the Abenakis, *ib.*—goes to Onondaga, 237—participates in the war of 1709, 237—official position, 237—land transactions, *ib.*—improves his property at Saratoga, 238, 239—brick house at Saratoga, 238—his son Philip killed, 239—survives his family, *ib.*—died, *ib.*—his estate large, 240—his will, 239, 240—notes on descendants, 246.

Schuyler, Johannes (11), i. 414, 415, 416.

———, John (18), ii. 481, 483.

———, John (39), ii. 462, 470, 471.

———, John (90), ii. 464, 465.

———, John (165), ii. 196, 197, 206.

———, John, Jr. (359), i. 203—ii. 103, 105, 151, 246-247.

———, John (363), ii. 242, 256.

———, John Arden (52), ii. 483, 485.

———, John Bradstreet (378), i. 227—ii. 106, 243, 282.

———, John Cortlandt (384), ii. 243, 279, 280, 283.

———, John Cuyler (57), ii. 150, 152, 159, 154, 163.

———, John Edwin (63), ii. 309, 380.

———, John H. (16), ii. 307, 327, 365-372, 407, 416, 417, 418.

———, John J. (28), ii. 482, 484.

———, John W. (58), ii. 481, 483, 486.

———, John (of Philadelphia), ii. 495, 496.

———, Joseph (92), ii. 464, 465.

———, Julia (57), ii. 309, 411.

———, Kate W. (71), ii. 412.

———, Laurence Lawyer (102), ii. 464, 465.

Schuyler, Rev. Louis Sandford (344), ii. 203, 222.

———, Magdalena (28), ii. 150, 151.

———, Margaret (Van Slichtenhorst), i. 99, 158, 162, 166, 167-171, 182, 294—ii. 150, 306.

———, Margaret (7), ii. 493, 494.

———, Margaret or Margarita (11) (Collins), i. 163, 164, 170, 184, 186, 294, 298, 301, 303—ii. 379.

———, Margaret (12) (Livingston), i. 161, 288—ii. 150, 160.

———, Margaret (Snell) (14), ii. 492, 493, 494.

———, Margaret (375) Van Rensselaer, i. 231—ii. 242, 282.

———, Margarita (360), the "American Lady," i. 155—ii. 150, 159, 248, 250, 256, 257, 472.

———, Maria, i. 150 *n.*, 161.

———, Maria (Van Rensselaer), i. 150, 224, 225, 296.

———, Maria (5), ii. 459, 461.

———, Maria (17), ii. 416.

———, Maria (19) (Van Rensselaer), ii. 327, 376, 408, 417, 418.

———, Maria (124), ii. 465.

———, Martha (82) (Grant), ii. 310, 412.

———, Martin J. (139), ii. 486, 487.

———, Mary (39), ii. 308, 410

———, Matilda Scribner (69), ii. 308, 310, 442.

———, Rev. Montgomery (300), ii. 201, 203, 222.

———, Montgomery (351), ii. 203, 204, 222.

———, Moses, an Oneida Indian, ii. 477.

———, Myndert (7), i. 289, 290—ii. 67, 73, 459, 461, 462, 468, 469—visits the Senecas, 73—Mayor of Albany, 67, 468—Member of Assembly, 468.

———, Myndert (26), ii. 462, 480.

———, Nicholas (3), ii. 42, 286—306, 312-316, 396, 413, 415, 419, 472.

———, Nicholas (3), D. C. Surveyor, 286—a sketch, 312—Member of Assembly, 312, 313—fond of adventure, 313—compromises, 315—engineer, *ib.*—death and will, *ib.*—his Bible records, 413.

———, Nicholas (12), ii. 307, 326, 339, 362-363, 416, 417, 418.

———, Nicholas Ten Broeck (64), ii. 309, 311, 381, 382.

———, Peter (5), i. 99, 154, 155, 159, 160, 161, 169, 170, 183, 185, 224, 236, 244, 252, 266, 272, 288, 289, 290, 299, 302, 505—ii. 1, 149, 150, 187, 254, 257, 312, 331, 339, 370, 383, 408, 419, 487—birth, i. 302—deacon in Dutch

church, 303—"Quidor," 304—begins to take an active part in affairs, 323—lieutenant of cavalry, *ib.*—judge of Oyer and Terminer, *ib.*—Mayor of Albany, *ib.*—chairman Board of Indian Commissioners, 324—rescues prisoner from Mohawks, 329—letter to Dongan, 331, 334, 335, 344, 352, 353, 354, 355—letter describing destruction of Schenectady, 360 *et seq.*—commissioned to attend council, 371—council at Onondaga, 372—discouragement, 373—issue of campaign, 374 *et seq.*—superseded, 376—restored, 380—member of council, *ib.*—expedition against Canada, 380 *et seq.*—combat at La Prairie, 383 *et seq.*—effect on Indians, 389—speech to the council, 392—strengthens defences, 395—to Schenectady, 398—pursues the French, 399—action with French, 400—returns, 401—report of expedition, 402 *et seq.*, 405, 407—letter to Fletcher, 408—council at Albany, 415—letter to Fletcher, 416—rescues captive, 433, 439, 440—ordered to the field, 442—audience with Dekanissora, 444—Indian Commissioner, 453, 455, 459, 461—council in New York, 462—at Montreal, 463, 465, 467, 473, 474, 478, 480, 482, 483—to Onondaga, 484, 491—Bellomont's charge, 495, 504—Bellomont's jealousy, 505—relations with Bellomont, ii. 1—understood Indians, *ib.*—to be removed from the council, 2—is termed Colonel, 13—at Onondaga, 18—desired peace, 19—letter to Vaudreuil, 20—Indians use his house, 21—financial transactions, 22—contractor, *ib.*—the public a poor debtor, 23—senior councillor, 26—Indians attached to his command, 27—sends Indian chiefs to Boston, 28—at his post, 29—disappointed, 31—resolves to take Indian chiefs to England, 32—sails for England, 33—arrives in London, *ib.*—declines knighthood, 37—returns home, *ib.*—visits Onondaga, 42—cordially received, 43—destroys French fort, 44—Member of Congress, 49—commands regiment, 47—left off Indian board, 50—restored to Indian board, 52—misrepresented, 59, 60—was not slighted, 61—receives instructions, 63—is president and acting governor, 65—painstaking, 66—letters to government, 71—invited to visit Five Nations, 72—urges their claims, 73—writes earnestly, 74—held conference with Indians, 76—returns to New York, 78—last letter to Lords of Trade, *ib.*—presided last time, *ib.*—hands over papers, *ib.*—disagrees with Burnet, 80—suspended, *ib.*—loyal, 82—is left on Indian board, 88—dead, 90—services and character, *ib.*—why loved by Indians, 91, 92—held in reverence, 93—Cold endislikes him, 93, 94—left no will, 94—his lands, 94-149—genealogical table, 150—notes on, 156—he warned Fletcher, 186.

Schuyler, Peter (2), ii. 461.

——, Peter (16), ii. 461, 473, 480.

——, Peter, Jr. (18), ii. 85, 87, 150, 156, 161.

——, Peter (20), ii. 150, 151, 165, 242, 251.

——, Peter (33), ii. 151, 152, 162-163.

——, Peter (69), ii. 463, 464.

——, Peter (89), ii. 464.

——, Peter (166), of New Jersey, ii. 121, 196, 197, 207-215, 254, 341—appointed Colonel, 208—paid his soldiers, *ib.*—taken prisoner, 209—released on parole, *ib.*—rejoicings at his return home, *ib.*—assists prisoners, 210—twice married, 215.

——, Peter P. (46), ii. 152, 153, 156, 163.

——, Peter Quidor (27), ii. 307, 308, 408, 409.

——, Peter S. (35), ii. 151, 152, 163.

——, Peter Davidse (2), i. 179—ii. 460, 461, 466.

——, Petrus (4), ii. 489, 493.

——, Philemon (39), ii. 482, 485.

——, Pieter (38), ii. 462, 463, 470, 471, 473.

——, Philip Pieterse (1), i. 59-166, 178, 181-185, 206, 237, 294, 296, 301, 302, 303—ii. 95, 156, 306, 348, 376, 456-460, 466, 469, 471—first knowledge of, i. 99, 102—marriage, 99, 103—variations in his name, 100, 101—family papers destroyed, 101—encounter with Dyckman, 103—prosperity in business, *ib.*—purchases at auction sales, 105, 106—delegate to Mohawk council 107—friendship for the Indians, 108—vice-director, *ib.*—letter from Andros, 109—captain of foot, *ib.*—armorial window, 111—officer of church, 112—business transactions, 112, 113, 114—transactions in real estate, 116, 118—owns houses in Albany, 119—Esopus, 120—founding of New Village, 137—petition to buy Half Moon, 152, 153—homestead at the

Flatts, 154-162—cemetery, 155—will, 159, 160, 162—family record, 181-184—record of marriage, 182—record of death, 184—genealogical table, 185.
Schuyler, Philip (5), ii. 306, 414, 415, 472.
———, Philip (6), ii. 489, 490, 492, 493.
———, Philip (9), i. 183, 186, 244, 275—ii. 285-288, 306, 366, 414, 471—biography, 285-288—commandant of Fort Schenectady, 285—marriages, 287—died, *ib.*
———, Philip (2), genealogical table, ii. 306.
———, Philip (10), ii. 481, 482.
———, Philip (13), ii. 472.
———, Philip (15), ii. 461, 463, 471, 472.
———, Philip (17), ii. 150, 157-160, 220, 224, 241, 242, 254, 257, 321—bequeaths a burying-place, 157—sketch of, 158—censured by Smith, 159—will, 160.
———, Philip (18), ii. 307, 416, 417.
———, Philip (20), ii. 307, 308, 376, 417, 424.
———, Philip (21), ii. 482, 483.
———, Philip (25), ii. 151, 162.
———, Philip (42), ii. 462, 471.
———, Philip (136), ii. 171, 172, 428, 433, 434, 471.
———, Philip (161), ii. 196, 205, 206, 471.
———, Philip (358), ii. 118, 242, 256, 472.
———, Philip (395), ii. 106, 107, 243, 244, 274.
———, Philip Church (30), ii. 307, 309, 367, 377.
———, Philip Church (74), ii. 309, 311.
———, Philip Jeremiah (379), ii. 107, 243, 274, 282.
———, Philip Pieterse (77), ii. 153, 156.
———, Philip Rensselaer (of Philadelphia), ii. 495, 496.
———, Philip Van Cortlandt (390), ii. 243, 244, 283.
———, General Philip (368), i. 180, 182, 203, 227, 236, 290—ii. 35, 105, 106, 114, 124, 126, 151, 160, 251, 253-277, 283, 318, 320, 324, 340, 364, 417, 422, 424, 476, 477, 492, 494—letter to Washington, 128—a genealogist, 162—his family group, 253—goes to England and settles Bradstreet's accounts, 255—divided his father's estate, 256—buys a part of Saratoga patent, 257—position and education, 258—commissioned captain, 259—saves a wounded soldier, 259—resigns his commission, 260—again enters the army and is promoted, 260—appointed colonel, *ib.*—elected to the Assembly, 261—opposed to government, *ib.*—member of convention, 262—member of Continental Congress, 263—appointed major-general, *ib.*—charged with Northern Department, 264—left to his own resources, 265—what he had to do, *ib.*—to organize an army, 266—had enemies, 267—appointed delegate to Congress, 268—demands a court of inquiry, *ib.*—nominated for governor, *ib.*—asks for court of inquiry, 270—superseded, *ib.*—charged with cowardice, 271—honorably acquitted, *ib.*—retired from the army, 272—senator, 273—his monument, *ib.*—lands, 273, 274—will, 274—employed secret agents, 275—attempt to capture him, 275-277.
Schuyler, Miss "Polly," ii. 218.
———, Ralph (89), ii. 484, 487.
———, Rensselaer (186), ii. 197, 216.
———, Rensselaer (380), ii. 107, 243, 274, 282.
———, Reuben (37), ii. 151, 152, 372.
———, Richard (26), ii. 482, 484.
———, Richard (46), ii. 483, 485.
———, Richard (79), ii. 153, 156.
———, Robert (400), i. 180, 181—ii. 244, 245.
———, Samuel (11), ii. 481, 482.
———, Samuel (13), ii. 307, 326, 363, 364, 416, 418.
———, Samuel (20), ii. 481, 483.
———, Sarah (78), ii. 310, 412.
———, Shinah (Simons), ii. 307, 417.
———, Simeon (5), ii. 489, 490, 493.
———, Simeon (96), ii. 464, 465.
———, Stephen (24), i. 161, 203—ii. 151, 162.
———, Stephanus, or Stephen (370), ii. 242, 243, 256, 279, 280.
———, Stephen P. (48), ii. 152, 153.
———, Stephen R. (58), ii. 152, 153.
———, Stephen Van Vechten (60), ii. 152, 156.
———, Susan (54), ii. 308, 411.
———, Susan Mann (73), ii. 309, 412.
———, Swan (188), ii. 197.
———, Sybilla (8), i. 183, 186.
———, Thomas (31), ii. 482, 484.
———, Thomas R. (40), ii. 482, 485.
———, Van Rensselaer (128), ii. 465, 466.
———, Walter Scribner (84), ii. 310, 393-395.
———, William (2), ii. 489, 493, 494.
———, William (13), ii. 481, 483.
———, William (17), ii. 481, 483.

Schuyler, William (49), ii. 483, 485.
——, William (90), ii. 484, 487.
——, William T. (81), ii. 484, 486.
——, Wilson W. (121), ii. 465, 478.
—— arms, i. 111.
—— diamonds, ii. 37.
—— mansion, ii. 128.
—— house fortified, ii. 158.
—— Lake, ii. 470, 473.
Schuylert, i. 99.
Schuylerville, ii. 106, 126, 254.
Schuylkill River, i. 8, 37, 38, 39, 40.
Schuyr, Peter, i. 178.
Scobry, ii. 400.
Scotch, ii. 264.
Scotland, i. 203, 283.
Scott, John Morin, ii. 352.
——, Gen. Winfield, ii. 269.
Scoville, Catherine, ii. 155.
Scralenberg, N. J., ii. 490, 491.
Scribner family, the, ii. 439-455.
——, Abigail (Rogers), ii. 440, 451.
——, Abigail (26), ii. 441.
——, Abner (39), ii. 441, 447, 448, 450.
——, Arthur, ii. 455.
——, General Benjamin Franklin (67), ii. 442, 450.
——, Betsy (Benedict), ii. 440.
——, Betsey (Hawley), ii. 441, 442.
——, Bradford (66), ii 442, 450.
——, Charles (75), ii. 443, 453, 454, 455.
——, Charles Rogers, ii. 454.
——, Edward (70), ii. 442, 453, 454.
——, Elijah (23), ii. 441.
——, Elijah (34), ii. 441, 447.
——, Elijah Porter (42), ii. 441.
——, Eliphalet (29), ii. 441, 447.
——, Elizabeth (27), ii. 441.
——, Elizabeth (38), ii. 441, 447.
——, Enoch (22), ii. 440, 441.
——, Esther Hale (35), ii. 441, 447.
——, Frank, ii. 455.
——, Frederick, ii. 455.
——, George, ii. 455.
——, Harvey Augustus, ii. 450.
——, Henry (76), ii. 443, 454, 455.
——, James, (28), ii. 441, 442, 447.
——, Jane (77), ii. 443.
——, Jemima (30), ii. 441.
——, Joel (31), ii, 441, 442, 447, 448, 450.
——, John Hitchcock, ii. 454.
——, Julia (78), ii. 443.
——, Julia Ann (62), ii. 442.
——, Keziah (25), ii. 441, 452.
——, Phebe (63), ii. 442.
——, Phebe (Kellogg), ii. 440, 445-447.
——, Phebe (Waring), ii. 441, 448, 449, 450.
Scribner, Lucinda (65), ii. 442.
——, Maria (72), ii. 442.
——, Martha (21), ii. 440.
——, Martha (33), ii. 441, 442, 452.
——, Martha (Smith), ii. 440.
——, Mary Lucinda (60), ii. 442.
——, Matilda (Schuyler) (69), ii. 308, 377, 442.
——, Matthew (5), ii. 439, 440.
——, Matthew (20), ii. 440, 441, 450, 451, 454.
——, Nathaniel (19), ii. 440, 443-5, 450, 451, 542, 455.
——, Nathaniel (36), ii. 441, 447, 448.
——, Rogers, ii. 454.
——, Samuel (46), ii. 441, 443.
——, Uriah Rogers (41), ii. 441, 442, 451-453.
——, Walter (80), ii. 443, 454, 455.
——, Rev. William (74), ii. 443, 453, 454, 455.
——, William Augustus (58), ii. 442.
——, High School, New Albany, Ind., ii. 448.
Scribner's Monthly, ii. 453.
Scrivener, ii. 439.
——, Abraham (5), ii. 440.
——, Benjamin (1), ii. 439, 440.
——, Hannah (Crampton), ii. 439, 440.
——, John (3), ii. 440.
——, Mary (6), ii. 440.
——, Matthew, ii. 439.
——, Thomas (2), ii. 440.
Scudder, Elizabeth, ii. 402.
Scarles, David, ii. 201.
Secretary of State, i. 298—documents, ii. 459.
Select Men of New Amsterdam, ii. 298.
Seneca Indians, the, i. 288, 306, 307, 309, 317, 318, 319, 321, 325, 326, 409, 411, 481—ii. 466, 468—Denonville's expedition, 326 *et seq.*, 329, 330, 331.
Seneca country, ii. 184.
——, Lake, i. 307.
Serbia, ii. 392, 393.
Serviss, Mary, ii. 481, 482, 483, 484.
Settlers at Saratoga, ruined, ii. 111.
Sewall, Jonathan, ii. 319.
Seymour, Governor, Horatio, i. 170—ii. 380.
Shackelton, George Eugene, ii. 410.
——, Robert, ii. 410.
Sharp, Lieut., i. 348, 349.
——, Mr., ii. 346, 347.
Shauts, Jane, ii. 397.
Shaw, Eliza, ii. 171.
——, Susan, ii. 482, 484.
Shawanoes Indians, the, i. 395—ii. 183—desired to bring their nation, 185

—arrive, 189—invited to Minisink country, 185.
Sheldon, Edwin P., ii. 309.
Sheppard, Ellen, ii. 482, 484.
Shields, Susan, ii. 197, 216.
Shipman, William C., ii. 442.
Shoemaker, Mr., ii. 474, 475.
Shraat, John, ii. 428.
Shrewsbury, Duke of, 253.
Shuler, Ann, ii. 484, 487.
Shutte, John, i. 303.
Sickles, Margaret, ii. 153.
Sickler, Peter, ii. 398.
Sigismund, King, i. 43, *n.*
Silver Legs, i. 173.
Simons, Shinah, ii. 307, 362, 417.
Simms, J. R., ii. 492.
Simmons, Elizabeth, ii. 463.
———, Nancy G., ii. 399, 400.
Simms, Captain, i. 401.
Sioux, the, ii. 394.
Six Nations, the, ii. 264, 266.
Skenesborough, ii. 324.
Skinner, Rev. William, i. 203.
Slaves, of Schuyler family, ii. 497.
Slim Buttes, ii. 397.
Sloughter, Colonel Henry, Governor of New York, 1691, i. 195, 196, 249, 344, 508—ii. 165, 167, 292—arrival, 377, 378—prosecution of Leisler and Milborne, 379 *et seq.*—goes to Albany, 381—council with Indians, 381 *et seq.*—expedition to Canada, 383—death, 388, 389.
Sluyter, i. 56, *n.*
Small-pox, i. 373.
Smith, Catherine, ii. 309.
———, Chaplain, suspended, i. 495.
———, Ensign Dirck, i. 47, 128, 129, 130, 132, 133, 134, 135.
———, Gerritt, i. 291.
———, Hannah, ii. 441.
———, Henry, ii. 131, 133.
———, Captain John, ii. 439.
———, Martha (Scribner), ii. 440.
———, Peter, i. 291.
———, Colonel William, ii. 1, 2, 352.
———, William, the historian, i. 290, 304—ii. 47, 93, 94, 352.
———, William, Jr., ii. 352.
Smith's Valley, i. 293.
Smoky Hill River, ii. 386.
Snell, Margaret (Schuyler), ii. 492, 493, 494.
Société Asiatique, ii. 393.
Society for Promoting Arts, ii. 258.
Solid Men of Boston, ii. 318.
Solomon's Temple, ii. 373.
Somers, Rev. Peter Nicholas, ii. 490.
Sonnock's Land, ii. 467.
Sorel, the river, i. 312, 384.
Sound, the, i. 257.
South East, town, ii. 443.
Southerland, Sarah, ii. 464, 465.
South River, i. 41, 47, 59, 60, 61.
Southwell, Edwin E., ii. 308.
———, Ella R., ii. 410.
South William Street, ii. 289.
Spain, i. 48, 237, 250—truce with, 238.
Sparks, Jared, ii. 271.
Speak, James, ii. 450.
Spectator, The, ii. 38, 39.
Speer, Eleanor, ii. 307.
Spragg, John, ii. 341.
Sprague, Laura, ii. 398.
Spraker, Ann Maria, ii. 464, 465.
Springfield, i. 236, 281, 304.
Staats, the family, ii. 396.
———, Dr. Abraham, ii. 129, 130, 150, 246, 318, 396.
———, Abraham P., ii. 397, 398.
———, Anna (174), ii. 398.
———, Anna Abeel (166), ii. 398.
———, Anna Maria (161), ii. 398.
———, Ann Elizabeth (Schuyler), ii. 171, 428, 433, 434, 471.
———, Barent, ii. 30, 132, 151, 237, 396, 397, 472.
———, Barent, Jr., ii. 160.
———, Barent P. (155), ii. 377, 398.
———, Catalina, i. 202—ii. 432, 433, 438.
———, Catherine (Bleecker), ii. 379.
———, Catherine (Van Wie), ii. 398.
———, Catrina (Schuyler), ii. 462, 463, 472.
———, Elizabeth (Bleecker), ii. 379.
———, Elizabeth (Dodge), ii. 398.
———, Elizabeth (Miller), ii. 398.
———, Elizabeth (Wendell, Schuyler), i. 186—ii. 242, 246, 318.
———, Elizabeth (Schuyler) (4), ii. 306, 414, 416.
———, Elsie (133), ii. 396.
———, Geertruy, ii. 462, 463.
———, Gerrit (135), ii. 396, 397.
———, Gertrude (Coeymans), ii. 433.
———, Helen (172), ii. 398.
———, Hetty (183), ii. 398.
———, Hetty Platt, ii. 397, 398, 399.
———, Jochem, 352, 355, 356, 357, 368—ii. 306, 396, 416, 423—ordered to build a fort, ii. 110.
———, Jochem (169), ii. 398.
———, Jochem P. (154), ii. 397, 398.
———, Johanna, ii. 427.
———, Johanna (White), ii. 433, 434.
———, Johannes (137), ii. 397.
———, John (167), ii. 398.
———, John T. (162), ii. 398.
———, Mary, ii. 152.
———, Neltie (104), ii. 397.
———, Nicholas (131), ii. 396, 397.

Staats, Peter P. (157), ii. 397, 398.
——, Philip (136), ii. 397.
——, Philip (170), ii. 398.
——, Philip P. (158), ii. 397, 398.
——, Dr. Samuel, i. 202, 352—ii. 160, 172, 173, 226, 342, 427, 429, 433, 434.
——, Sarah (Gouverneur), ii. 427, 433.
——, Tryntje, ii. 428, 433, 437, 438.
Stair, Earl of, ii. 215.
Stamps, ii. 214.
Standish, Captain Miles, i. 76, 88, 89.
Stanhope, Secretary, ii. 62.
Starr, Henry, ii. 406.
State Agricultural Society, i. 230.
—— government, organized, ii. 268.
—— Street, Albany, i. 119, 120.
Staten Island, i. 11, 12, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 25, 31, 135, 225, 426—ii. 216.
States-General, 60, 71, 77, 89, 212, 213, 214—ii. 290, 302.
Stearling, Sarah, ii. 484, 486.
Stein Hoeck, ii. 458.
Steele and *The Tatler*, ii. 38, 39.
——, General, ii. 381.
Steenwyck, Cornelis, ii. 291, 292.
Stephenson, Mary, ii. 306.
Stephentown, i. 231, 232.
Stevenson, Ann E., ii. 309.
Stuart, Mary E., ii. 411.
Stillwater, i. 290, 291—ii. 97, 98, 104, 109, 126, 127, 269, 364, 371, 477.
Stockbridge, Indians, i. 282.
Stockholm, i. 42.
Stoddard, Edward, ii. 309.
——, John, ii 234, 235.
Stokes, Samuel, ii. 398.
——, William, ii. 405.
Stoll, i. 128.
Stone, W. L., i. 208—ii. 173, 403.
——, Ransom, ii. 244.
—— Arabia, ii. 490, 494.
Storm, Mary, ii. 379.
Stoutenburg, manor of, i. 207.
Stow-Stow (M. Maricour), i. 472, 479.
Stringer, Dr., ii. 326, 362.
Strong, Cornelia, ii. 450.
——, Maria Louisa, ii. 450.
——, Phebe (Scribner), ii. 441, 448–450.
——, Thomas, ii. 441, 450.
Stuyvesant, Nicholas William, i. 179.
——, Peter, Director-General of New Netherland, 1647–1664, i. 22, 29, 30, 44, 48, 49, 50, 52, 53, 54, 108, 110, 116, 117, 121, 122, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 141, 150, 151, 171, 172 *ff.*, 175, 177, 178, 190, 198, 212, 213, 214, 216, 218, 292, 293, 338, 507—ii. 290, 295, 296, 297, 298, 299, 301, 302, 303, 305, 342, 345—appointed, i. 20—di culties with Melyn, 20, 21—wi Van der Capellen, 25, 26—chara ter, 26—visits the South River, —councils with the Swedish go ernor and the Indians, 42—his r port to his superiors, 43—order to bring the Swedes under subje tion, 45—menaces the Swedi forts, 46—drives the Swedes fro the Delaware, 47—sends an en bassy to Governor Fendall, 55, 5 59, 60, 61, 77, 84, 86, 90—attempts open negotiations with the Ne England colonies, 71—difficulti with New Haven, 72—attends th convention at Hartford, 73 *et seq* —charged with treachery towar the English, 75—anxieties attendin his position, 78—last conferenc with commissioners, 82—intervie with Governor Winthrop, 83—sur renders New Amsterdam to th English, 85.
Suacocus Island, ii. 213.
Sullivan, General, i. 204.
Superior Lake, i. 313.
Superstition Mountains, ii. 394.
Supreme Court, ii. 352, 357.
Surinam, ii. 470.
Susquehanna River, i. 306, 310, 314—ii. 50, 134, 190.
Sussex, County of, ii. 215.
Sutton, John, ii. 199.
Swackhamer, Eve, ii. 481.
Swain, Jane, ii. 495.
Swart Hook, ii. 130.
Swartwout, Roeloff, i. 136.
Sweden, i. 33, 34, 37, 48.
Swedes, the, i. 25, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 45–49, 53, 63, 64, 292—ii. 289, 299.
Swedish West India Company, i. 34, 36.
Swift and Stella, ii. 39.
Swinton, Isaac, ii. 331.
Switz, Cornelis, ii. 171, 286.
——, Mrs. ii. 177.
Sycamore Creek, ii. 393.
Symms, Captain Lancaster, i. 495—ii. 422.
Symonsen, Johannes (Veeder), ii. 414, 419.
Synod of Dutch Church, first, ii. 490, 491.

Tackhanick, i. 274.
Talmadge, Lieutenant, i. 352.
Tappan, ii. 405.
Tareha, the Indian, i. 434—visits Montreal, i. 408—returns to Oneida, 409, 412, 414—bears belt to Frontenac, i. 415.

Taspelalet, ii. 100.
Tatler, The, ii. 38, 39.
Taylor, B. C., Annals of the Classis of Bergen, ii. 491.
———, Rev. Dr. Nathaniel, ii. 451.
———, Sarah Anne, ii. 402.
———, Temple, ii. 152.
——— of Pennington, i. 205.
Tecumseh, ii. 190.
Teller, Andries, i. 190.
———, Caspar, ii. 190.
———, Helena, ii. 340, 348.
———, Isaac, ii. 352.
———, Janneke, i. 185—ii. 180, 191, 340.
———, Yenke, ii. 340.
———, William, ii. 180, 339.
Ten Acres, ii. 119.
Ten Broeck, General Abraham, i. 226, 227, 290—ii. 132, 280, 282, 330, 334.
———, Ann Catherine, ii. 409.
———, Catherine, ii. 407.
———, Christina (Schuyler), ii. 306, 327, 415, 417, 418
———, Christina Jane, ii. 409.
———, David V. R. (369), ii. 409.
———, Dirck Wessels, i. 166, 275, 276, 350, 363, 365, 373, 383, 398, 410 *ff*, 438, 453, 465, 467, 469-71, 473—ii. 8, 28, 96, 103, 105, 110, 126, 129-132, 135-138, 140, 226, 250, 327-335, 346, 350, 416, 458, 467, 472—alderman, Recorder, Mayor, etc., 331—slandered by Leisler, 332—family, death, and will, 333.
———, Eliza, ii. 243, 282.
———, Gertrude, ii. 461, 462.
———, Harmanus Schuyler, ii. 408.
———, Helen, il. 409.
———, Hendrick Wesselsen, ii. 328, 329.
———, John Jeremiah, ii. 409.
———, Johannes, ii. 415.
———, John, ii. 334.
———, Maria, ii. 415, 416.
———, Maria Hoffman (Schuyler), ii. 307, 408, 417, 418.
———, Nancy, il. 402.
———, Nicholas, ii. 307.
———, Nicholas, his children, ii. 408.
———, Samuel, ii. 327, 334, 340, 415.
———, Tobias, ii. 334.
———, Wessel, ii. 147, 328, 334.
———, Wessel Wesselsen, ii. 328.
——— family, ii. 327, 334, 335.
Ten Eyck, Abraham, Jr., ii. 153.
———, Barent, ii. 280.
———, Conrad, ii. 166.
———, Counraad, ii. 280.
———, Jacob H., ii. 261, 401.
———, Lena, ii. 202, 280.
———, Nancy, ii. 400.
Teunisse, Captain (Van Vechten), i. 247.
Texel, i. 13, 16.
Teyssen, Juryan, i. 113.
Thomas, Anne, ii. 481, 483.
Thomose, Jan, i. 137.
Thompson, ——, ii. 201.
———, Archibald, ii. 407.
Throgmorton, John, i. 91.
Thum, ——, ii. 402.
Ticonderoga, i. 155, 316, 384, 395—ii. 114, 123, 124, 326.
Tinicum, ii. 38.
Tippecanoe, ii. 450.
Titmouse Kill, ii. 98.
Toleration in New Netherland, i. 29, 30.
Tolstoy, Count Leo, ii. 393.
Tomhanack, ii. 175, 176, 274.
Tompkins, Justice, ii. 354.
Tomlinack, ii. 238.
Tonti, Mons., ii. 184, 185.
Tories, i. 287—ii. 474, 475, 476, 488—as plunderers, 177—numerous in New York, i. 264.
Totems, ii. 35, 36.
Tracy, De M., Lieutenant-General, invades Mohawk country, i. 316—return, 317.
Trade, French, annihilated, i. 329.
Trades and professions, how known, ii. 317.
Transportation line, ii. 258.
Treat, Governor, of Connecticut, i. 248, 339.
Trenton, N. J., ii. 422.
——— Falls, i. 38.
Trieux, De Susanna, ii. 317.
Trinidad, ii. 251.
Trinity Church, i. 235—ii. 8, 328, 337, 352—rented king's farm, ii. 349—the rector appeals for help, 351—burned, 353—an amusing attempt, 359, 360.
———, Fort, i. 44, 46.
Troy, i. 32, 210, 230—ii. 362.
———, West, i. 159.
Truax, Elizabeth, ii. 151.
Truce, the twelve years', i. 10.
Tryntje=Catalina=Catherine, ii. 433.
Tryon, William, i. 509.
Tunnernan, Jemima, ii. 483, 485.
Turgenef, ii. 392.
Turkish Ambassador, ii. 318.
Turkistan, ii. 392, 393.
Turrel, Jared T., ii. 201.
Tuscaroras, the, Indians, i. 309—ii. 50, 53, 54, 56, 61.
Tutall, John, i. 251.
Two tracts on east side of Hudson River, ii. 130.
Tymens, Elsje, i. 338—ii. 340, 341, 343.

Utes, the, ii. 395.
Ulster County, N. Y., i. 347, 367, 426.
Uncasmen, i. 155.
Underhill, Captain, ii. 295.
United Belgic Provinces, i. 119.
United Colonies, ii. 252—Commissioners of, i. 82.
———, of New England, i. 73, 75, 82.
United Provinces of the Netherlands, i. 3, 24, 71.
United States, ii. 276—the germ of the, 89.
———, Army, ii. 280.
Union College, ii. 261.
University of the State of New York, i. 230.
Utica, ii. 252.
Utie, Colonel, i. 53, 54, 55.
Usselincx, William, i. 33.
Upper Canada, province of, i. 230.
Utrecht, Marie of, i. 207.
———, treaty of peace of, ii. 50, 57, 112
Uytenbogart, Abigail, i. 293.

Valatie, ii. 335.
Valentine, Ellen, ii. 202.
——— Manuals, ii. 288.
Valkenburg, i. 100.
Van, in family names, i. 100.
Van Alen, Cornelis, ii. 171.
———, Peter, i. 119—ii. 129, 330.
Van Alstyne, Annatje, ii. 397.
———, Cornelia, ii. 400.
———, Gosen M., ii. 493.
———, Hunter, ii. 493.
Van Antwerpen, Maritje, ii. 371:
———, Rebecca, ii. 371.
Vanatta, Caroline, ii. 308.
Van Aeeken, Jan, i. 110.
Van Beuren, ii. 336.
Van Borsum, Cornelis, ii. 339.
———, Tymen, ii. 435.
Van Brugh, Catherine, i. 286—ii. 327, 339, 424.
———, Johannes Pieterse, ii. 339, 399.
———, Peter, i. 300, 499—ii. 339, 340.
Van Buren, the family, i. 100—ii. 327, 336.
———, Agnes, ii. 283.
———, Christina, ii. 327, 335.
———, Cornelis Maesen, ii. 336.
———, Elsie, ii. 399.
———, Martin, ii. 335.
Van Byler, Hildegonda, i. 208.
Van Cortlandt, the family, i. 187-205—ii. 264, 265, 343—lineage, 187-188.
———, Anna, i. 201.
———, Catherine, i. 203.
———, Cornelia (Schuyler), i. 167, 185, 203—ii. 164, 242, 248, 434—her character, 248.
Van Cortlandt, Elizabeth, i. 201, 203.
———, Gertrude (Schuyler), i. 164, 201, 203, 294.
———, Gysbert, i. 201.
———, Jacobus, mayor, ii. 67.
———, Johanna, ii. 431, 438.
———, Johannes, i. 201, 202, 204, 295.
———, Margreitje, i. 201.
———, Maria, i. 212, 225.
———, Olof Stevense, i. 201, 202, 204, 221—ii. 164, 292, 339, 340, 344—came to New Amsterdam, 187—married, 188—career, 189-190.
———, Philip, i. 202, 204, 205.
———, Pierre, i. 201, 202, 204, 205.
———, Stephanus, i. 167, 185, 187, 190-200, 201, 202, 205, 221, 225, 294, 341 *ff.*, 405—ii. 94, 172, 238, 248, 427, 432, 434, 438—life, 190-200—will, 200.
Van Couwenhoven, Jacob, i. 146, 147—ii. 289, 305.
Van Curler, Arent, i. 32, 135, 146, 157, 171, 211, 212, 214.
Van Dam, Rip, i. 508—ii. 9, 112, 433.
Van Delen, the Jonkheer Nicolaus, i. 207.
Van den Bergh, Gerritje, ii. 371.
———, Johannes, ii. 85.
———, Rachel, ii. 151.
Vandenburgh, Adam, ii. 352.
Van den Uythof, ii. 457.
Van der Bergh, Wynant, ii. 372.
Van der Burgh, John, ii. 398.
Van der Blaas, Andries Herbertsen Constapel, i. 111, 138.
Van der Bogert, Myndert Harmense, ii. 131.
Van der Capellen, Baron, i. 31, 81—colonizes Staten Island, 21—full name, 24—confiscation of his ship, *ib.*—settlement of claims, 25.
Van der Donck, Adriaen, i. 27—ii. 290, 296, 297—sheriff of Rensselaerwyck, 21—attempt at colony, 22—purchases Yonkers, *ib.*—presents complaints, *ib.*—a prisoner, 23—writes "Description of New Netherlands," *ib.*—returns, *ib.*—dies, *ib.*
Van der Grist, Paulus Leendertsen, ii. 299, 301, 302.
Van der Hayden, Dirk, ii. 101.
Van der Heyden, David, ii. 85.
Van der Kemp, ii. 471.
Van der Linde, Rev. Benjamin, ii. 197.
Van der Poel, Aaron, ii. 160.
———, Anna, ii. 160.
———, Johannes, ii. 160.
Van der Sluys, Andries, i. 123.

Van der Veen, Dirk Cornelisen, i. 338.
——, Peter Cornelise, i. 293, 338—ii. 341.
Van Deusen, Margarita, ii. 379.
——, Maria, ii. 463, 464.
Van Deventer, Nelson, ii. 450.
Van Dincklage, vice-director, ii. 297.
Van Driessen, George, ii. 471.
——, Hendrick, ii. 419.
——, Rev. Peter, i. 279—ii. 413, 414, 415, 419.
Van Dusen, Abraham, ii. 406.
Van Dyck, Cornelis, i. 166—ii. 95, 96, 99, 105, 305.
——, Hendrick, ii. 288, 293-305, 419, 424—Ensign Commandant, 293—marches against Indians, *ib.*—wounded, 294—on another expedition, 295—returned to Holland, *ib.*—appointed fiscal, *ib.*—treated rudely, *ib.*—excluded from council, 296—his defence, 297—author of Indian war, 298, 299, 300—shot a squaw, 300—wounded, 301—attorney-general, 303.
——, Dr. Hendrick, ii. 416, 417, 424, 461.
——, Dr. Jacobus, ii. 414, 419.
——, Lydia, ii. 288, 293.
——, Margreta, ii. 416, 417.
Van Dyckhuyse, John Teunisse, ii. 205.
Van Duyckhuysen, Swantie, i. 185.
Van Eps, interpreter, ii. 42.
——, Elisabeth, ii. 141.
Van Evera, Ida, ii. 484, 486.
Van Giessen, Rynear, ii. 360, 361.
Van Hovenburgh, Jennie, ii. 410.
Van Horne, Abraham, a New York merchant, ii. 84, 308, 410.
——, Eleanor Augusta, ii. 410.
——, Gerrit, ii. 105.
——, Mr., i. 300.
——, Mrs., ii. 103.
——, Nicholas Harmanus, ii. 410.
——, Rachel C., ii. 410.
——, Sarah M., ii. 410.
Van Imborgh, Mrs., i. 144, 145, 146.
Van Ingen, James, ii. 152.
Vannatta, Abel, ii. 201.
Van Ness, Peter, ii. 372.
Van Olinda, Hilliche, Indian interpreter, ii. 136.
Van Olingen, Edward, ii. 171.
Van Orden, Jacob, ii. 152.
Van Rensselaer, the family, i. 100, 206-242, 244, 245—ii. 264, 265, 327, 335—from Gelderland, i. 206—estate at Crailo, *ib.*—memorials of, in Holland, 207—last male member of, in Holland, *ib.*—estates bequeathed to, 208—petition to Duke of York, 218—concedes its independent title, 219—younger branch, 232, 282—in the Revolution, 237.
Van Rensselaer, Abraham L. (275), ii. 402, 403.
——, Anna, i. 222, 223, 226—ii. 196.
——, Angelica, ii. 243, 283.
——, Ann Eliza (292), ii. 403.
——, Ariantia, ii. 416.
——, Arietta (210), ii. 400, 401.
——, Arietta (219), ii. 400.
——, Arietta (277), ii. 402.
——, Arietta Letitia (294), ii. 403.
——, Bernard (225), ii. 400.
——, Catherine (Schuyler), i. 236, 290—ii. 242, 340, 417, 484.
——, Catherine, ii. 198.
——, Catherine (191), ii. 399.
——, Catherine (198), ii. 400.
——, Catherine Visscher (259), ii. 401.
——, Christina (339), ii. 407.
——, Cornelia (265), ii. 402.
——, Cornelius (220), ii. 400, 402.
——, David, ii. 307, 408, 417.
——, David (203), ii. 400, 402.
——, Elizabeth, i. 227—ii. 243, 282.
——, Elizabeth (208), ii. 400.
——, Elizabeth (254), ii. 400, 401, 403.
——, Elizabeth Rutgers (379), ii. 409.
——, Elsie (195), ii. 400.
——, Elsie L. (276), ii. 402.
——, Gertrude, i. 226—ii. 196.
——, Gratz (374), ii. 409.
——, Harmanus, i. 207.
——, Harriet Maria (258), ii. 401.
——, Harriet Maria (343), ii. 407.
——, Hendrick, i. 224, 225, 232, 233, 280, 281—ii. 96, 100, 147, 150, 229, 327, 328, 339, 424—public offices, 233, 234—controversy with Livingston, 235, 237.
——, Hendrick (189), ii. 399, 400, 403, 404.
——, Henry, i. 232.
——, Henry (256), ii. 400.
——, Henry (267), ii. 402, 403.
——, Henry J., ii. 279.
——, Henry P., ii. 372.
——, Capt. Herman, i. 207.
——, Major James, ii. 279, 307, 363, 408, 417.
——, James C. (373), ii. 409.
——, Jeremiah, fifth patroon, i. 226.
——, Jeremiah, director, i. 106, 120, 146, 155, 158, 190, 206, 217, 219, 220, 221, 222, 232, 302—ii. 157, 408, 409.
——, Jeremias, i. 207.
——, Jan, i. 207.

Van Rensselaer, Jan Baptist, i. 175, 176, 213, 215, 226.
——, Joanna Jacoba Sara, i. 208.
——, Johan, i. 207.
——, Johannes, second patroon, i. 211, 212, 213, 215, 219, 221, 222.
——, Johannes (son of Jeremiah), i, 224, 232.
——, Johannes or John (son of Hendrick), i. 235, 290—ii. 105, 253, 339, 340, 408, 424.
——, John (of Cambridge), ii. 372.
——, John (201), ii. 400, 401.
——, John S. (221), ii. 400, 402.
——, Kate (Catherine van Cortland), ii. 409.
——, Killian, first patroon, director of the Dutch West India Company, i. 12, 14, 15, 21, 22, 102, 111-116, 121, 138, 155, 157, 158, 159, 171, 172, 183, 202, 206, 208, 212, 214, 311—ii. 246, 337, 408, 409.
——, Killian (son of Johannes), third patroon, i. 219, 221, 222.
——, Killian (son of Jeremiah), fourth patroon, i. 219, 221, 223, 224, 225, 226, 232, 233, 296, 365—ii. 147, 158, 196, 286.
——, Killian (son of Hendrick), i. 236—ii. 306, 339, 396, 399, 416.
——, Killian (son of Jan Baptist), i. 223.
——, Killian (194), ii. 400, 404.
——, Killian (204), ii. 400, 402.
——, Killian (217), ii. 400.
——, Leonora, i. 223.
——, Magdalena (218), ii. 400.
——, Margaret (290), ii. 403.
——, Juffrow Maria, wife of Jeremiah, i. 120.
——, Maria, wife of Peter Schuyler (2), i. 185, 296, 302—ii. 150, 157.
——, Maria (Ten Broeck), ii. 340.
——, Maria (193), ii. 400.
——, Maria (274), ii. 402.
——, Maria M. (214), ii. 400.
——, Mary Elizabeth (372), ii. 409.
——, Matilda (256), ii. 400, 401.
——, Maunsell (289), ii. 402.
——, Nelle Marya, i. 223.
——, Rev. Nicholas (Nicolaus), i. 183, 185, 206, 221, 237-243, 245.
——, Nicholas (192), ii. 399, 400, 404.
——, Nicholas (202), ii. 400, 402.
——, Nicholas (337), ii. 407.
——, Philip, i. 227.
——, Philip (190), ii. 399, 400, 404.
——, Philip (200), ii. 400.
——, Peter S. (211), ii. 400.
——, Philip (335), ii. 407.
Van Rensselaer, Philip P. (213), ii. 400, 401, 402.
——, Philip Schuyler (363), ii. 307, 408, 409.
——, Rensselaer (255), ii. 401, 403.
——, Richard, i. 157, 158, 175, 221, 223, 224.
——, Richard (224), ii. 400, 403.
——, General Robert, i. 236—ii. 198.
——, Robert S. (209), ii. 399, 400, 407.
——, Sanders (216), ii. 400, 402.
——, Sanders (273), ii. 402.
——, Sara Maria (278), ii. 402.
——, Sarah (281), ii. 402.
——, Schuyler (215), ii. 400, 402.
——, Schuyler (338), ii. 308, 407.
——, General Solomon (199), i. 236—ii. 400, 404.
——, Stephen, sixth patroon, i. 226.
——, Stephen, seventh patroon, i. 226, 227—ii. 278.
——, Stephen, eighth and last patroon, i. 227, 228, 229—ii. 242, 274, 282, 334, 405—State Senator, 229—Lieutenant-Governor, 229—in command of army on northern frontier, 229—canal commissioner, 230—elected to Congress, 230—marriages, death and will, 231.
——, Stephen, son of last patroon, i. 232.
——, Stephen (207), ii. 400, 402.
——, S. V. C., ii. 202.
——, Walter (340), ii. 399, 407.
——, Walter A. (404), ii. 410.
——, William, i. 232.
—— arms, i. 206.
—— chart, i. 233.
—— crest, i. 206.
—— manor, i. 103, 177, 284—ii. 129, 132, 286.
Van Rensselaer's mills, ii. 434.
Van Ruyven, Secretary, i. 54, 144.
Van Schaick, Anna, i. 201.
——, Anthony, i. 154, 348, 349—ii. 371.
——, Captain, ii. 375.
——, Clarissa, ii. 484, 486.
——, Engeltie, i. 185, 302—ii. 157, 158.
——, Gerrit, i. 179—ii. 67, 466.
——, Goosen Gerritse, i. 110, 114, 115, 116, 137, 138, 152, 153—ii. 95, 157, 376.
——, Henry, ii. 321, 422.
——, Jaques Cornelisen, i. 353.
——, John, ii. 379.
Van Slichtenhorst, Alida, i. 179—ii. 461, 466.
——, Arent, i. 171, 207.

Van Slichtenhorst, Baata, i. 179.
———, Brant Arentse, i. 103, 167, 212, 214, 215, 216—history, 171 *et seq.*—appointed director of Rensselaerwyck, 171—arrival, 172—quarrel with Stuyvesant, 172 *et seq.*—arrested, 174—escape, 175—re-arrest, *ib.*—return to Beverwick, 176—returns to Holland, 177—buys land, *ib.*—acknowledged to be right, 178—death, *ib.*, 179.
———, Elizabeth, i. 179.
———, Gerrit, i. 178, 179—ii. 466.
———, Heligonda, i. 179.
———, Margaret (Schuyler), i. 99, 158, 162, 166, 167-171, 182, 294—ii. 150, 306—loyalty, 167—aids in raising volunteers, 168—influence, 169—able administration of her estate, *ib.*—division of property, 170.
———, Rachel, i. 179.
Van Schoenderwoert, Margarita, ii. 378.
———, Rutger Jacobsen, i. 106—ii. 378.
———, Teunis, i. 106.
Van Slych, i. 299.
Van Slyck, Albert, ii. 490.
Van Sweringen, i. 57, 58, 59.
Van Tienhoven, Cornelis, ii. 296-300, 302, 303.
Van Twiller, Wouter, Director-Gen. of New Netherland, 1633-1638, i. 16, 17, 26, 28, 35, 65, 67, 507—ii. 344.
———, Petronella, i. 223.
———, Ryckert, i. 207.
Van Valkenberg, Frederick, ii. 154.
Van Vechten, Abraham, ii. 274.
———, Douw, i. 372.
———, Engeltie, ii. 151.
———, Capt. Teunisse, i. 247.
———, Walter, ii. 406.
Van Vranken, the family, ii. 371.
———, Gerrit Ryckse, ii. 370.
———, Maas Ryckse, ii. 370.
Van Wagenen, Helen, ii. 197.
Van Wely, Anna, i. 183, 208, 209.
———, Hans, i. 209.
———, Jan, jr., 208, 209.
Van Wenveen, Dirck Cornelisse, ii. 340.
Van Werckhoven, Cornelis, i. 23—death, 24.
Van Wie, Andries, ii. 493, 494.
———, Peter, ii. 318.
Van Woert, the family, i. 106.
———, Jacob J., ii. 371.
———, Rebecca, ii. 372.
———, Sara, ii. 372.
Van Woggelum, i. 119.
Van Wyck, Margareta, ii. 171.
Varick, Capt., ii. 326.
Vaudreuil, Marquis de, Governor 236.
of Canada, i. 448—ii. 19, 30, 235.
Vaughton, Michael, i. 340—ii. 341.
Vedder, Johannes, ii. 371.
Veeder, Annatje, ii. 489, 493.
———, Gertrude, ii. 483, 485.
———, Johannes Symonsen, ii. 414, 419.
Verde Reservation, ii. 394.
Verhulst, William, Director-General of New Netherland, 1625-26, i. 26, 507.
Vermont, conflicting claims, ii. 322.
Verplanck, the family, i. 292-295—ii. 459, 479.
———, Abraham Isaacs, i. 292.
———, Gelina, i. 293.
———, Gilleyen, ii. 85.
———, Gulian, i. 293.
———, Isaac, i. 293.
———, Philip, i. 201, 203, 294, 295—ii. 248.
———, Margaret (Schuyler), i. 294, 296.
———, Samuel, i. 293.
Ver Planck, Catalyna (Schuyler), ii. 175, 379, 456, 461.
———, Jacobus, i. 186, 294, 296—ii. 85.
Verplanck's Point, i. 200, 201.
Vesey, Rev. Mr., ii. 149.
Vetch, Margaret, ii. 103, 105.
———, Samuel, i. 289—ii. 19, 26, 27, 28, 31, 32, 46.
Vianen, i. 223.
Viele, Arnout Cornelise, i. 370, 437—ii. 108, 187, 189.
———, Jacomyna (Joan), ii. 371.
———, Sara, ii. 371.
Vigne, Maria, i. 293.
Villeroy, ii. 108, 109.
Virger, Johannes, ii. 85.
Virginia, i. 56, 59, 88, 320, 369, 393, 405, 406, 412, 424, 483—ii. 86, 87, 122, 374, 437, 439—contribution to war, 431—quota, 432.
Visscher, Harman, ii. 283.
———, Nanning, ii. 283.
———, Sarah, ii. 243, 283.
Voorhis, ii. 200.
———, Christina, ii. 401.
Voris, Elizabeth, ii. 171.
Vreedenburg, John, ii. 153.
Vreedland, i. 28.
Vrelenhuyse (Frelinghuysen), Dominie, ii. 415.
Vroom, Henry, ii. 431, 432.
Vrooman, Adam, i. 351.
———, Anna, ii. 372.
———, Bartol, ii. 110, 126.
———, Jannetje, ii. 493.

Wagenen, Helen, ii. 196.
Waldenses, i. 31, 49.
Waldron, Resolved, i. 55.
Walker, Admiral, ii. 47.
———, Rodolph, ii. 450.
———, William M., ii. 449.
Walloons, i. 27, 28.
Walter, Hester, ii. 196, 207, 212, 215, 341.
———, John, ii. 212, 213, 341.
———, Maria, or Mary, i. 185—ii. 193, 194, 215, 341.
———, Robert, i. 340—ii. 193, 341.
Wandel, ii. 318.
Wandelier, de, Sara, ii. 371.
Wappingers, i. 145, 147.
Wappinger's Creek, i. 201—ii. 130, 248.
War of 1812, ii. 447.
Wars, French, i. 228—Indian, *ib.*
Ward, General Artemas, ii. 263, 265.
Wareing, Maria, ii. 407.
Waring, George, ii. 449.
———, Jesse, ii. 449.
———, Martha Ann (Bartow), ii. 449.
———, Nathaniel, ii. 449.
———, Moses, ii. 449.
———, Phebe (Scribner), ii. 441, 448–450.
———, William, ii. 441, 447, 448, 450.
Warwick, Earl of, i. 66.
——— patent, i. 69, 70 *n.*, 79.
Washington, General George, ii. 252, 266, 269, 271, 281, 364, 365—and Mrs., sponsors, 271.
"Washington, of his times," i. 304.
Washington's Life Guards, ii. 198, 206.
Wappings, the, i. 135.
Water Street, N. Y., i. 339.
Watertown, Mass., i. 66.
———, N. Y., ii. 454.
Waterviet, ii. 279
Watts, Anne, ii. 214.
Wawaxsink, ii. 131.
Weaver, Thomas, ii. 12.
Webb, General, ii. 123.
Wedding present, ii. 339.
Weehawken, ii. 282.
Weems, Captain, i. 487.
Weesmesters, i. 165.
Wells, Noah, ii. 451.
Wendel, Evert Janse, ii. 316, 318.
———, Jeronimus, ii. 316.
Wendell, Abraham, ii. 238, 319.
———, Annatje, ii. 151.
———, Ariantie, ii. 414.
———, Cathalyntia, ii. 461.
———, Elizabeth, ii. 319.
———, Elsie, ii. 306, 316, 413, 419.
———, Harmanus, ii. 313, 314, 315, 414.
Wendell, Hester (Beekman), ii. 414, 419.
———, Jacob, ii. 246, 314, 315, 318, 319, 341.
———, Johannes, i. 111, 186, 347, 353, 355, 356, 376—ii. 95, 96, 99, 126, 246, 318, 341, 414, 470.
———, Sara, ii. 240, 319.
———, Susanna, ii. 419, 461, 462.
Wenhams, John, ii. 133.
———, Thomas, ii. 131, 133.
Wessels, Dirck Ten Broeck. *See* Ten Broeck, Dirck Wessels.
———, Elizabeth, ii. 462.
———, Hendrickje, i. 293.
Wesselse, Wessel, ii. 329.
Westchester, i. 28, 30, 82.
——— County, ii. 293.
———, Indians destroyed, ii. 295.
Westenhook, ii. 160, 332.
——— Creek, ii. 131.
——— Patent, ii. 131–132.
Westerlo, Rev. Eilardus, ii. 416, 423.
Westfield, i. 289.
West India Company, the, i. 102, 113, 116, 118, 120, 124, 144, 171, 172, 177, 187, 189, 203, 209, 210, 212, 213, 214, 218, 228, 292—ii. 16, 18, 164, 288, 290, 293, 302, 303 chartered, 10—colonists, *ib.*, dividends, *ib.*, 11—buys Pavonia, 15—and Melyn, 19, 20, 21—colonization, 25, 26 contributes to Church, 111—their Bouwery, 349.
——— Islands, 92, 276—ii. 257, 437.
Westminster, Dutch Church at, i. 238.
Weston, Colonel, ii. 474.
Westphalia, ii. 328.
West Troy, ii. 157.
Withersfield, i. 66.
Whale fishery, i. 14.
Wheeler, Amy Ann, ii. 411.
———, Grant, ii. 308, 411.
———, Philip, ii. 411.
Whitbeck, Abraham, ii. 400.
———, Catherine, ii. 400.
White, Anthony, ii. 433, 434.
———, Johanna (Staats), ii. 433, 434.
———, Sarah, ii. 307.
Whitehall, ii. 267, 324.
Whitehead, Mr., ii. 183.
White River Indians, i. 484.
Whitney, Colonel, ii. 47.
Wickham, John W., ii. 402.
Wickleson, John, ii. 293.
———, Sarah, ii. 293.
Wildman, Mr., ii. 286.
Willemstadt, ii. 457.
Willet, Capt. Thomas, i. 73, 114, 119.
William III., i. 335, 342, 431—ii. 165, 173.

William the Silent, Prince of Orange, i. 9, 43.
William and Mary, proclamation of, i. 193, 194.
Williams, Dr., ii. 200.
———, Eliphalet, ii. 451.
———, Roger, i. 80, 81, 91.
———, Warharnus, ii. 451.
——— College, ii. 390, 478.
Wilmington Del., i. 34.
Willius, Dominie, i. 57.
Wilson, Ebenezer, ii. 131, 133.
———, George B., ii. 154.
———, Mrs. Harold, ii. 335.
Wilson's Creek, ii. 381, 382, 383.
Wiltwyck, i. 136, 139, 141, 143, 144, 145, 148, 149—ii. 289.
Winckle, St., i. 119.
Windsor, i. 66.
Winfield, ii. 284.
Wingworst Point, ii. 193.
Winne, Annatje, ii. 396.
———, Barent, ii. 398.
———, Maria, ii. 397.
Winslow, General, ii. 123.
Winter's plantation, i. 158—ii. 156.
Winthrop, Gen. Fitz John, i. 155, 249, 370, 372, 374, 375, 384—ii. 110, 126, 223.
———, John, Governor of Connecticut, i. 79, 80, 81, 83, 84, 85, 86, 482.
———, John, Governor of Massachusetts, i. 71, 72.
Wisner, Samuel P., ii. 443.
Witchcraft, execution for, ii. 477.
Wolfe, General, ii. 123, 267.
Wood, Dr. Jeremiah, ii. 441.
———, Lucinda, ii. 244
Woodbridge, N. J., ii. 183.
Wood Creek, i. 272, 372, 384, 395—ii. 47, 134, 224, 269.
Woodhouse, David, ii. 402.
Woods, Mrs., ii. 493.
Wouterson, Egbert, ii. 348.
Wright, Ann, ii. 198.
Wyck in Utrecht, i. 187.
Wyoming, ii. 366.

Yale College, ii. 392, 393, 412, 450, 451.
Yellowstone expedition, ii. 394.
——— Park, ii. 395.
Yondutdenough Schase, i. 299.
Yonkers, i. 22.
——— Strat, ii. 285, 346.
York, Duke of, i. 64, 84, 85, 86, 238, 243.
Yorktown, i. 204.
Young, Edwin R., ii. 410.

Zabriskie, Catherine Schuyler (310), ii. 406.
———, Catherine Schuyler (316), ii. 406.
———, John, ii. 405.
———, John L. (311), ii. 406.
———, Lansing, ii. 405.
———, Sarah (309), ii. 406.
Zutphen, i. 207.
Zuyder Zee, i. 206.
Zwaanendal, i. 13, 14, 16.

3 2044 009 879 651

THE BORROWER WILL BE CHARGED AN OVERDUE FEE IF THIS BOOK IS NOT RETURNED TO THE LIBRARY ON OR BEFORE THE LAST DATE STAMPED BELOW. NON-RECEIPT OF OVERDUE NOTICES DOES NOT EXEMPT THE BORROWER FROM OVERDUE FEES.

WIDENER
BOOK DUE
CANCELLED
DEC NOV 29

WIDENER
MAR SEP 0 12 10 2006
BOOK DUE
CANCELLED